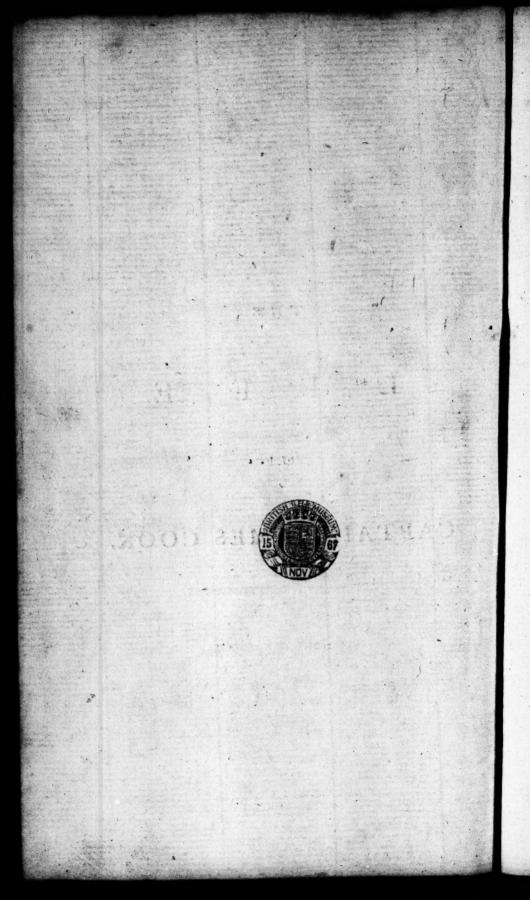
THE

LIFE

OF

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.



L I F E

OF

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

Totque Maris vastæque exhausta Pericula Terra.
VIRG.

The MacBride

BY

ANDREW KIPPIS, D. D. F. R. S. AND S. A.

DUBLIN:

PRINTED FOR MESSRS. H. CHAMBERLAINE, W. COLLES, R. CROSS, W. GILBERT, W. WILSON, L. WHITE, P. BYRNE, P. WOGAN, T. STEWART, J. MOORE, and B. DORNIN.

M.DCC.LXXXVIII.

a a i i



There where we would expend there.

YO

ANDERW KIPPIS, D. D. P. R. S. AND SCA.

DUBLIN

PRINTED FOR MESON, H. CHAMBERLAND, W. COLUMS, E. CROSS, W. GILBERT, W. WILLON, E. WHILE, P. HVERN, T. SIRWARF, J. MOGAN, T. DIERNARF, A. MOGEN, and B. DIERNIN, M. 1988 MR.

navigation and the mod

therefore, a Nariative of the

It is impossible, on a the decision, a

to avoid extending

the other noble inflances in whin LESTEEM myself highly honoured in being permitted to dedicate and present the Life of CAPTAIN JAMES COK to Your Majesty. It was owing to Your Majesty's Royal patronage and bounty, that this il-Instrious Navigator was enabled to execute those vast undertakings, and to make those extraordinary discoveries, which have contributed so much to the reputation of the British empire, and have reflected fuch peculiar glory on Your Majesty's reign. Without Your Majesty's munificence and encouragement, the world would have remained destitute of that immense light which has been thrown on geobendered graphy,

graphy, navigation, and the most important sciences. To Your Majesty, therefore, a Narrative of the Life and Actions of Captain Cook is with particular propriety addressed.

It is impossible, on this occasion, to avoid extending my thoughts to the other noble instances in which Your Majesty's liberal protection of science and literature has been displayed. Your Majesty began Your reign in a career to glorious to princes : and wonderful has been the increase of knowledge and taste in this country. The improvements in philosophical science, and particularly in aftronomy; the exertions of experimental and chemical enquiry, the advancement of natural history, the progress and perfection of the polite arts, and the valuable compositions that have been produced in every department of learning, have correfponded with Your Majesty's gracious wishes and encouragement, and have rendered

rendered the name of Britain famous in every quarter of the globe. If there be any persons who, in these respects, would depreciate the present times, in comparison with those which have preceded them, it may safely be afferted that such persons have not duly attended to the history of literature. The course of my studies has enabled me to speak with some confidence on the subject; and to say, that Your Majesty's reign is eminently distinguished by one of the greatest glories that can belong to a monarch.

Knowledge and virtue constitute the chief happiness of a nation: and it is devoutly to be wished that the virtue of this country were equal to its knowledge. If it be not so, this does not arise from the want of an illustrious example in the person of Your Majesty, and that of Your Royal Consort. The pattern which is set by the King and Queen of Great Britain, of those qualities which

which are the truest ornaments and felicities of life, affords a ftrong incitement to the imitation of the fame excellencies; and cannot fail of contributing to the more extensive prevalence of that moral conduct on which the welfare of fociety for greatly depends. violid edit or bebi

That Your Majesty may possess every felicity in Your Royal Person and Family, and enjoy a long and prosperous reign, over an enlightened, a free, and a happy people, is the

fincere and ardent prayer of.

Knowledge and Lique confirm

YOUR MAJESTY'S MOST FAITHFUL, devertage trom das ed that the

SUBJECT AND SERVANT,

ANDREW KIPPIS.

of Great

to its knowledge.

Crown Street, Westminster, June 13, 1788.



chira vitasapoù la vi contenpont i tombar i bepor Red E od Fliat A or Cell Eacht en la content de de la content de la content en to to to a la content de la

larging, more than is needful, on facts which may the (bought shreat), is the pathy known; and, on the other hand, of giving facts a jarguar account, and facts a final disappoint the wifter and cape flations of the two returness the less factors to be that

However, the right conduct of this businels in a point of me total dissolver and or base

which front usoft be avoided afor, notels A LTHOUGHI have often appeared before the Public as a writer, I never did it with fo much diffidence and anxiety as on the prefent occasion. This arises from the peculiar nature of the work in which I have now engaged. A Narrative of the Life of Captain Cook must principally confift of the voyages and discoveries he made, and the difficulties and dangers to which he was exposed. The private incidents concerning him, though collected with the utmost diligence, can never compare, either in number or importance, with his public transactions. His public transactions are the things that mark the man, that difplay his mind and his character; and, therefore, they are the grand objects to which the attention of his biographer must be directed. However,

However, the right conduct of this business is a point of no small difficulty and embarraffment. The question will frequently arise, How far the detail should be extended? There is a danger, on the one hand, of being carried to an undue length, and of enlarging, more than is needful, on facts which may be thought already sufficiently known; and, on the other hand, of giving fuch a jejune account, and fuch a flight enumeration, of important events, as shall disappoint the wishes and expectations of the reader. Of the two extremes; the last seems to be that which should most be avoided; for, unless what Captain Cook performed, and what he encountered, be related somewhat at large, his Life would be imperfectly represented to the world. The proper medium appears to be, to bring forward the things in which he was personally concerned, and to pass slightly over other matters. Even here it is scarcely possible, nor would it be desirable, to avoid the introduction of fome of the most striking circumstances which relate to the new countries and inhabitants that were visited by our great Navigator; fince these constitute a part of the knowledge and benefit derived from Whether I have been fo his undertakings. happy as to preserve the due medium, I prefume not to determine. I have been anxious to do it, without always being able fully to fatisfy my own mind that I have succeeded;

ed; on which account I shall not be furprized if different opinions should be formed on the subject. In that case, all that I can offer in my own defence will be, that I have acted to the best of my judgment. At any rate, I flatter myself with the hope of having presented to the Public, a work not wholly uninteresting or unentertaining. Those who are best acquainted with Captain Cook's expeditions, may be pleased with reviewing them in a more compendious form, and with having his actions placed in a closer point of view, in confequence of their being divested of the minute nautical and other details. which were effentially necessary in the voyages at large. As to those persons, if there be any, who have hitherto obtained but an imperfect knowledge of what was done and discovered by this illustrious man, they will not be offended with the length of the following narrative.

In various respects, new information will be found in the present performance; and other things, which were less perfectly known before, are set in a clearer and fuller light. This, I trust, will appear in the first, third, fifth, and seventh chapters. It may be observed, likewise, that the fresh matter now communicated is of the most authentic kind, and derived from the most respectable sources. My obligations of this nature are, indeed, very great, and call for my warmest gratitude.

gratitude. The dates and facts relative to Captain Cook's different promotions are taken from the books of the Admiralty, by the direction of the noble Lord who is at the head of that Board, and the favour of Mr. Stephens. I embrace with pleasure this opportunity of mentioning, that, in the course of my life. I have experienced, in feveral inflances, LORD Howe's condescending and favourable attention. To Mr. STE-PHENS I am indebted for other communications besides those which concern the times of Captain Cook's preferments, and for his general readiness in forwarding the design of the present work. The EARL OF SANDwich, the great patron of our Navigator, and the principal mover in his mighty undertakings, has honoured me with some important information concerning him, efpecially with regard to the circumstances which preceded his last voyage. To SIR HUGH PALLISER'S zeal for the memory of his friend I ftand particularly obliged. From a large communication with which he was fo good as to favour me, I have derived very material intelligence, as will appear in the course of the nafrative, and especially in the first chapter. In the same chapter are fome facts which I received from ADMIRAL GRAVES, through the hands of the Reverend DR. Douglas, now Bishop of Carliste, whose admirable Introduction to the Voyage

Voyage to the Pacific Ocean must be of the most essential service to every writer of the Life of Captain Cook. The Captain's amiable and worthy Widow, who is held in just esteem by all his friends, has given me an account of feveral domestic circumstances. I should be deficient in gratitude, were I here to omit the name of MR. SAM-WELL: for, though what is inferted from him in this work has already been laid before the public, it should be remembered, that, through the interpolition of our common friend, the Reverend Mr. GREGORY. it was originally written for my use, and freely configned to my disposal; and that it was at my particular inflance and request that it was separately printed. My obligations to other Gentlemen will be mentioned in their proper places.

But my acknowledgments are, above all, due to SIR JOSEPH BANKS, President of the Royal Society, for the interest he has taken in the present publication. It was in consequence of his advice, that it was given to the world in the form which it now bears; and his assistance has been invariable through every part of the undertaking. To him the inspection of the whole has been submitted; and to him it is owing, that the work is, in many respects, far more complete than it would otherwise have been. The exertions of zeal and friendship, I have

been so happy as to experience from him in writing the Life of Captain Cook, have corresponded with that ardour which SIR JOSEPH BANKS is always ready to display in promoting whatever he judges to be subservient to the cause of science and literature.



CONTENTS.

much Comme of all the amount of the

all very free con

CHAPTER THE

CHAPTER THE FIRST.

HTRIS BHY HETTEN

THE History of Captain Cook's Life previously to bis first Voyage round the World - page I

CHAPTER THE SECOND.

Continuation of the History of Captain Cook's Life, to the End of his first Voyage round the World. 12

CHAPTER THE THIRD.

The History of Captain Cook's Life, from the End of his first, to the Commencement of his second Voyage round the World - 182

CHAPTER THE FOURTH.

The History of Captain Cook's Life during his second Voyage round the World - - 190

CHAPTER

ONTENTS.

CHAPTER THE FIFTH.

The History of Captain Cook's Life, from the Conclusion of his second Voyage round the World, to the Commencement of his Voyage to the Pacific Ocean

CHAPTER THE SIXTH.

The History of Captain Cook's Life, from the Com-mencement of his Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, to bis Death

CHAPTER THE SEVENTH.

Character of Captain Cook .- Effects of his Voyages .-Testimonies of Applause.—Commemorations of his Services .- Regard paid to his Family .- Conclu-482 fron.

APPENDIX

bit in and Papage

CHAPTER

ic, in with Endof



HAPTER THE FOURTH.

The indiana of

bis finit, to the

wee found the branch some

A.H.T.
Who blistery of Captain Gold's Life during his fixed

TO SILL ENT

Listen of district the state of the state of

ing a data of er vigoratist a afterman

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

ell lo solloudatho an..

CHAPTER THE FIRST

The History of Captain Cook's Life previously to his first Voyage round the World.

captain James Cook had no claim to dif-CHAP.

tinction on account of the luftre of his birth, or the dignity of his ancestors. His father, James Cook, who from his dialect is supposed to have been a Northumbrian, was in the humble station of a servant in husbandry, and married a woman of the same rank with himself, whose christian name was Grace. Both of them were noted in their neighbourhood for their honesty, sobriety, and diligence. They first lived at a village called Morton, and then removed to Marton, another village in the North-riding of Yorkshire, situated in the high road from Gifbrough,

CHAP, brough, in Cleveland, to Stockton upon Tees. in the county of Durham, at the distance of fix miles from each of these towns. At Marton Captain Cook was born, on the 27th of October, 1728 *; and, agreeably to the custom of the Vi-

27 Oct.

car of the parish, whose practice it was to baptize infants foon after their birth, he was baptized on the 3d of November following. He was one of nine children, all of whom are now dead, excepting a daughter, who married a fisherman at Redcar. The first rudiments of young Cook's education were received by him at Marton, where he was taught to read by Dame Walker, the school-mistress of the village. When he was eight years of age, his father, in consequence of the character he had obtained for industry, frugality, and skill in husbandry, had a little promotion bestowed upon him, which was that of being appointed head fervant, or hind +, to a farm belonging to the late Thomas Skottow, Efq. called Airy Holme, near Great Ayton. To this place. therefore, he removed with his family 1; and his fon James, at Mr. Skottow's expence, was put to a day school in Ayton, where he was instructed in writing, and in a few of the first rules of arithmetic.

Before he was thirteen years of age, he was bound an apprentice to Mr. William Sanderson. a haberdasher, or shopkeeper, at Staiths, a confiderable fishing town, about ten miles north of Whitby. This employment, however, was very

+ This is the name which, in that part of the country, is given to the head servant, or bailiff, of a farm.

unfuitable

^{*} The mud house in which Captain Cook drew his first breath is pulled down, and no veftiges of it are now remaining.

I Mr. Cook, fenior, spent the close of his life with his daughter, at Redcar, and is supposed to have been about eighty-five years of age when he died.

unsuitable to young Cook's disposition. The sea CHAP. was the object of his inclination; and his passion. for it could not avoid being strengthened by the fituation of the town in which he was placed, and the manner of life of the persons with whom he must frequently converse. Some disagreement having happened between him and his mafter, he obtained his discharge, and soon after bound himfelf for feven years to Messrs. John and Henry Walker, of Whitby, Quakers by religious profession, and principal owners of the ship Free-love. and of another vessel, both of which were constantly employed in the coal trade. The greatest part of his apprenticeship was spent on board the Free-love. After he was out of his time he continued to serve in the coal and other branches of trade (though chiefly in the former) in the capacity of a common failor; till, at length, he was raised to be mate of one of Mr. John Walker's ships. During this period it is not recollected that he exhibited any thing very peculiar, either in his abilities or his conduct; though there can be no doubt but that he had gained a confiderable degree of knowledge in the practical part of navigation, and that his attentive and fagacious mind was laying up a store of observations which would be useful to him in future

In the spring of the year 1755, when hostilities broke out between England and France, and there was a hot press for seamen, Mr. Cook happened to be in the river Thames with the

1,

of

ry

ath

is

ble

1:107

2

ship

^{*} From the register of the parish of Marton; from the account given by some inhabitants of the parish; and from the information of _____ Jackson, Esq. of Normanby, Yorkshire, in a letter to Sir Joseph Banks, Bart. president of the Royal Society.

CHAP. ship to which he belonged. At first he concealed himself, to avoid being pressed; but resecting that it might be difficult, notwithstanding all his vigilance, to elude discovery or escape pursuit, he determined, upon farther confideration, to enter voluntarily into his Majesty's service, and to take his future fortune in the Royal Navv. Perhaps he had some presage in his own mind, that by his activity and exertions he might rife confiderably above his present situation. Accordingly, he went to a rendezvous at Wapping, and entered with an officer of the Eagle man of war, a ship of fixty guns, at that time commanded by Captain Hamer. To this ship Captain (now Sir Hugh) Pallifer was appointed, in the month of October, 1755; and when he took the command, found in her James Cook, whom he foon diftinguished to be an able, active, and diligent, seaman. All the officers spoke highly in his favour. and the Captain was fo well pleased with his behaviour, that he gave him every encouragement which lay in his power.

In the course of some time, Captain Palliser received a letter from Mr. Ofbaldeston, then Member of Parliament for Scarborough, acquainting him that feveral neighbours of his had folicited him to write in favour of one Cook. on board the Captain's ship. They had heard that Captain Pallifer had taken notice of him. and they requested, if he thought Cook deserving of it, that he would point out in what manner Mr. Ofbaldeston might best contribute his affistance towards forwarding the young man's promotion. The Captain, in his reply, did justice to Cook's merit; but, as he had been only a short time in the Navy, informed Mr. Osbaldeston that he could not be promoted as a commission officer. A Master's war-

rant,

rant, Captain Pallifer added, might perhaps be CHAP. procured for Mr. Cook, by which he would be It raifed to a station that he was well qualified to

discharge with ability and credit *.

Such a warrant he obtained on the 10th of May, 1759, for the Grampus sloop; but the proper Master having unexpectedly returned to her, the appointment did not take place. Four days after he was made Master of the Garland; when, upon enquiry, it was found that he could not join her, as the ship had already sailed. On the next day, the 15th of May, he was appointed to the Mercury †. These quick and successive appointments shew that his interest was strong, and that the intention to serve him was real and effectual.

The destination of the Mercury was to North America, where the joined the fleet under the command of Sir Charles Saunders, which, in conjunction with the land forces under General Wolfe, was engaged in the famous fiege of Quebec. During that fiege, a difficult and dangerous fervice was necessary to be performed. This was to take the foundings in the channel of the river St. Lawrence, between the island of Orleans and the north shore, directly in the front of the French fortified camp at Montmorency and Beauport, in order to enable the Admiral to place ships against the enemy's batteries, and to cover our army on a general attack, which the heroic Wolfe intended to make on the camp. Captain Pallifer, in consequence of his acquaintance with Mr. Cook's fagacity and resolution, recommended

+ From the books of the Admiralty.

beombinan

^{*} From the information of Sir Hugh Pallifer.

CHAP. him to the fervice; and he performed it in the most complete manner. In this business he was employed during the night-time, for feveral nights together. At length he was discovered by the enemy, who collected a great number of Indians and canoes, in a wood near the water-fide, which were launched in the night, for the purpose of furrounding him, and cutting him off. On this occasion, he had a very narrow escape, He was obliged to run for it, and pushed on shore on the island of Orleans, near the guard of the English hospital. Some of the Indians entered at the stern of the boat, as Mr. Cook leaped out at the bow; and the boat, which was a barge belonging to one of the ships of war, was carried away in triumph. However, he furnished the Admiral with as correct and complete a draught of the channel and foundings as could have been made after our countrymen were in possession of Quebec. Sir Hugh Pallifer has good reason to believe, that before this time Mr. Cook had scarcely ever used a pencil, and that he knew nothing of drawing. But fuch was his capacity, that he fpeedily made himself master of every object to which he applied his attention.

Another important service was performed by Mr. Cook while the sleet continued in the river of St. Lawrence. The navigation of that river is exceedingly difficult and hazardous. It was particularly so to the English, who were then in a great measure strangers to this part of North America, and who had no chart, on the correctness of which they could depend. It was, therefore, ordered by the Admiral, that Mr. Cook should be employed to survey those parts of the river, below Quebec, which navigators had ex-

perienced

perienced to be attended with peculiar difficulty C H A P. and danger; and he executed the business with the same diligence and skill of which he had already afforded so happy a specimen. When he had sinished the undertaking, his chart of the river St. Lawrence was published, with soundings, and directions for sailing in that river. Of the accuracy and utility of this chart it is sufficient to say, that it hath never since been sound necessary to publish any other. One which has appeared in France is only a copy of our author's, on a reduced scale.

After the expedition at Quebec, Mr. Cook, by warrant from Lord Colvill, was appointed, on the 22d of September, Master of the Northumberland man of war, the ship in which his lordship staid, in the following winter, as Commodore, with the command of a squadron at Halifax. In this station Mr. Cook's behaviour did not fail to gain him the esteem and friendship of his commander. During the leifure which the feafon of winter afforded him, he employed his time in the acquisition of such knowledge as eminently qualified him for future service. It was at Halifax that he first read Euclid, and applied himself to the study of astronomy and other branches of science. The books of which he had the assistance were few in number; but his industry enabled him to fupply many defects, and to make a progress far superior to what could be expected from the advantages he enjoyed *

While Mr. Cook was master of the Northumberland under Lord Colvill, that ship came to Newfoundland, in September, 1762, to assist in

k

C-

^{*} From the information of Sir Hugh Pallifer.

CHAP, the recapture of the island from the French, by the forces under the command of Lieutenant Colonel Amherst. When the island was recovered. the English fleet staid some days at Placentia, in order to put it in a more complete state of defence. During this time Mr. Cook manifested a diligence in furveying the harbour and heights of the place, which arrested the notice of Captain (now Admiral) Graves, Commander of the Antelope, and Governor of Newfoundland. The Governor was hence induced to ask Cook a variety of questions, from the answers to which he was led to entertain a very favourable opinion of his abilities. This opinion was increased, the more he faw of Mr. Cook's conduct; who, wherever they went, continued to display the most unremitting attention to every object that related to the knowledge of the coast, and which was calculated to facilitate the practice of navigation, The esteem which Captain Graves had conceived for him, was confirmed by the testimonies to his character that were given by all the officers under whom he ferved *.

1762. 21 Dec. In the latter end of 1762, Mr. Cook returned to England; and, on the 21st of December, in the same year, married, at Barking in Essex, Miss Elizabeth Batts †, an amiable and deserving woman, who was justly entitled to, and enjoyed his tenderest regard and affection. But his station in life, and the high duties to which he was called, did not permit him to partake of matrimonial felicity without many and very long interruptions.

Early in the year of 1763, after the peace with France and Spain was concluded, it was deter-

+ From the information of Mrs. Cook.

mined

^{*} From a paper of Admiral Graves's, communicated by the Rev. Dr. Douglas, now Bishop of Carlisle.

mined that Captain Graves should go out again, CHAP. as Governor of Newfoundland. As the country was very valuable in a commercial view, and had been an object of great contention between the English and the French, the Captain obtained an establishment for the survey of its coasts; which, however, he procured with fome difficulty, because the matter was not sufficiently understood by Government at home. In confidering the execution of the plan, Mr. Cook appeared to Captain Graves to be a proper person for the purpose: and proposals were made to him, to which, notwithstanding his recent marriage, he readily and prudently acceded. Accordingly, he went out with the Captain as furveyor; and was first employed to furvey Miguelon and St. Pierre, which had been ceded by the treaty to the French, who, by order of Administration, were to take possession of them at a certain period, even though the English Commander should not happen to be arrived in the country. When Captain Graves had reached that part of the world, he found there the Governor who had been sent from France (Monf. D'Anjac), with all the fettlers and his own family, on board a frigate and some transports. It was contrived, however, to keep them in that difagreeable fituation for a whole month, which was the time taken by Mr. Cook to complete his furvey. When the business was finished, the French were put into possession of the two islands, and left in the quiet enjoyment of them, with every profession of civility *.

At the end of the season, Mr. Cook returned to England, but did not long continue at home. In the beginning of the year 1764, his old and con-

^{*} From Admiral Graves's paper.

CHAP Stant friend and patron, Sir Hugh Palliser, was appointed Governor and Commodore of Newfoundland and Labradore; upon which occasion he was glad to take Mr. Cook with him, in the fame capacity that he had fustained under Captain Graves. Indeed, no man could have been found who was better qualified for finishing the defign which had been begun in the preceding year. The charts of the coasts, in that part of North America, were very erroneous; and it was highly necessary to the trade and navigation of his Majesty's subjects, that new ones should be formed, which would be more correct and useful. Accordingly, under the orders of Commodore Palliser, Mr. Cook was appointed, on the 18th of April, 1764, Marine Surveyor of Newfound-1764. 18 April. land and Labradore; and he had a veffel, the Grenville schooner, to attend him for that purpose. How well he executed his commission is known to every man acquainted with navigation. The charts which he afterwards published of the different furvey he had made, reflected great credit on his abilities and character, and the utility of them is univerfally acknowledged. It is understood, that, so far as Newfoundland is concerned, they were of confiderable fervice to the King's ministers, in settling the terms of the last

* From Sir Hugh Pallifer's communications.

peace. Mr. Cook explored the inland parts of this island in a much completer manner than had ever been done before. By penetrating farther into the middle of the country than any man had hitherto attempted, he discovered several large lakes, which are indicated upon the general chart *. In these services Mr. Cook appears to have been employed, with the intervals of oc-

cafionally

casionally returning to England for the winter CHAP. feason, till the year 1767, which was the last time, that he went out upon his station of Marine Surveyor of Newfoundland. It must not be omitted. that, while he occupied this post, he had an opportunity of exhibiting to the Royal Society a proof of his progress in the study of astronomy. A short paper was written by him, and inserted in the fifty-seventh volume of the Philosophical Transactions, entitled, "An Observation of an Eclipse ss of the Sun at the Island of Newfoundland, " August 5, 1766, with the Longitude of the " Place of Observation deduced from it." The observation was made at one of the Burgeo islands, near Cape Ray, in latitude 47° 36' 19", on the fouth-west extremity of Newfoundland. Mr. Cook's paper having been communicated by Dr. Bevis to Mr. Witchell, the latter gentleman compared it with an observation taken at Oxford, by the Rev. Mr. Horniby, on the same eclipse, and thence computed the difference of longitude respecting the places of observation, making due allowance for the effect of parallax, and the prolate spheroidal figure of the earth. It appears from the "Transactions," that our navigator had already obtained the character of being an able mathematician *.

SHIP TO THE SAME SAME

Discharge of Confidence of

own and

chapter

^{*} Philosophical Transactions, vol. lvii. p. 215, 216.

CHAPTER THE SECOND.

President oils for Landers of gaternier the sales

Continuation of the History of Captain Cook's Life, to the End of his first Voyage round the World.

CHAP. HERE is fearcely any thing from which the natural curiofity of man receives a higher gratification, than from the accounts of distant countries and nations. Nor is it curiofity only that is gratified by fuch accounts; for the sphere of human knowledge is hereby enlarged, and various objects are brought into view, an acquaintance with which greatly contributes to the improvement of life and the benefit of the world. With regard to information of this kind, the moderns have eminently the advantage over the ancients. The ancients could neither pursue their enquiries with the same accuracy, nor carry them on to the same extent. Travelling by land was much more inconvenient and dangerous than it hath been in later times; and, as navigation was principally confined to coasting, it must necessarily have been circumscribed within very narrow limits.

The invention of the compass, seconded by the ardent and enterprizing spirit of several able men, was followed by wonderful discoveries. Vasco di Gama doubled the Cape of Good Hope; and a new way being thus found out to the East Indies, the countries in that part of the earth became more accurately and extensively known. Another world was discovered by Columbus; and, at length, Magalhaens accomplished the arduous and hitherto

hitherto unattempted task of failing round the CHAP. globe. At different periods, he was succeeded by other circumnavigators, of whom it is no part of the present narrative to give an account.

The spirit of discovery, which was so vigorous during the latter end of the sisteenth and through the whole of the sixteenth century, began, soon after the commencement of the seventeenth century, to decline. Great navigations were only occasionally undertaken, and more from the immediate views of avarice or war, than from any noble and generous principles. But of late years they have been revived, with the enlarged and benevolent design of promoting the happiness of the human species.

A beginning of this kind was made in the reign of King George the Second, during which two voyages were performed; the first under the command of Captain Middleton, and the next under the direction of Captains Smith and Moore, in order to discover a North-west passage, through Hudson's Bay*. It was reserved, however, for the glory of the present reign to carry the spirit of discovery to its height, and to conduct it on the noblest principles; not for the purposes of covetousness or ambition; not to plunder or destroy the inhabitants of newly-explored countries; but to improve their condition, to instruct them in the arts of life, and to extend the boundaries of science.

No sooner was peace restored, in 1763, than these laudable designs engaged his Majesty's patronage; and two voyages round the world had been undertaken, before Mr. Cook set out on his sirst command. The conductors of these voyages were

^{*} Introduction to Captain Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, vol. l. p. i.

whom feveral discoveries were made, which contributed, in no small degree, to increase the knowledge of geography and navigation. Nevertheless, as the purpose for which they were sent out appears to have had a principal reference to a particular object in the South Atlantic, the direct track they were obliged to hold, on their way homeward by the East Indies, prevented them from doing so much as might otherwise have been expected towards giving the world a complete view of that immense expanse of ocean which the South Pacific

comprehends +.

Before Captain Wallis and Captain Carteret had returned to Great Britain, another voyage was resolved upon, for which the improvement of astronomical science afforded the immediate occafion. It having been calculated by astronomers. that a transit of Venus over the Sun's disk would happen in 1769, it was judged that the best place for observing it would be in some part of the South Sea, either at the Marquesas, or at one of those islands which Tasman had called Amsterdam, Rotterdam, and Middleburgh, and which are now better known under the appellation of the Friendly Islands. This being a matter of eminent confequence in astronomy, and which excited the attention of foreign nations as well as of our own, the affair was taken up by the Royal Society, with the zeal which has always been

+ Introduction to Capt. Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, vol. I. p. xviii.

^{*} The Captains Wallis and Carteret went out together upon the fame expedition; but the veffels they commanded having accidentally parted company, they proceeded and returned by a different route. Hence their voyages are diffinctly related by Dr. Hawkesworth.

displayed by that learned body for the advance-CHAP. ment of every branch of philosophical science. Accordingly, a long memorial was addressed to his Majesty, dated February the 15th, 1768, representing the great importance of the object, together with the regard which had been paid to it by the principal courts of Europe; and intreating, among other things, that a veffel might be ordered, at the expence of Government, for the conveyance of fuitable persons, to make the observation of the transit of Venus at one of the places before mentioned. This memorial having been laid before the King by the Earl of Shelburne, (now the Marquis of Landsdown) one of the principal Secretaries of State, his Majesty graciously fignified his pleasure to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, that they should provide a ship for carrying over fuch observers as the Royal Society should judge proper to send to the South Seas; and, on the 3d of April, Mr. Stephens informed the Society, that a bark had been taken up for the purpose *.

The gentleman who had originally been fixed upon to take the direction of the expedition, was Alexander Dalrymple, Efq; an eminent member of the Royal Society, and who, besides possessing an accurate knowledge of astronomy, had distinguished himself by his enquiries into the geography of the Southern Oceans, and by the collection he had published of several voyages to those parts of the world. Mr. Dalrymple being sensible of the difficulty, or rather of the impossibility, of carrying a ship through unknown seas, the crew of which were not subject to the military discipline of his Majesty's Navy, he made

f

^{*} From the minutes of the Council of the Royal Society.

CHAP. he made it the condition of his going, that he should have a brevet commission as Captain of the vessel, in the same manner as such a commission had been granted to Dr. Halley in his voyage of discovery. To this demand Sir Edward Hawke. who was then at the head of the Admiralty, and who possessed more of the spirit of his profession than either of education or science, absolutely refused to accede. He faid at the board, that his conscience would not allow him to trust any ship of his Majesty's to a person who had not regularly been bred a feaman. On being farther preffed upon the subject, Sir Edward declared, that he would fuffer his right hand to be cut off, before he would fign any fuch commission. In this he was, in some degree, justified by the mutinous behaviour of Halley's crew, who refused to acknowledge the legal authority of their commander. and involved him in a dispute which was attended with pernicious consequences. Mr. Dalrymple, on the other hand, was equally steady in requiring a compliance with the terms he had proposed. Such was the state of things, when Mr. Stephens, Secretary to the Admiralty, whose discrimination of the numerous characters, with which by his station he is conversant, reflects as much credit on his understanding, as his upright and able conduct does on the office he has filled, for fo many years, and under fo many administrations, with honour to himself and advantage to the public, observed to the board, that, fince Sir Edward Hawke and Mr Dalrymple were equally inflexible, no method remained but that of finding out another person capable of the service. He knew, he faid, a Mr. Cook, who had been employed as Marine Surveyor of Newfoundland, who had been regularly educated in the Navy.

Navy, in which he was a mafter, and whom he CHAP. judged to be fully qualified for the direction of the present undertaking. Mr. Stephens at the fame time recommended it to the Board, to take the opinion of Sir Hugh Pallifer, who had lately been Governor of Newfoundland, and was intimately acquainted with Cook's character Sir Hugh rejoiced in the opportunity of ferving his friend i le ftrengthened Mr. Stephens's recommendation to the utmost of his power; and added many things in Mr. Cook's favour arising from the particular knowledge which he had of his abilities mand merit tol Accordingly, Mr. Gook was appointed sto the command of the expedition by the Lords of the Admiralty and, on this occasion, herwas promoted to the rank of a Lieutenant in the Royal Navy, his commission bearing date on the twenty fifth of May 1768+

in When the appointment had taken place the first object was to provide a vessel adapted to the purpoles of the voyage. This bulinels was committed to Sir Hugh Pallifer; who took Lieutenant Cook to his affiliance, and they examined together a great number of the ships which then lay in the river Thames. At length, they fixed upon one, of three hundred and feventy tons, to which was given the name of the Endeavour !-

While preparations were making for Lieutenant Cook's expedition, Captain Wallis returned from his voyage round the world. The Earl of Morton President of the Royal Society, had re-

^{*} From the information of Philip Stephens, Efg; communitated by Sir Joseph Banks.

+ From the books of the Admiralty.

From Sir Hugh Pallifer's communications.

CHAP, commended it to this gentleman, on his going out, to fix upon a proper place for observing the transit of Wenus. He kept, accordingly, the object in view and having discovered min the course of his enterprise, an illand, called by him George's Island, but which hath fince been found to bear the name of Otaheite, he judged that Port Royal harbour in this island would afford an eligible fituation for the purpofer Having, immediately on his return to England, fignified his opinion to the Earl of Morton, the Captain's idea was adopted by the Society, and an answer conformable to it was fent to the Commissioners of the Admiralty, who shad applied for directions to what place the observers should be sent the

Mr. Charles Greeny a gentleman who had long been affiftant to Dr. Bradley at the royal observatory at Greenwich, was united with Ligutenant Cook in conducting the aftronomical part of the woyage stands foom after their appointments they received ample inflructions, from the Council of the Royal Society, with regard to the method of carrying on their enquiries tid The Lieutenant was alforaccompanied by Joseph Banks, Efgi 6now Sir Joseph Banks, Bart.) and Dr. Solanders who, in the prime of life, and the first of themat great expence to himfelf, quitted allathe igratifications of polithed fociety, and engaged in a very redious, fatiguing, and hazardous havigation, with the laudable views, of acquiring knowledge in general, of promoting natural knowledge in particular, and of contributing fomething

+ Minutes of the Council.

commended

N

-11

and

ME

^{*} General Introduction to Hawkefworth's Voyages, vol. 1.

1768.

27.

to the improvement and the happiness of the CHAP rude inhabitants of the earth, nous fielder

Though it was the principal, it was not the fole object of Lieutenant Cook's voyage to obferve the transit of Venus. A more accurate examination of the Pacific Ocean was committed to him although in subserviency to his main defign and when his chief bufiness was accomplified, he was directed to proceed in making farther discoveries in the great Southern Seas

The complement of Lieutenant Gook's ship confifted of eighty four persons, besides the Commander boo Her victualling was for eighteen months and there were put on board of her ten carriage and twelve fwivel guns, together with an ample flore of ammunition and other mecessaries tinly this and bus

On the 15th of May, 1768, Lieutenant Cook was appointed, by the Lords of the Admiralty, 25th May. to the command of the Endeavour, in confequence of which he went on board on the 27th, and took charge of the ship. She then lay in the bason in Deptford-yard, where the continued to lie till the iwas completely fatted for fea. On the 30th of 30 July. July she failed down the river, and on the 13th of 13 Aug. August anchored in Plymouth Sound, The wind becoming fair on the 26th of that month our navigators got under fail, and on the 13th of 13 Sept. September anthored in Funchiale Road, in the island of Madeira !.

While Lieutenant Cook and his company were in this island, they were treated with the utmost kindhess and liberality by Mr. Cheap, the English Conful there, and one of the most con-

t

2

2-

N-

ŵ-

ng

to

negod

fiderable

leveral arricles of the thip's provisions * Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. iii. + Ibid. p. iv, v.

¹ Hawkefworth's Voyages, vol. ii. p. 4.

Sug. 2

25.

19.5

Nov.

CHAP fiderable merchants in the town of Funchiale. He infifted upon their taking possession of his house, and furnished them with every possible ac-.1768. commodation during their stay at Madeira. They received, likewife, great marks of attention and civility from Dr. Thomas Heberden, the principal physician of the island, and brother to the excellent and learned Dr. William Heberden, of London. Dr. Thomas Heberden afforded all the affiltance in his power to Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander in their botanical enquiries 100 on 1

It was not folely from the English that the Lieutenant and his friends experienced a kind reception. The fathers of the Franciscan convent displayed a liberality of fentiment towards them, which might not have been expected from Portuguese friars; and in a visit which they paid to a convent of nuns, the ladies expressed a particular pleasure in seeing them. At this wifit the good nuns gave an amuting proof of the progrets they had made in the cultivation of their understandings. Having heard that there were great philosophers among the English gentlemen, they asked them a variety of questions; one gof which was, when it would thunder ; and another, whether a fpring of fresh water, which was much wanted, was any where to be found within the walls of the conventist Eminent as our philosophers were, they were puzzled by these queltions +.

Lieutenant Cook, having laid in a fresh Rock of beef, water, and wine, fet fail from the island 18 Sept. of Madeira, in the night of the 18th of September, and proceeded on his voyage. By the 7th of November, several articles of the ship's provisions

^{*} Hawkefworth's Voyages, vol. ii. p. 5. siderabil

^{+ 1}bid. p. 11.

began to fall fort; for which reason the Lieute-CHAP. nant determined to put into Rio del Janeiro. This place he preferred to any other port in Brasil or to Falkland's Islands, because he could there be better fupplied with what he wanted. and had no doubt of meeting with a friendly re-

onception of the matter, then that it. * noitges

During the run between Madeira and Rio de Janeiro, Lieutenant Cook and the gentlemen in the Endeavour had an opportunity of determining a philosophical question. On the evening of 29 Oct. the 20th of October, they observed that luminous appearance of the fea which hath fo often been mentioned by navigators, and which has been ascribed to such a variety of causes. Flashes of light appeared to be emitted, exactly refembling those of lightning, though without being so confiderable; and fuch was the frequency of them that fometimes eight or ten were visible almost at the same moment. It was the opinion of Mr. Cook and the other gentlemen, that these flashes proceeded from some luminous animal; and their opinion was confirmed by experiment + and all

At Rio de Janeiro, in the port of which Lieutenant Cook came to an anchor on the 13th of 13 Nov. November, he did not meet with the polite reception that, perhaps, he had too fanguinely expected. His flay was spent in continual altercations with the Viceroy, who appeared not a little jealous of the defigns of the English : nor were all the attempts of the Lieutenant to fet the matter right, capable of producing any effect. The Viceroy was by no means distinguished either by his knowledge or his love of fcience; and the grand object of Mr. Cook's expedition

to which was, that the Commandant

immediately call anchor, and bent to the fort * Hawkesworth's Voyages, vol. ii. p. 18. + Ibid. p. 17.

I Dec.

2 Dec.

CHAP. was quite beyond his comprehension. When he was told that the English were bound to the fouther ward, by the order of his Britannic Majesty, to observe a transit of the planet Venus over the fun, an aftronomical phænomenon of great importance to navigation, he could form no other: conception of the matter, than that it was the passing of the North star through the South Pole. During the whole of the contest with the

> Viceroy, Lieutenant Cook behaved with equal fpirit and discretion. A supply of water and other necessaries could not be refused him, and these were gotten on board by the in of December. On that day the Lieutenant fent to the Viceroy for a pilot to carry the Endeavour to fea; but the wind preventing the ship from getting out, the was obliged to continue fome time longer in the harbour. A Spanish packet having arrived at Rio de Janeiro on the 2d of December, with dispatches from Buenos Ayres for Spain, the commander, Don Antonio de Monte Negro y Velasco, offered, with great politeness, to convey the letters of the English to Europe. This favour Lieutenant Cook accepted, and gave Don Antonio a packet for the Secretary of the Admiralty, containing copies of all the papers that had paffed between himself and the Viceroy. He left, also,

> calm, our navigators weighed anchor, and towed down the Bay; but, to their great aftonishment, two that were fired at them, when they had gotten abreast of Santa Cruz, the principal fortification of the harbour. Lieutenant Cook immediately cast anchor, and sent to the fort

duplicates with the Viceroy, that he might forward them, if he thought proper, to Lisbon. On the 5th of December, it being a dead

to demand the reason of this conduct; the answer to which was, that the Commandant

5 Dec.

had

1769

had received no order from the Vicerov to let the CHAP. ship pass ; and that, without fuch an order, no veffel was ever fuffered to go below the fort. It now became necessary to send to the Vicerov, to enquire why the order had not been given ; and his behaviour appeared the more extraordinary, as notice had been transmitted to him of the departure of the English, and he had thought proper to write a polite letter to Mr. Cook, wishing him a good voyage. The Lieutenant's messenger soon returned, with the information that the order had been written feveral days, and that its not having been fent had arisen from some unaccountable negligence alt was not till the 7th of December that the Endeavour got under fail * wine the rieds

In the account which Lieutenant Cook has given of Rio de Janeiro, and the country around it, one circumstance is recorded, which cannot be otherwise than very painful to humanity. It is the horrid expence of life at which the gold mines are wrought. No less than forty thousand negroes are annually imported for this purpose. on the King of Portugal's account; and the English were credibly informed, that, in the year 1766, this number fell fo thort, that twenty thousand more were drafted from the town of Rio t.

From Rio de Janeiro Lieutenant Cook pursued his voyage, and, on the 14th of January, 1760, entered the Streight of Le Maire, at which time the tide drove the ship out with so much violence, and raifed fuch a fea off Cape St. Diego, that she frequently pitched, fo that the bowsprit was under water to On the next day, the Lieutenant andalter that face and them: and their dwell

1769. 14 Jan

Hawkefworth's Voyages, ubi fupra, p. 29. + Ibid. p. 33. I bid. p. 45, 46.

CHAP, chored, first before a small cove, which was understood to be Port Maurice, and afterwards in the Bay of Good Success. While the Endeavour was in this station, happened the memorable adventure of Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Mr. Monkhouse the Surgeon, and Mr. Green the astronomer, together with their attendants and fervants, and two feamen, in afcending a mountain to fearch for plants. In this expedition, they were all of them exposed to the utmost extremity of danger and of cold; Dr. Solander was feized with a torpor which had nearly proved fatal to his life; and two black fervants actually died. b. When the gentlemen had, at length, on the fecond day of their adventure, gotten back to the ship; they congratulated each other on their fafety, with a joy that can only be felt by those who have experienced equal perils; and Mr. Cook was relieved from a very painful anxiety. It was a dreadful testimony of the feverity of the climate, that this event took place when it was the midst of summer in that part of the world *, and at the close of a day the beginning of which was as mild and warm as the month of May usually is in England or or well

In the paffage through the Streight of Le Maire, Lieutenant Cook and his ingenious affociates had an opportunity of gaining a confiderable degree of acquaintance with the inhabitants of the adjoining country. Here it was that they faw human nature in its lowest form. The natives appeared to be the most destitute and forlorn, as well as the most stupid, of the children of men. Their lives are spent in wandering about the dreary wastes that furround them; and their dwellings are no other than wretched hovels of sticks and

ereda

^{*} Hawkelworth, ubi fupra, p. 51-59.

1769

grafs, which not only admit the wind, but the CHAP fnow and the rain! They are almost naked; and fo devoid are they of every convenience which is furnished by the rudest after that they have not fo much as an implement to drefs their foodd Ne verthelefs, they feemed to have no with for acquiring more than they possessed; nor did any thing that was offered them by the English appear acceptable but beads, as an ornamental superfluity of life. A conclusion is hence drawn by Dr. Hawkelworth, that thele people may be upon a level with durfolves, in respect to the happiness they enjoy to This, however, is a position which ought not haffily to be admitted. It is, indeed, a beautiful circumstance, in the order of Divine Providence, that the rudest inhabitants of the earth, and those who are situated in the most unfavourable climates, should not be sensible of their disadvantages. But still it must be allowed, that their happiness is greatly inferior, both in kind and degree, to that intellectual, focial, and moral felicity which is capable of being attained in a highly-cultivated flate of focietys pairub double

In voyages to the South Pacific Ocean, the determination of the best passage from the Atlantic is a point of peculiar importance. It is well known what prodigious difficulties were experienced in this respect by former navigators. The doubling of Cape Horn, in particular, was fo much dreaded, that, in the general opinion, it was far more eligible to pass through the Streight of Magalhaens, Lieutenant Cook hath fully afcertained the erroneousness of this opinion. He was but three-and-thirty days in coming round the

duids

the function of the Dore

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 66.

CHAP land of Terra del Fuego, from the east entrance of the Streight of Le Maire, till he had advanced about twelve degrees to the westward, and three 1769 and a half to the northward of the Streight of Magalhaens; and, during this time, the hip scarcely received any damage. Whereas, if he had come into the Pacific Ocean by that passage, he would not have been able to accomplish it in less than three months people which his people would have been fatigued, and the anchors, cables, fails, and rigging of the veffel much injured. By the course he pursued, none of these inconveniencies were suffered. In thort, Lieutenant Cook, by his own example in doubling Cape Horn, by his accurate afcertainment of the latitude and longitude of the places he came to, and by his instructions to future voyagers, performed the

26 Jan. It was on the 26th of January that the Endeavour took her departure from Cape Horn; and it March. appeared, that, from that time to the vift of March, during a run of fix hundred and fixty leagues, there was no current which affected the fhip. Hence it was highly probable that our navigators had been near no land of any confiderable extent, currents being always found when land is not remote +. 100 to to appet side at besee

most effential fervices to this part of naviga-

But fill it mult be allowed nois

In the profecution of Lieutenant Cook's voyage from Cape Horn to Otaheite several islands were discovered, to which the names were given of Lagoon Island, Thrumb-cap, Bow Island, The Groups, Bird Island, and Chain Island. It appeared that most of these islands were inhabited; and the verdure, and groves of palm-trees,

Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 75. + Ibid, p. 77.

which

which were visible upon some of them, gave them CHAP? the aspectos of a terrestrial paradise to men who; II. excepting the dreary hills too Terra idelu Fuego, had seen nothing for a long time but sky land water. To the and they had seen to the second to

On the 11th of April, the Endeavour arrived 11 April.
in fight of Otaheite, and on the 13th the came
13.
to an anchor in Port Royal Bay, which is lealed
Matavai by the natives. As the stay of the English in the island was not likely to be very short,
and much depended on the manner in which traffic should be carried on with the inhabitants,
Lieutenant Cook, with great good sense and humanity, drew up a set of regulations for the behaviour of his people, and gave it in command

One of the first things that occupied the Lieutenant's attention, after his arrival at Ota-heite, was to prepare for the execution of his grand commission. For this purpose, as, in an excursion to the westward, he had not found any

that they should punctually be observed the

any

h

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 81—87.—Lagoon island lies in latitude 18° 47" S. and longitude 139° 28' W.; the Thrumb-cap, in satitude 18° 35' S. and longitude 139° 48' W.; Bow Island, in latitude 18° 23' S. and longitude 141° 12 W.; the south-easternmost of the Groups, in latitude 18° 12' S. and longitude 142° 42' W; Bird Island, in latitude 17° 48' S. and longitude 143° 35" W.; and Chain Island, in latitude 17° 23' S. and longitude 145° 54' W.

[†] Ibid, p. 91. The rules were as follows: "I. To endeavour, by every fair means, to cultivate a friendship with
the natives; and to treat them with all imaginable humanity.
II. A proper person, or persons, will be appointed to trade
with the natives for all manner of provisions, fruit, and other
productions of the earth; and no officer or seaman, or other
person belonging to the ship, excepting such as are so appointed,
shall trade, or offer to trade, for any fort of provision, fruit,
or other productions of the earth, unless they have leave so to
do. III. Every person employed on shore on any duty whatsoever, is strictly to attend to the same; and if by any neglect he

CHAP. any more convenient harbour than that in which the Endeavour lay, he determined to go on shore; and fix upon fome foot, commanded by the guns of the ship, where he might throw up a small fort for defence, and get every thing ready for making the aftronomical observation. Accordingly, he took a party of men, and landed, being accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Mr. Green. They foon fixed upon a place very proper for their defign, and which was at a confiderable distance from any habitation of the natives. While the gentlemen were marking out the ground which they intended to occupy, and feeing a fmall tent erected that belonged to Mr. Banks, a great number of the people of the country gathered gradually around them, but with no hoftile appearance, as there was not among the Indians a fingle weapon of any kind. Mr. Cook, however, intimated that none of them were to come within the line he had drawn, excepting one, who appeared to be a chief, and Owhaw, a native who had attached himself to the English, both in Captain Wallis's expedition and in the present voyage. The Lieutenant endeavoured to make these two persons understand that the ground which had been marked outwas only wanted to fleep upon for a certain number of nights, and that then it would be quitted. Whether his

meaning

[&]quot;loseth any of his arms, or working tools, or suffers them to be stolen, the full value thereof will be charged against his pay, according to the custom of the Navy in such cases, and he shall receive such farther punishment as the nature of the offence may deserve. IV. The same penalty will be instituted on every person who is found to embezzle, trade, or offer to trade, with any part of the ship's stores, of what nature soever. V. No fort of iron, or any thing that is made of iron, or any fort of cloth, or other useful or necessary articles, are to be given in exchange for any thing but provision. exchange for any thing but provision. " J. Cook."

meaning was comprehended or not, he could not CHAP certainly determine; but the people behaved with a deference and respect that could scarcely have been expected, and which were highly pleating: They fat down without the circle, peaceably and uninterruptedly attending to the progress of the business, which was upwards of to o chours in between thirty and forty of the pattymitalquod

This matter being findled and Mr. Cook having appointed thirteen marines and a petry officer to guard the ferto he and the gentlemen with him fet out upon a dittle excursion into the woods of the country qil Phey had note however, gone fary before they were brought back by a very difagreeable event One of the Indians, who remained about the read after the Lientenant and his friends had left dill watched an opportunit the of taking the lenter at affaires pland fishtchied away his mulques of Upon this ithe perpofficer who commanded the party and who was wa article Thipman. Fordered thes marines beatilifirer lin Will equal want of confideration, and quertape wiel equal inhamanity the men immediately discharge ed their pieces among the thickeloof the filing erowdat whee confilted of more charles bundled It being oblerved that the thief did not fall be was purfued, and thot dead at From dubiequent information it happily appeared; that hone of the natives besides were either killed or wounded

De Lieutenant Cook who was highly diffpleafed with the conduct of the petry officer offenbevery method in his power to dispet the terrors and apprehensions of the Indians, but not immediately with effect. The mext morning but few of the inhabitants were feen upon the beach, and not one of them came off to the ship. What added particularly to the regret of the English was,

1966!

CHAP, that even Owhaw, who had hitherto been fo con-1769.

17 April.

frant in his attachment, and who the day before had been remarkably active in endeavouring to renew the peace which had been broken, did not now make his appearance uln the evening, however when the Lieutenant went on hore with only a bloat's crewland fome of the gentlement between thirty and forty of the natives gathered around them, and trafficked with them in a friendly manner, for cocpa nots and other fruit !! no On the 17th, Mr. Cook and Mr. Green fet up adtention hore, and spent the might there, in order to observe an Ediple of the first fatellite of Hupiter; but they met with a disappointment in confequence of the weather's becoming cloudy. The next day, the Lieutenant with as many of his people as could possibly be spared from the hip began to ered the fort, While the English were employed; in this bufinels, many of the indians were for far from hinderings that they vohuntarily affifted themer and with great alacrity brought the pickets and falcines from the wood where they had been eut andeeth de detupulous had Mr. Cook been of invading their property, that every flake which was sufed was purchased, and hote as tree twas sut down till their confent was purfued, and flot Hostisto modulish that

to Orothenboth sheel Lieutenant timpointed of fwivel guns upon the fort, on which escation he faw with concerns that the natives were alarmed and servified as Some fishermen, who dived upon the point, removed ito a greater distance; and Owline informed the English by figns, of his expediation tahan in four days they would fire inhabitants were feen upon the daughtenghiadt

one of them came off to the thip. Hawkefworth, ubi fapra, P. 105 of t Ibid P. 195 1759

What added

The

that

The Lieutenanto on the Succeeding day, gave CHAP. a striking proof of his regard to justice, and of his dare to preferve the inhabitants from injury and violence, by the punishment he inflicted on 27 April. the butcher of the Endeavour, who was accused of having threatened, or lattempted, the life of a woman that was the wife of Tubourai Tomaide. a chief remarkable for his attachment to our navigatorsigs The butcher wanted to purchase of her a tone hatchet for a mail. 10 Touthis bargain the absolutely refused to accede oupon which the fellow catched apriherhatchet, canduthrew down the nail; threatening, at the fame time, that if the made sany refiltance, he would out there throat with a reaping hook which she had in his hand. The charge was forfully proved in the presence of Mr. Bankspland the butcher had for little to fay in exculpation of thimself, that motorthe least doubt remained of his guiltiw The affair being reported by Mr. Banks to Lieutenant Cook he took an opportunity; when the Chief and his women, with others of the natives, were on board the thip, to call up the offender, and vafters fecapitulating the adculation and the proof whith to give orders for his immediate punishment of While the butcher was frippied and tied up to the rigging, the Indians preferved a fixed attention, and waited for the event in filent fulpence! , aBut as foon as the first stroke was insticted fuch was the humanity of these people; that they interfered with great agitation, and earneftly intreated that the rest of the punishment i might be pemitted in To this, however, the Lieutenanty for various reasons, could not grant his confent mand, when they found that their intercessions were inesfectual, they manifested their compassion by tears *.

Todton A Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 114, 115.

1769. of May.

00

CHAP SOOn the first of May, the observatory was fet up, and the aftronomical quadranto together with fome other inftruments was raken on thore When, on the next morning, Mr. Cook and Mr. Green landed for the nurpole of fixing the quadrant in a frontion for ufeato their inexpress. bladurprize and concern it was not to be found. -Indirado been deposited in a tent dreferved for the Lieunenant's ufer where no one had flept ait had never been taken out of the packing cafe; and the whole was refucentiderable bweight : none of the other instruments, were missings and a centimel had been posted the whole night within live vards of the tent whele circumftances induced a fulpidioni that the robberto might have been committed by fame of auxiown people, who having feen a deal box and mount mount the conrents, might imagine that its contained mails or tother articles for itraffic with the hatives The mon diligent featch, therefore, Iwas made, and a large neward was offered for the finding of the quadrant, but withmordegree of fuccessio In this enigency, Mr. Hanks was of emineritofervice. !! As this gentleman had more influence over the Indians than any other person on boabs the Endeavour, and as there could now be little doubt of the quadrant's diaving been conveyed away by fome of the natives, be determined to go in fearth of it into the woods; and it was recovered in confequence of his judicious and fpirited exertions. The pleasure with which it was brought back was equal to the importance of the event; for the grand object of the voyage could not otherwife have been accomplished . All them too bluos found that their intercellions were medictual, their

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 123-127- bef elinem

1760

8 011y

Another embarraffment, though not of fo fe- CHAP. rious a nature, was occasioned, on the very same day, by one of our officers having inadvertently taken into custody Tootahah, a chief who had connected himself in the most friendly manner with the English. Lieutenant Cook, who had given express orders that none of the Indians should be confined and who therefore was equally furprized and concerned at this transaction, instantly fet Tootahah at liberty. So ffrongly had this Indian been possessed with the notion that it was intended to put him to death, that he could not be perfuaded to the contrary till he was led out of the fort. His joy at his deliverance was fo great, that it displayed itself in a liberality which our people were very unwilling to partake of from a consciousness that on this occasion they had no claim to the reception of favours. The impression, however, of the confinement of the chief operated with fuch force upon the minds of the natives, that few of them appeared; and the market was fo ill supplied, that the English were in want of necessaries. At length, by the prudent exertions of Lieutenant Cook, Mr. Banks. and Dr. Solander, the friendship of Toorahah was completely recovered, and there reconciliation worked upon the Indians like a charm; for it was no fooner known that he had gone voluntarily on board the Endeavour, than bread-fruit, cocoanuts, and other provisions, were brought to the fort in great plenty & guor and to shound bus

The Lieutenant and the rest of the gentlemen had hitherto, with a laudable discretion, bartered only beads for the articles of food now mentioned. But the market becoming flack, they

ti.q.bidl t

iecurco

ped that the faccels of the observation would be * Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 127.

14.

May, to bring out their nails; and fuch was the effect of this new commodity, that one of the fmallest fize, which was about four inches long, procured twenty cocoa-nuts, and bread-fruit in proportion.

It was not till the tenth of the month that our voyagers learned that the Indian name of the island was OTAHEITE, by which name it hath

fince been always diftinguished 4. Whenther men

On Sunday the fourteenth, an instance was exhibited of the inattention of the natives to our modes of religion. The Lieutenant had directed that divine service should be performed at the fort; and he was defirous that some of the principal Indians should be present. Mr. Banks fecured the attendance of Tubourai Tamaide and his wife Tomio, hoping that it would give occafion to some enquiries on their part, and to some instruction in return. During the whole service, they yer attentively observed Mr. Banks's behaviour, and stood, sat, or kneeled, as they saw him do; and they appeared to be fenfible that it was a ferious and important employment in which the English were engaged. But when the worship was ended, neither of them asked any questions, nor would they attend to any explanations which were attempted to be given of what had been perboard the dienes your, than bread-fruit beared

As the day approached for executing the grand purpose of the voyage, Lieutenant Cook determined, in consequence of some hints which he had received from the Earl of Morton, to send out two parties, to observe the transit of Venus from other situations. By this means he hoped that the success of the observation would be

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 136. † Ibid. p. 137.

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

1960:

fecured, if there should happen to be any failute CHAP. at Otaheite. Accordingly, on Thursday the first of June, he dispatched Mr. Gore in the longboat to Eimeo, a neighbouring island, together with Mr. Monkhouse, and Mr. Sporing, a gen- 1 June. tleman belonging to Mr. Banks. They were furnished by Mr. Green with proper instruments. Mr. Banks himself chose to go upon this expedition, in which he was accompanied by Tubourai Tamaide and Tomio, and by others of the natives. Early the next morning, the Lieutenant fent Mr. Hicks, in the pinnace, with Mr. Clerk and Mr. Pickersgill, and Mr. Saunders, one of the midshipmen, ordering them to fix upon some convenient spot to the eastward, at a distance from the principal observatory, where they also might employ the instruments they were provided with for observing the transit.

The anxiety for such weather as would be favourable to the fuccess of the experiment, was powerfully felt by all the parties concerned. They could not fleep in peace the preceding night: but their apprehensions were happily removed by the fun's rifing, on the morning of the third of June, without a cloud. The weather continued with equal clearness throughout the whole of the day; to that the observation was fuccelsfully made in every quarter. At the fort, where Lieutenant Cook, Mr. Green, and Dr. Solander were stationed, the whole passage of the planet Venus over the fun's disk was observed with great advantage. The magnifying power of Dr. Solander's telescope was superior to that of those which belonged to the Lieutenant and to Mr. Green. They all faw an atmosphere or dusky cloud round the body of the planet; which much disturbed the times of contact, and especially of the internal ones; and, in their accounts D 2

ed,

8

W it

h

ip

18, ch

Ti-

od he

ok

ch

to of

he be 2001

to

CHAP, of these times, they differed from each other in a greater degree than might have been expected. According to Mr. Green, bar and a small 1769.

The first external contact, or h. min. fec.
first appearance of Venus
on the fun, was 9 25 42
The first internal contact, or
total immersion, was . 9 44 4
The fecond internal contact, and darly arpendi
or beginning of the emerfi-
on, was 3 14 8
The fecond external contact,
or total emersion, was - 3 32 100
The latitude of the observatory was found to
be 17° 29' 15"; and the longitude 149° 32'
30" west of Greenwich.
and the second of the second o

A more particular account of this great astronomical event, the providing for the accurate obfervation of which reflects fo much honour on his Majesty's munificent patronage of science, may be seen in the fixty-first volume of the Philosophical Transactions *.

The pleasure which Lieutenant Cook and his friends derived from having thus fuccessfully accomplished the first grand object of the voyage, was not a little abated by the conduct of fome of the ship's company, who, while the attention of the officers was engroffed by the transit of Venus, broke into one of the flore rooms, and stole a quantity of spike nails, amounting to no less than an hundred weight This was an evil of a public and serious nature; for these nails, if injudici-ously circulated among the Indians, would be productive of irreparable injury to the English, by reducing the value of iron, their staple com-

CI

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 157. Transactions, vol. lxi. etibom the internal ones; and, the inein according

modity. One of the thieves, from whom only CHAP. feven nails were recovered, was detected; but, though the punishment of two dozen lashes was inflicted upon him, he would not impeach any of into frequent difficulties, and it solidonosa sid

1760.

Upon account of the absence of the two parties who had been fent out to observe the transit, the King's birth-day was celebrated on the fifth, instead of the fourth of June +; and the festinity of the day must have been greatly heightened by the happy fuccess with which his Majesty's liberality had been crowned, of branch a mort amount

On the twelfth, Lieutenant Cook was again reduced to the necessity of exercising the severity of discipline. Complaint having been made to him, by certain of the natives, that two of the feamen had taken from them feveral bows and arrows, and fome strings of plated hair, and the charge being fully supported, he punished each of the criminals with two dozen of lashes. The sales with two dozen of lashes.

On the same day it was discovered, that Otaheite, like other countries in a certain period of fociety, has its bards and its minstrels. Mr. Banks, in his morning's walk, had met with a number of natives, who appeared, upon enquiry, to be travelling musicians; and having learned where they were to be at night, all the gentlemen of the Endeavour repaired to the place. The band confifted of two flutes and three drums: and the drummers accompanied the music with their voices. To the furprize of the English gentlemen, they found that themselves were generally the subject of the song, which was unpremeditated. These minstrels were continually going about from place to place; and they were

is

c-

e,

of

of

ıs,

a an

lic

ci-

be

ish,

mlxi.

lity.

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 157. + Ibib. p. 158.

CHAR rewarded, by the master of the house and the audience, with such things as they wanted.

The repeated thests which were committed by

The repeated thefts which were committed by the inhabitants of Otaheite brought our voyagers into frequent difficulties, and it required all the wisdom of Lieutenant Cook to conduct himself in a proper manner. His fentiments on the subject displayed the liberality of his mind. He thought it of confequence, to put an end, if possible, to thievish practices at once, by doing fomething that should engage the natives in general to prevent them, from a regard to their common intereft. Strict orders had been given by him, that they should not be fired upon, even when they were detected in attempting to fteal any of the English property. For this the Lieutenant had many reasons. The common centinels were in no degree fit to be entrusted with a power of life and death: neither did Mr. Cook think that the thefts committed by the Otaheitans deferved fo fevere a punishment. They were not born under the law of England; nor was it one of the conditions under which they claimed the benefits of civil fociety, that their lives should be forfeited. unless they abstained from theft. As the Lieutenant was not willing that the natives should be exposed to fire-arms loaded with shot, neither did he approve of firing only with powder, which, if repeatedly found to be harmless, would at length be despised. At a time when a considerable robbery had been committed, an accident furnished him with what he hoped would be a happy expedient for preventing future attempts of the fame kind. Above twenty of the failing canoes of the inhabitants came in with a supply of fish. Upon these Lieutenant Cook immediately seized, and, having brought them into the river behind the fort

176q.

fort, gave notice, that unless the things which CHAP. had been stolen were returned, the canoes should. be burnt. This menace, without designing to put it into execution, he ventured to publish. from a full conviction that, as reflicution was thus made a common cause, the stolen goods would all of them speedily be brought back. In this, however, he was mistaken. An iron coalrake, indeed, was reflored; upon which great folicitation was made for the release of the canoes: but he still insisted on his original condition. When the next day came, he was much furprized to find that nothing farther had been returned: and, as the people were in the utmost distress for the fift, which would in a fhort time be fpoilt, he was reduced to the difagreeable alternative. either of releafing the canoes, contrary to what he had folemnly and publicly declared, or of detaining them, to the great damage of those who were innocent. As a temporary expedient, he permitted the natives to take the fifth, but still detained the canoes. So far was this measure from being attended with advantage, that it was productive of new confusion and injury; for as it was not easy at once to distinguish to what particular persons the several lots of fish belonged, the canoes were plundered by those who had no right to any part of their cargo. At length, most pressing instances being still made for the restoration of the canoes, and Lieutenant Cook having reason to believe, either that the things for which he detained them were not in the island, or that those who suffered by their detention were absolutely incapable of prevailing upon the thieves to relinquish their booty, he determined, though not immediately, to comply with the folicitations of the

CHAP. the natives. Our commander was, however, not a little mortified at the ill fuccess of his project *.

About the same time, another accident occur-

About the same time, another accident occurred, which, notwithstanding all the caution of our principal voyagers, was very near embroiling them with the Indians. The Lieutenant having fent a boat on shore to get ballast for the ship, the officer, not immediately finding stones suitable to the purpose, began to pull down some part of an inclosure in which the inhabitants had deposited the bones of their dead. This action a number of the natives violently opposed; and a mesfenger came down to the tents, to acquaint the gentlemen that no fuch thing would be fuffered, Mr. Banks directly repaired to the place, and foon put an amicable end to the contest, by fending the boat's crew to the river, where a fufficient quantity of stones might be gathered without a possibility of giving offence. These Indians appeared to be much more alarmed at any injury which they apprehended to be done to the dead than to the living. This was the only measure in which they ventured to oppose the English; and the only infult that was ever offered to any individual belonging to the Endeavour was upon a fimilar occasion +. It should undoubtedly be the concern of all voyagers, to abstain from wantonly offending the religious prejudices of the people among whom they come.

To extend the knowledge of navigation and the fphere of discovery, objects which we need not say that Lieutenant Cook kept always steadily in view, he set out, in the pinnace, on the twenty-fixth of June, accompanied by Mr. Banks, to make the cir-

26 June.

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 165-168. + Ibid p. 168, 169.

cuit of the island. The particulars of this cir-CHAP. cuit, in which the Lieutenant and his companions were once thrown into great alarm by the apprehended loss of the boat, are fully related in Dr. Hawkesworth's Narrative. By this expedition Mr. Cook obtained an acquaintance with the feveral districts of Otaheite, the chiefs who presided over them, and a variety of curious circumstances refpecting the manners and customs of the inhabitants. On the first of July, he got back to the 1 July. fort at Matavai, having found the circuit of the island, including the two peninsulas of which it confisted, to be about thirty leagues *.

The circumnavigation of Otaheite was followed by an expedition of Mr. Banks's to trace the river up the valley from which it iffues, and examine how far its banks were inhabited. During this excursion, he discerned many traces of subterraneous fire. The stones, like those of Madeira, displayed evident tokens of having been burnt; and the very clay upon the hills had the fame .

appearance.

Another valuable employment of Mr. Banks was the planting of a great quantity of the feeds of water-melons, oranges, lemons, limes, and other plants and trees which he had collected at Rio de Janeiro. For these he prepared ground on each fide of the fort, and felected as many varieties of foil as could be found. He gave, alfo, liberally of these seeds to the natives, and planted many of them in the woods +.

Lieutenant Cook now began to prepare for his departure. On the feventh of July, the car- 7 July. penters were employed in taking down the gates

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 189. + Ibid. p. 194-195.

1764

CHAP, and pallifadoes of the fortification; and it was continued to be difmantled during the two follows ing days. Our Commander and the reft of the gentlemen were in hopes that they should quit Otaheite without giving or receiving any farther offence; but in this respect they were unfortunately disappointed. The Lieutenant had prudently overlooked a dispute of a smaller nature between a couple of foreign feamen and some of the Indians, when he was immediately involved in a quarrel which he greatly regretted, and which yet it was totally out of his power to avoid. In the middle of the night, between the eighth and the ninth, Clement Webb and Samuel Gibson, two of the marines, went privately from the fort. As they were not to be found in the morning, Mr. Cook was apprehensive that they intended to stay behind; but, being unwilling to endanger the harmony and good-will which at present subfifted between our people and the natives, he determined to wait a day for the chance of the men's return. As, to the great concern of the Lieutenant, the marines were not come back on the morning of the tenth, enquiry was made after them of the Indians, who acknowledged that each of them had taken a wife, and had refolved to become inhabibitants of the country. After some deliberation, two of the natives undertook to conduct fuch perfons to the place of the deferters' retreat as Mr. Cook should think proper to fend; and accordingly he dispatched with the guides a petty officer, and the corporal of the marines. As it was of the utmost importance to recover the men, and to do it speedily, it was intimated to several of the chiefs who were in the fort with the women. among whom were Tubourai Tomaide, Tomio, and Oberea, that they would not be permitted

10.

to leave it till the fugitives were returned; and the CHAP. Lieutenant had the pleasure of observing that they received the intimation with very little indications of alarm, and with affurances that his people should be secured and sent back as soon as possible, While this transaction took place at the fort, our Commander fent Mr. Hicks in the pinnace to fetch Tootahah on board the ship. Mr. Cook had reason to expect, if the Indian guides proved faithful, that the deferters, and those who went in search of them, would return before the evening. Being disappointed, his suspicions increased, and thinking it not fafe, when the night approached, to let the persons whom he had detained as hostages continue at the fort, he ordered Tubourai Tomaide, Oberea, and some others, to be taken on board the Endeavour; a circumstance which excited so general an alarm, that several of them, and especially the women, expressed their apprehensions with great emotion and many tears. Webb, about nine o'clock, was brought back by fome of the natives, who declared that Gibson, and the petty officer and corporal, would not be restored till Tootahah should be fet at liberty. Lieutenant Cook now found that the tables were turned upon him: but, having proceeded too far to retreat, he immediately dispatched Mr. Hicks in the longboat, with a strong party of men, to refcue the prisoners. Tootahah was, at the same time, informed, that it behoved him to fend fome of his people with them, for the purpose of affording them effectual affiftance. With this injunction he readily complied, and the prisoners were restored without the least opposition. On the next day they were brought back to the ship, upon which the chiefs were released from their confinement. Thus

13 July.

Thus ended an affair which had given the Lieutenant a great deal of trouble and concern. It appears, however, that the measure which he pursued was the result of an absolute necessity; since it was only by the seizure of the chiefs that he could have recovered his men. Love was the seducer of the two marines. So strong was the attachment which they had formed to a couple of girls, that it was their design to conceal themselves till the ship had sailed, and to take up their residence in the island.

Tupia was one of the natives who had so particularly devoted himself to the English, that he had scarcely ever been absent from them during the whole of their stay at Otaheite. He had been Oberea's first minister, while she was in the height of her power; and he was also chief priest of the country. To his knowledge of the religious principles and ceremonies of the Indians, he added great experience in navigation, and a particular acquaintance with the number and fituation of the neighbouring islands. This man had often expressed a desire to go with our navigators, and when they were ready to depart, he came on board, with a boy about thirteen years of age, and intreated that he might be permitted to proceed with them on their voyage. To have such a person in the Endeavour, was desirable on many accounts; and, therefore, Lieutenant Cook gladly acceded to his proposal.

On the thirteenth of July, the English weighed anchor; and as soon as the ship was under fail, the Indians on board took their leaves, and wept, with a decent and silent forrow, in which there was something very striking and tender. Tupia

fustained

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 197-199.

fustained himself in this scene with a truly admirable CHAP. firmness and resolution: for, though he wept, the effort he made to conceal his tears concurred, 1769. with them, to do him honour, and out the out

The stay of our voyagers at Otaheite was three months, the greater part of which time was fpent in the most cordial friendship with the inhabitants. and a perpetual reciprocation of good offices. That any differences should happen, was greatly regretted on the part of Lieutenant Cook and his friends. who were studious to avoid them as much as possible. The principal causes of them resulted from the peculiar fituation and circumftances of the English and the Indians, and especially from the disposition of the latter to theft. The effects of this disposition could not always be submitted to or prevented. It was happy, however, that there was only a fingle instance in which the differences that arose were attended with any fatal confequence; and by that accident the Lieutenant was instructed to take the most effectual measures for the future prevention of fimilar events. He had nothing fo much at heart, as that in no cafe the intercourse of his people with the natives should be productive of bloodshed. Her sew box the will rem

The traffic with the inhabitants for provisions and refreshments, which was chiefly under the management of Mr. Banks, was carried on with as much order as in any well-regulated market in Europe. Axes, hatchets, fpikes, large nails, lookingglaffes, knives, and beads, were found to be the best articles to deal in; and for some of these. every thing which the inhabitants poffessed might be procured They were, indeed, fond of fine linen cloth, whether white or printed; but an axe, worth half a crown, would fetch more

CHAP than a piece of cloth of the value of twenty timutes and relolution's

hillings . At doubdr

It would deviate from the plan of this narrative. to enter into a minute account of the nature. productions, inhabitants, customs, and manners of the countries which were discovered or visited by Mr. Cook; or to give a particular detail of every nautical, geographical, and astronomical observation. These things must be sought for in the voyages at large which have been published by authority. It will be fufficient here to take notice. that our Commander did not depart from Otaheite without accumulating a store of information and instruction for the enlargement of knowledge and

the benefit of navigation.

While the Endeavour proceeded on her voyage under an easy fail, Tupia informed Lieutenant Cook, that, at four of the neighbouring islands, which he distinguished by the names of HUAHEINEL ULIETEA, OTAHA, and BOLABOLA, hogs, fowls, and other refreshments, which had latterly been fparingly supplied at Otaheite, might be procured in great plenty. The Lieutenant, however, was defirous of first examining an island that lay to the northward, and was called TETHUROA. Accordingly, he came near it; but having found it to be only a fmall low island, and being told, at the fame time, that it had no fettled inhabitants, he determined to drop any farther examination of it, and to go in fearch of Huaheine and Ulietea. which were described to be well peopled, and as large as Otaheite, t bus : nt lead of astaurs fled

nadi

15 July. On the fifteenth of July, the weather being hazy, with light breezes and calms fucceeding each other, fo that no land could be feen, and little

^{*} Hawkelworth, ubi fupra, p. 203-204.

way was made, Tupia afforded an amufing proof CHAP. that, in the exercise of his priestly character, he knew how to unite some degree of art with his superstition. He often prayed for a wind to his god Tane, and as often boafted of his fuccess. This, indeed, he took a most effectual method to secure; for he never began his address to his Divinity, till he perceived the breeze to be fo near, that he knew it must approach the ship before his supplications could well be brought to a conclusion *.

The Endeavour, on the fixteenth, being close 16 July. in with the north-west part of Huaheine, some canoes foon came off, in one of which was the King of the island and his wife. At first the people feemed afraid; but, upon feeing Tupia, their apprehensions were in part dispersed, and, at length, in consequence of frequent and earnestlyrepeated assurances of friendship, their Majesties and feveral others ventured on board the ship. Their aftonishment at every thing which was thewn them was very great; and yet their curiofity did not extend to any objects but what were particularly pointed out to their notice. When they had become more familiar, Mr. Cook was given to understand, that the King was called OREE, and that he proposed, as a mark of amity, their making an exchange of their names. To this our Commander readily confented; and, during the remainder of their being together, the Lieutenant was Oree, and his Majesty was Cookee. In the afternoon the Endeavour having come to an anchor, in a small but excellent har-

Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 277.

bour

ment

the English had this off.

steaded with the treat-

CHAP, bour on the west fide of the island, the name of which was OWHAREE, Mr. Cook, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Mr. Monkhoufe, Tupia, and the natives who had been on board ever fince the morning, immediately went on shore. The English gentlemen repeated their excursions on the two following days; in the course of which they found that the people of Huaheine had a very near refemblance of those of Otaheite, in person, dress, language, and every other circumstance; and that the productions of

the country were exactly fimilar. In trafficking with our people, the inhabitants

of Huaheine displayed a caution and hesitation which rendered the dealing with them flow and tedious. On the nineteenth, therefore, the English were obliged to bring out some hatchets. which it was at first hoped there would be no occasion for, in an island that had never before been vifited by any European. These procured three very large hogs; and as it was proposed to fail in the afternoon, Oree and several others came on board to take their leave. To the King Mr. Cook gave a fmall pewter plate, on which was stamped this inscription; "His Britannic Ma-" jesty's ship Endeavour, Lieutenant James Cook " Commander, 16th July, 1769, Huaheine." Among other prefents made to Oree, were fome medals or counters, resembling the coin of England, and struck in the year 1761; all of which and particularly the plate, he promifed carefully and inviolably to preferve. This the Lieutenant thought to be as lasting a testimony as any he could well provide, that the English had first discovered the island; and having dismissed his visiters, who were highly pleased with the treat-

ment

19 July.

es July.

24.

ment they had met with he failed for Ulietea, in C H A P. a good harbour off which he anchored the next III day has a serious day has a se

Tupia had expressed his apprehension that our navigators, if they landed upon the island, would be exposed to the attacks of the men of Bolabola, whom he represented as having lately conquered it, and of whom he entertained a very formidable idea. This, however, did not deter Mr. Cook, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and the other gentlemen, from going immediately on shore. Tupia, who was of the party, introduced them, by performing some ceremonies which he had practised before at Huaheine. After this, the Lieutenant hoisted an English jack, and, in the name of his Britannic Majesty, took possession of Usetea, and the three neighbouring islands, Huaheine, Otaha, and Bolabola, all of which were in sight.

On the twenty first, the master was dispatched at July in the long-boat, to examine the coast of the south part of the island; and one of the mates was sent in the yawl, to sound the harbour where the Endeavour lay to found the same time, Lieute, nant Cook went himself in the pinnace, to survey that part of Ulietea which lies to the north. Mr. Banks, likewise, and the gentlemen again went on shore, and employed themselves in trading with the natives, and in examining the productions and curiosities of the country; but they saw

nothing

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 283. Huaheine is fituated in the latitude of 16° 43' S. and longitude 150° 52' W. from Greenwich. Its distance from Otaheite is about thirty-one leagues, in the direction of N. 18 W. and it is about fever leagues in compass.

⁺ This harbour or bay is called by the natives OOPOA, and extends almost the whole length of the east side of the island. In its greatest extent it is capable of holding any number of shipping.

SHAP nothing worthy of notice, excepting fome human jaw-bones, which, like fealps among the Indians of North America, were trophies of war, and had 1769. probably been hung up, by the warriors of Bolabola, as a memorial of their conquest, atologiven

23 July.

The weather being hazy on the twenty-fecond and twenty-third, with strong gales, the Lieutenant did not venture to put to fea; but, on the twenty-fourth, though the wind continued to be variable, he got under fail, and plied to the northward within the reef; purpofing to go out at a wider opening than that by which he had entered the harbour." However, in doing this, he was in imminent danger of firiking on the rock. The master, who by his order had kept continually founding in the chains, fuddenly called out, Stitwo fathom," Though our Commander knew that the thip drew at least fourteen feet, and confequently that the shoal could not possibly be under her keel, he was, nevertheless, justily alarmed. Happily, the malter was either miftaken, top the Endeavour went along the edges of a coral rock; many of which; in the neighbourhood of thefe islands, are as sleep as a wall?......

... After a tedious navigation of fome days, during which feveral finall islands were feen, and the long-boat landed at Otaha, Lieutenant Cook returned to Ulietea, but to a different part of it from that which he had wifited before. In a harbour, belonging to the west side of the island, he came to an anchor on the first of August. This measure was necessary, in order to stop a leak which the ship had sprung in the powder-room,

2 August.

MALLOCA

* Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 286.

bus ellerger it is capable of tradition of the series its and

á

h d

E

G!

U

2 Pi

ĤÜ

Ac

the

pec

hor

ver

form

HOO

lifh.

Kin

of h the the i

and to take in more ballaft, as the was found too CHAP. light to carry fail upon a wind. The place where the Endeavour was fecured was conveniently fitu-1769. ated for the Lieutenant's purpose of obtaining ballaft and water.

Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and the gentlemen who went on there this day, from their time much to their fatisfaction. The reception they met was respectful in the highest degree, and the behaviour of the Indians to the English indicated a fear of them, mixed with a confidence that they had no propensity to commit any kind of injury. In an intercourse which the Lieutenant and his friends carried on, for feveral days, with the inhabitants of this pare of the island, it appeared that the terrors which Tupia had expressed of the Bolabola conquerers were wholly groundless, Even Openny, the formidable King of Bolabola, treated our navigators with respect. Being at Unetea on the fifth of August, he fent Mr. Cook , August. a present of three hogs, some fowls, and several pieces of cloth, of uncommon length, together with a confiderable quantity of plantains, cocoaauts, and other refreshments. This present was accompanied with a mellage, that, on the next day; he intended to pay our Commander a vifit. Accordingly, on the fixth, the Lieutenant and the rest of the gentlemen all staid at home, in expectation of the important vifiter; who did not, however, make his appearance, but fent three very pretty girls as his messengers, to demand fomething in return for his present. In the aftermoon as the great King would not go to the Englifth, the English determined to go to the great King. From the account which had been given of him, as lord of the Bolabola men, who were the conquerors of Ulietea, and the terror of all the other islands, Lieutenant Cook and his companions E 2

1

17

ie

2-

it

D

ne

is

ak

m,

nd

CHAP panions expected to fee a young and vigorous 11. 1769.

chief, with an intelligent countenance, and the marks of an enterprizing spirit; instead of which, they found a feeble wretch, withered and decrepid, half blind with age, and so sluggish and stupid that he scarcely appeared to be possessed even of a common degree of understanding. Otaha being the principal place of Opoony's refidence, he went with our navigators to that island on the next day; and they were in hopes of deriving some advantage from his influence, in obtaining fuch provision as they wanted. In this respect, however, they were disappointed; for, though they had prefented him with an axe, as an inducement to him to encourage his subjects in dealing with them, they were obliged to leave him without having procured a fingle article.

The time which the carpenters had taken up in stopping the leak of the ship, having detained our voyagers longer at Ulietea than they would otherwife have staid, Lieutenant Cook determined to give up the defign of going on shore at Bolabola, especially as it appeared to be difficult of access. The principal islands, about which the English had now spent somewhat more than three weeks, were fix in number; Ulietea, Otaha, Bolabola, Huaheine, Tubai, and Maurua .. As they lie contiguous to each other, the Lieutenant gave them the general appellation of Society Islands; but did not think pro-

I

n

t

h

tl

b di

in

Ы

aid bus sloot themanusi. I

- COLUMN

^{*} These islands are situated between the latitude of 160 to' and 16° 55' fouth, and between the longitude of 150° 57' and 152° west from the meridian of Greenwich. The smaller islands difcovered, or feen, in the neighbourhood of Otaheite and the Society Isles, were Tethuroa, Eimeo, Tapoamanao, Oatara, Opururu, Tamou, Toahoutu, and Whennuaia.

per to distinguish them separately by any other CHAP.

names than those by which they were called by
the natives.

On the ninth of August, the leak of the vessel 9 August. having been stopped, and the fresh stock that had been purchased being brought on board, our Commander took the opportunity of a breeze which sprang up at east, and sailed out of the harbour. As he was sailing away, Tupia strongly urged him to fire a shot towards Bolabola; and, though that island was at seven teagues distance, the Lieutenant obliged him by complying with his request. Tupia's views probably were, to display a mark of his resentment, and to shew

the power of his new allies *.

18

10

h,

e-

ıd

ed

g.

e-

at

es

in

nis

or,

25

Cts

ve

in

ur

er-

to

la

of

the

ree

ha,

33

the

ion

ro.

and

152°

Sociuru-

per

Our voyagers pursued their course, without meeting with any event worthy of notice, till the thirteenth, when land was discovered bearing southeast, and which Tupia informed them to be an island called OHETEROA. On the next day, Mr. Cook fent Mr. Gore, one of his Lieutenants, in the pinnace, with orders that he should endeavour to get on shore, and learn from the natives whether there was anchorage in a bay then in fight, and what land lay farther to the fouthward. Mr. Gore was accompanied in this expedition by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Tupia, who used every method, but in vain, to conciliate the minds of the inhabitants, and to engage them in a friendly intercourse. As, upon making the circuit of the island, neither harbour nor anchorage could be found upon it, and, at the same time, the disposition of the people was so hostile, that landing would be rendered impracticable without bloodshed, Mr. Cook determined, with equal

* Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 299.

wifdom

13.

15 Aug.

25.

30.

CHAP. wifdom and humanity, not to attempt it, having no motive that could justify the risk of life.

From Tupia our navigators learned that there were various islands lying at different distances and in different directions from Oheteroa, between the fouth and the north-west; and that to the north-east there was an island called Manua, Bird Island. This he represented as being at the distance of three days fail; but he seemed most defirous that Lieutenant Cook should proceed to the westward, and described several islands in that fituation, which he faid he had visited. It appeared, from his description of them, that these were probably Boscawen and Keppel's Islands, which were discovered by Captain Wallis. The farthest island that Tupia knew of to the fouthward, lay, he faid, at the distance of about two days fail from Oheteroa, and was called Mourou. But he added, that his father had informed him of there being islands still more to the fouth. Upon the whole, our Commander determined to stand fouthward in fearch of a continent, and to lose no time in attempting to discover any other islands than such as he might happen to fall in with during his course +.

On the fifteenth of August, our voyagers failed from Oheteroa; and on the twenty-fifth of the same month was celebrated the anniversary of their departure from England. The comet was seen on the thirtieth. It was a little above the horizon, in the eastern part of the heavens,

+ Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 302-309.

^{*}Oheteroa is fituated in the latitude of \$2° \$7' fouth, and in the longitude of 150° 47' west from the meridian of Greenwich. It is thirteen miles in circuit, and rather high than low; but it did not appear to be equal, either in populousness or fertility, to the other islands which had been seen in these seas.

hour after four it passed the meridian, and its tail subtended an angle of forty-two degrees. Tupia, who was among others that observed the comet, instantly cried out, that as soon as it should be seen by the people of Bolabola, they would attack the inhabitants of Ulietea, who would be obliged to endeavour to preserve their lives by flying with the utmost precipitation to the mountains.

S

0

1,

Æ

0

it

e

,

8

1-

0

J.

n

1.

0

0

T

n

1-

ъf

re

8,

in

h.

at

On the fixth of October land was discovered, 6 October. which appeared to be large. When, on the next of the next day, it was more distinctly visible, it assumed a still larger appearance, and displayed four or five ranges of hills, rising one over the other, above all which was a chain of mountains of an enormous height. This land naturally became the subject of much eager conversation; and the general opinion of the gentlemen on board the Endeavour was, that they had found the Terra australis incognita. In fact, it was a part of New Zealand, where the first adventures the English met with were very unpleasant, on account of the hostile disposition of the inhabitants.

Lieutenant Cook, having anchored, on the eighth, in a bay, at the entrance of a small river, went on shore in the evening, with the pinnace and yawl, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, and attended with a party of men Being desirous of conversing with some natives whom he had observed on the opposite side of the river from that on which he had landed, he ordered the yawl in, to carry himself and his companions over, and left the pinnace at the entrance. When they came near the place

where

^{*} The latitude of the ship was 38° 20' fouth, and the longitude, by log, 147° 6' west.

CHAP, where the Indians were affembled, the latter all ran away; and the gentlemen, having left four boys to take care of the yawl, walked up to feveral huts which were about two or three hundred yards from the water-fide. They had not gone very far, when four men, armed with long lances, rushed out of the woods, and running up to attack the boat would certainly have cut her off, if they had not been discovered by the people in the pinnace, who called to the boys to drop down the stream. The boys instantly obeyed; but being closely purfued by the natives, the cockswain of the pinnace, to whom the charge of the boats was committed, fired a musquet over their heads. At this they stopped and looked around them; but their alarm speedily subsiding, they brandished their lances in a threatening manner, and in a few minutes renewed the pursuit. The firing of a fecond musquet over their heads did not draw from them any kind of notice. At last, one of them having lifted up his spear to dart it at the boat, another piece was fired, by which he was shot dead. At the fall of their asfociate, the three remaining Indians stood for a while motionless, and seemed petrified with astonishment. No sooner had they recovered themfelves, than they went back, dragging after them the dead body, which, however, they were obliged to leave, that it might not retard their flight. Lieutenant Cook and his friends, who had straggled at a little distance from each other, were drawn together upon the report of the first musquet, and returned speedily to the boat, in which having croffed the river, they foon beheld the Indian lying dead upon the ground. After their return to the ship, they could hear the

people on shore talking with great earnestness, CHAP.

and in a very loud tone of voice *: 451 51 511 10

1769.

9. 04.

Notwithstanding this disaster, the Lieutenant, being defirous of establishing an intercourse with the natives, ordered, on the following day, three boats to be manned with feamen and marines. and proceeded towards the shore, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, the other gentlemen, and Tupia. About fifty of the inhabitants feemed to wait for their landing, having feated themfelves upon the ground, on the opposite side of the river. This being regarded as a fign of fear, Mr. Cook, with only Mr. Banks, Dr Solander, and Tupia, advanced towards them; but they had not gone many paces before all the Indians started up, and every man produced either a long pike, or a small weapon of green talk. Though Tupia called to them in the language of Otaheite, they only answered by flourishing their weapons, and making figns for the gentlemen to depart. On a musquet's being fired wide of them, they defilted from their threats; and our Commander, who had prudently retreated till the marines could be landed, again advanced towards them, with Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Tupia, to whom were now added Mr. Green and Mr. Monkhouse. Tupia was a second time directed to fpeak to them, and it was perceived with great pleasure that he was perfectly understood, his and their language being the fame, excepting only in a diversity of dialect. He informed them that our voyagers only wanted provision and water, in exchange for iron, the properties of which he explained as far as he was able. Though the natives feemed willing to trade, Tupia was fenfible, during the course of his conversation with the English party discharged their pi

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 313-316.00 190501

CHAP, them, that their intentions were unfriendly; and of this he repeatedly warned the English gentlemen. At length, twenty or thirty of the Indians were induced to cross the river, upon which prefents were made them of iron and beads. On these they appeared to set little value, and particularly on the iron, not having the least conception of its use, so that nothing was obtained in return excepting a few feathers. Their arms, indeed, they offered to exchange for those of our voyagers, and this being refused, they made various attempts to fnatch them out of their hands. Tupia was now instructed to acquaint the Indians. that our gentlemen would be obliged to kill them, if they proceeded to any farther violence; notwithstanding which, one of them, while Mr. Green happened to turn about, seized his hanger, and retired to a little distance, with a shout of The others, at the same time, began exultation. to be extremely insolent, and more of the natives were feen coming to join them from the opposite fide of the river. It being, therefore, necessary to repress them, Mr. Banks fired, with small thot, at the distance of about fifteen yards, upon the man who had taken the hanger. Though he was struck, he did not return the hanger, but continued to wave it round his head, while he flowly made his retreat. Mr. Monkhouse then fired at him with ball, and he instantly dropped. So far, however, were the Indians from being fufficiently terrified, that the main body of them, who, upon the first discharge, had retired to a rock in the middle of the river, began to return, and it was with no small difficulty that Mr. Monkhouse secured the hanger. The whole number of them continuing to advance, three of the English party discharged their pieces at them, loaded only with small thot, upon which they swam back for the shore, and it appeared, upon their landing,

landing, that two or three of them were wound- CHAP. ed. While they retired flowly up the country. Lieutenant Cook and his companions reimbarked in their boats.

1760.

As the Lieutenant had unhappily experienced that nothing, at this place, could be done with these people, and found that the water in the river was falt, he proceeded in the boats, round the head of the bay, in search of fresh water. Beside this, he had formed a defign of furprizing some of the natives, and taking them on board, that, by kind treatment and presents, he might obtain their friendship, and render them the instruments of establishing for him an amicable intercourse with their countrymen. While, upon account of a dangerous furf which every where beat upon the shore, the boats were prevented from landing, our Commander faw two canoes coming in from the fea. one under fail, and the other worked with paddles. This he thought to be a favourable opportunity for executing his purpose, Accordingly, the boats were disposed in such a manner as appeared most likely to be successful in intercepting the canoes. Notwithstanding this, the Indians, in the canoe which was paddled, exerted themselves with so much vigour, at the first apprehension of danger, that they escaped to the nearest land. The other canoe failed on without discerning the English, till she was in the midst of them; but no fooner had she discovered them than the people on board struck their fail, and plied their paddles fo brifkly as to outrun the boat by which they were purfued. Being within hearing, Tupia called to them to come alongfide, with assurances that they should not in any degree be hurt or injured. They trusted, however, more to their own paddles, than to Tupia's promises, and continued

CHAP. continued to fly from our navigators with all their power. Mr. Cook, as the least exceptionable expedient of accomplishing his defign, ordered a musquet to be fired over their heads. This, he hoped, would either make them furrender or leap into the water, but it produced a contrary effect. The Indians, who were seven in number, immediately formed a resolution not to fly, but to fight. When, therefore, the boat came up, they began the attack with their paddles, and with stones and other offensive weapons; and they carried it on with fo much vigour and violence, that the English thought themselves obliged to fire upon them in their own defence; the consequence of which was, that four were unhappily killed. The other three, who were boys, the eldest about nineteen, and the youngest about eleven, instantly leaped into the water, and endeavoured to make their escape; but being with some difficulty overpowered by our people, they were brought into

It is impossible to reflect upon this part of Lieutenant Cook's conduct with any degree of fatisfaction. He, himself, upon a calm review, did not approve of it; and he was sensible that it would be cenfured by the feelings of every reader of humanity. It is probable that his mind was fo far irritated by the difagreeable preceding events of this unfortunate day, and by the unexpected violence of the Indians in the canoe, as to lofe fomewhat of that felf-poffession by which his character in general was eminently distinguished. Candour, however, requires that I should relate what he hath offered in extenuation, not in defence, of the transaction; and this shall be done in his own words, as they are given us by Dr.

Hawkesworth.

[#] Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 319-327.

Hawkefworth. "These people certainly did not CHAP. deferve death for not choosing to confide in my promises, or not consenting to come on board my boat, even if they had apprehended no danger. But the nature of my fervice required me to obtain a knowledge of their country, which I could no otherwise effect than by forcing my way into it in a hostile manner, or gaining admission through the confidence and good-will of the people. I had already tried the power of presents without effect; and I was now prompted, by my defire to avoid farther " hostilities, to get some of them on board, as " the only method left of convincing them that we intended them no harm, and had it in our " power to contribute to their gratification and convenience. Thus far my intentions certainly 66 were not criminal; and though in the contest, which I had not the least reason to expect, our " victory might have been complete without fo great an expence of life; yet in such situations, when the command to fire has been given, no man can restrain its excess, or prescribe its

Our voyagers were successful in conciliating the minds of the three boys, to which Tupia particularly contributed. When their fears were allayed, and their chearfulness returned, they sang a song with a degree of taste that surprized the English gentlemen. The tune, like those of our pfalms. was folemn and flow, containing many notes and femitones.

Some farther attempts were made to establish an intercourse with the natives, and Mr. Cook and his friends, on the tenth, went on shore for this 10 Oc.

Hawkesworth, ubi fupra, p. 320-321.

1760. 11 Oct.

HAP purpole ; but being unfuecelsful in their endeavours, they refolved to re-imbark, left their flay should embroil them in another quarrel, and cost more of the Indians their lives. On the next day, the Lieutenant weighed anchor, and stood away from this unfortunate and inhospitable place. As it had not afforded a fingle article that was wanted, excepting wood, he gave it the name of Poverty BAY. By the inhabitants it is called TAONEROA. or Long Sand . I shall not regularly pursue the course of our Commander round New Zealand. In this course he spent nearly fix months, and made large additions to the knowledge of navigation and geography. By making almost the whole circuit of New Zealand, he afcertained it to be two islands, with a strength of evidence which no prejudice could gainfay or refift. He obtained, likewife, a full acquaintance with the inhabitants of the different parts of the country, with regard to whom it was clearly proved, that they are eaters of human flesh. Referring to the voyage at large for a more particular diplay of a great number of circumstances, I shall only select a few things which mark Mr. Cook's personal conduct, and relate to his intercourse with the natives.

The good ulage the three boys had met with, and the friendly and generous manner in which they were diffinified to their own homes, had fome effect in foftening the dispositions of the neighbouring Indians. Several of them, who had come on board while the ship lay becalmed in the afternoon, manifested every fign of friendship, and cordially invited the English to go back to their

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 327 & feq. Ta lies in latitude 38° 42' fouth, and longitude 181° 36' west.

off. But Lieutenant Cook chofe rather to profecute his discoveries, having reason to hope that he should find a better harbour than any he had

yet feen.

While the thip was hauling round to the fouth end of a fmall island, which the Lieutenant had named Portland . from its very great refemblance to Portland in the British Channel, the suddenly fell into shoal water and broken ground. The foundings were never twice the fame, jumping at once from feven fathom to eleven. However, they were always leven fathom of more; and in a fhort time the Endeavour got clear of danger, and again failed in deep water. While the thip was in apparent diffress, the inhabitants of the island, who, in vast numbers, fat on its white cliss, and could not avoid perceiving fome appearance of confusion on board, and some irregularity in the working of the veffel, were delirous of taking advantage of her critical fituation. Accordingly, five cances, full of men, and well armed, were put off with the utmost expedition; and they came fo near, and shewed to hostile a disposition, by flouting, brandiffling their lances, and using threatening gestures, that the Lieutenant was in pain for his finall boat, which was fail employed in founding. By a mulquet, which he ordered to be fired over them, they were rather provoked than intimidated. The firing of a four pounder, loaded with grape-shot, though purposely discharged wide of them, produced a better effect. Upon the report of the piece, the Indians all role up and shouted; but, instead of continuing the chace,

^{*} The natives call it TEAHOW PAY.

CHAP, they collected themselves together, and, after a thort consultation went quietly away.

1769. 14 Oct.

chey

On the fourteenth of October, Lieutenant Cook having hoisted out his pinnace and long-boat to fearch for water, just as they were about to fet off, feveral boats, full of the New Zealand people, were feen coming from the shore. After some time, five of these boats, having on board between eighty and ninety men, made towards the ship; and four more followed at no great distance, as if to fustain the attack, When the first five had gotten within about a hundred yards of the Endeayour, they began to fing their war fong, and, brandishing their pikes, prepared for an engages ment. As the Lieutenant was extremely defirous of avoiding the unhappy necessity of using firearms against the natives, Tupia was ordered to acquaint them, that our voyagers had weapons which, like thunder, would destroy them in is moment; that they would immediately convince them of their power by directing their effect to that they should not be hurt; but that if they persisted in any hostile attempt, they would be exposed to the direct artack of these formidable weapons. A four-pounder, loaded with grapes thot, was then fired wide of them; and this expedient was fortunately attended with success. The report, the flash, and, above all, the shot, which spread very far in the water, terrified the Indians to fuch a degree, that they began to paddle away with all their might. At the instance, however, of Tupia, the people of one of the boats were induced to lay afide their arms, and to come under the stern of the Endeavour; in consequence of which they received a variety of presents. The notives cell it Tranquinay, On

d

On the next day a circumstance occurred, CHAP. which shewed how ready one of the inhabitants. II. of New Zealand was to take an advantage of our navigators. In a large armed canoe, which came 15 Oct. boldly alongfide of the ship, was a man who had a black skin thrown over him, somewhat like that of a bear. Mr. Cook being defirous of knowing to what animal it originally belonged, offered the Indian for it a piece of red baize. With this bargain he feemed to be greatly pleafed, immediately pulling off the skin, and holding it up in the boat. He would not, however, part with it till he had the cloth in his possession; and as there could be no transfer of property, if equal caution should be exercised on both sides; the Lieutenant ordered the baize to be delivered into his hands. Upon this, instead of fending up the skin, he began with amazing coolness, to pack up both that and the cloth, which he had received as the purchase of it, in a basket: nor did he pay the least regard to Mr. Cook's demand or remonstrances. but foon after put off from the English vessel. Our Commander was too generous to revenge this infult by any act of feverity. A ni medi med

During the course of a traffic which was carrying on for some fish, little Tayeto, Tupia's boy, was placed among others over the ship's side, to hand up what was purchased. While he was thus employed, one of the New Zealanders, watching his opportunity, suddenly seized him, and dragged him into a canoe. Two of the natives then held him down in the fore part of it, and the others, with great activity, paddled her off with all possible celerity. An action so violent rendered it indispensably necessary that the marines, who were in arms upon the deck, should be ordered to fire. Though the shot was directed to

that

e

d

n

CHAP, that part of the canoe which was farthest from the boy, and somewhat wide of her, it being thought preferable rather to miss the rowers than to run the hazard of hurting Tayeto, it happened that one man dropped. This occasioned the Indians to quit their hold of the youth, who instantly leaped into the water, and fwam towards the ship. In the mean while, the largest of the canoes pulled round and followed him; and till fome musquets and a great gun were fired at her, did not defift from the pursuit. The ship being brought to, a boat was lowered, and the poor boy was taken up unhurt. Some of the gentlemen, who with their glasses traced the canoes to shore, agreed in afferting, that they faw three men carried up the beach, who appeared to be either dead or wholly disabled by their wounds *.

While, on the eighteenth, the Endeavour lay a-breast of a peninsula within Portland Island, called TERAKARO, two of the natives who were judged to be chiefs, placed an extraordinary degree of confidence in Mr. Cook. They were fo well pleased with the kindness which had been shewn them in a visit to the ship, that they determined not to go on shore till the next morning. This was a circumstance by no means agreeable to the Lieutenant, and he remonstrated against it; but as they perfifted in their resolution, he agreed to comply with it, provided their fervants also were taken on board, and their canoe hoisted into the ship. The countenance of one of these

two

W

01

W

ty

ons Wef thef

Who

with

place

18 Oct.

^{*} Hawkelworth, ubi supra, p. 332—339. To the cape off which this unhappy transaction happened, Mr. Cook gave the name of CAPE KIDNAPPERS. It lies in attend 39° 43', and longer than the cook of Postland is gitude 1820 24' west. Its distance from the Ise of Portland is thirteen leagues fouth west and west. Between them is the bay of which it is the fouth point, and which, in honour of Sir Edward Hawke, the Lieutenant called Hawke's Bay.

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK.

two chiefs was the most open and ingenuous that CHAPO our Commander had ever feen, so that he soon gave up every suspicion of his entertaining any simister design. When the guests were put on shore the next morning, they expressed some furprize at seeing themselves so far from their habitations.

On Monday the twenty-third, while the thip 23 Oct. was in Tegadoo Bay, Lieutenant Cook went on shore to examine the watering-place, and found every thing agreeable to his wishes. The boat landed in the cove, without the least furf; the water was excellent, and conveniently fituated; there was plenty of wood close to the high water mark; and the disposition of the people was as favourable in all respects as could be defired *. Early the next morning, our Commander fent Lieutenant Gore to superintend the cutting of wood and filling of water, with a fufficient number of men for both purpofes, and all the marines as a guard. Soon after, he went on shore himfelf, and continued there during the whole day. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, who had landed on the fame day, found in their walks feveral things worthy of notice. As they were advancing in one of the valleys, the hills on each fide of which were very steep, they were suddenly struck with the fight of an extraordinary natural curiofity. "It was a rock, perforated through its " whole substance, so as to form a rude but " stupendous arch or cavern, opening directly to

١,

re

e-

ſŏ

én

er-

ıg.

to

it;

eed

lfo

ted

refe

e off

e the

lon-

id is

e bay

ward

two

F 2

the

^{*} Mr. Cook, with Mr. Green, having taken several observations of the sun and moon, the mean result of them gave 180° 47' west longitude; but, as all the observations made before exceeded these, the Lieutenant laid down the coast from the mean of the whole. At noon, this day, he took the sun's meridian altitude with an astronomical quadrant which was set up at the watering-place, and found the latitude to be 38° 22' 24".

CHAP He heefear This aperture was feventy-five feet "Idong, twenty-feven broad, and five and forty " feet high, commanding a view of the bay and 1769. the hills on the other fide, which were feen "through it; and, opening at once upon the "dview produced an effect far fuperior to any " of the contrivances of art *."

48 Oct. When, on the twenty-eighth, the gentlemen of the Endeavour went on shore upon an island which lies to the left hand of the entrance of Tolaga Bay, they faw there the largest carloe they had yet met with her length being fixty-eight feet and a half, her breadth five feet, and her height three feet fix inches. In the fame island was a larger house than any they had hitherto feen; but it was in an unfinished state, and full of chips + some Comes + squhes of chips + squhes of

I Nov.

While the ship was in Hicks's Bay, the inhabitants of the adjoining coast were found to be very hostile. This gave much uneafiness to our navigators, and was, indeed, contrary to their expectation; for they had hoped, that the report of their power and clemency had spread to a greater extent. At day-break, on the first of November, they counted no less than five and forty canoes that were coming from the shore towards the Endeavour; and these were followed by several more from another place. Some of the Indians traded fairly; but others of them took what was handed down to them without making any return, and added derifion to fraud. The infolence of one of them was very remarkable. Some linen hanging over the ship's side to dry, this man,

* Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 352.

without

NHLfife

⁺ Ibid. p. 355. Among other trifling curiofities, which Dr. Solander purchased of the Indians, was a boy's top, shaped exactly like those which children play with in England; and the natives shewed, by signs, that it was to be whipped in order to make it fpin.

without any ceremony, untied it, and put it up CHAP. in his bundle. Being immediately called to, and required to return it, instead of doing so; he let his canoe drop a-stern, and laughed at the English. A musquet which was fired over his head did not put a stop to his mirth. From a second musquet, which was loaded with small shot, he shrunk a little, when the shot struck him upon his back; but he regarded it no more than one of our men would have done the stroke of a rattan, and continued with great composure to pack up the linen which he had stolen. All the canoes now dropped a-stern, and set up their song of defiance, which lasted till they were at about four hundred yards distance from the ship. As they did not appear to have a defign of attacking our voyagers, Lieutenant Cook was unwilling to do them any hurt; and yet he thought that their going off in a bravado might have a bad effect when it should be reported on shore. To convince them, therefore, that they were still in his power, though far beyond the reach of any millile weapon with which they were acquainted, he ordered a four-pounder to be fired in fuch a manner as to pass near them. As the shot happened to strike the water, and to rife several times at a great distance beyond the canoes, the Indians were fo much terrified, that, without once looking behind them, they paddled away as fast as they were able.

In standing westward from a small island called Mowtohora, the Endeavour fuddenly shoaled her water from seventeen to ten fathom. As the Lieutenant knew that she was not far from some fmall islands and rocks which had been feen before it was dark, and which he had intended to have passed that evening, he thought it more

prudent

which haped nd the rder to

4

11

i

11-

X-

of

ter

er,

oes

the

ral

ans

was

arn,

of

inen

nan,

thout

rocks and the main, the ship had only from ten

tohora, where he was certain that there was no danger. It was happy for himself and for all our voyagers that he formed this resolution. In the morning they discovered, a head of them, several rocks, some of which were level with the surface of the water, and some below it; and the striking against which could not in the hour of darkness have been avoided. In passing between these

to feven fathom water *.

While Mr. Cook was near an island which he called the MAYOR, the inhabitants of the neighbouring coast displayed many instances of hostility, and, in their traffic with our navigators, committed various acts of fraud and robbery. As the Lieutenant intended to continue in the place five or fix days, in order to make an observation of the transit of Mercury, it was absolutely necesfary, for the prevention of future mischief, to convince these people that the English were not to be ill-treated with impunity. Accordingly, fome fmall shot were fired at a thief of uncommon infolence, and a musquet-ball was discharged through the bottom of his boat. Upon this it was paddled to about a hundred yards distance; and, to the furprize of Mr. Cook and his friends. the Indians in the other canoes took not the least notice of their wounded companion, though he bled very much, but returned to the ship, and continued to trade with the most perfect indifference and unconcern. For a confiderable time they dealt fairly. At last, however, one of them thought fit to move off with two different pieces of cloth which had been given for the same weapon. When he had gotten to such a

[#] Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 360-363.

9 Nov.

distance that he thought himself secure of his CHAP. prizes, a musquet was fired after him, which fortunately struck the boat just at the water's edge, and made two holes in her fide. This excited fuch an alarm, that not only the people who were shot at, but all the rest of the canoes, made off with the utmost expedition. As the last proof of fuperiority, our Commander ordered a round shot to be fired over them, and not a boat stopped till they got to land.

After an early breakfast on the ninth of November, Lieutenant Cook went on shore, with Mr. Green, and proper instruments, to observe the transit of Mercury. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander were of the party. The weather had for some time been very thick, with much rain; but this day proved so favourable, that not a cloud intervened during the whole transit. The observation of the ingress was made by Mr. Green alone, Mr. Cook being employed in taking the fun's altitude to ascertain the time *.

While the gentlemen were thus engaged on shore, they were alarmed by the firing of a great gun from the ship; and on their return received the following account of the transaction from Mr. Gore, the fecond Lieutenant, who had been

On the preceding day, the Lieutenant had observed the fun's meridional zenith distance by an astronomical quadrant, which gave the latitude 360 47' 43" within the fouth entrance of Mercury Bay.

left

^{*} The transit came on at 7h. 20' 58" apparent time. According to Mr. Green's observation, the internal contact was at 12h. 8 to Mr. Green's observation, the internal contact was at 12h. 8' 58", the external at 12h. 9' 55" P. M. According to Mr. Cook's, the internal contact was at 12h. 8' 54', and the external 12h. 9' 48". The latitude of the place of observation was 36° 48 5h". The latitude observed at noon was 36° 48' 28". The mean of this and of an observation made the day before gave 36° 48' 28" fouth, the latitude of the place of observation. The variation of the compass was 110 g' eaft.

CHAP. left commanding officer on board. During the carrying on of a trade with fome fmall canoes, two very large ones came up, full of men. In 1769. one of the canoes were forty-feven persons, all of whom were armed with pikes, stones, and darts, and assumed the appearance of a hostile intention. However, after a little time, they began to traffic, fome of them offering their arms, and one of them a square piece of cloth, which makes a part of their dress, called a Haahow. Mr. Gore having agreed for it, fent down the price, which was a piece of British cloth, and expected his purchase. But as foon as the Indian had gotten Mr. Gore's cloth in his possession, he refused to part with his own, and put off his canoe. Upon being threatened for his fraud, he and his companions began to fing their war fong in defiance, and shook their paddles. Though their infolence did not proceed to an attack, and only defied Mr. Gore to take any remedy in his power, he was fo provoked, that he levelled a musquet loaded with ball at the offender, while he was holding the cloth in his hand, and shot him dead. When the Indian fell, all the canoes put off to some distance, but continued to keep together in fuch a manner that it was apprehended they might still meditate an attack. To fecure, therefore, a safe passage for the boat of the Endeavour, which was wanted on shore, a round shot was fired with fo much effect over their heads, as to make them all fly with the utmost precipitation. It was matter of regret to Lieuten-

ant Cook that Mr. Gore had not, in the case of the offending Indian, tried the experiment of a few small shot, which had been successful in for-

mer instances of robbery.

On Friday, the tenth, our Commander, accom- CHAP. panied by Mr. Banks and the other gentlemen, went with two boats, to examine a large river that empties itself into the head of Mercury Bay. 10 Nov. As the fituation they were now in abounded with conveniences, the Lieutenant has taken care to point them out for the benefit of future navigators. If any occasion should ever render it neceffary for a ship either to winter here, or to stav for a confiderable length of time, tents might be built on a high point or peninfula in this place, upon ground fufficiently spacious for the purpose; and they might eafily be made impregnable to the whole force of the country. Indeed, the most skilful engineer in Europe could not choose a fituation better adapted to enable a fmall number to defend themselves against a greater. Among other accommodations which the Endeavour's company met with in Mercury Bay, they derived an agreeable refreshment from some oyster beds, which they had fortunately discovered. The oysters, which were as good as ever came from Colchester, and about the same size, were so plentiful, that not the boat only, but the ship itself, might have been loaded in one tide *.

On Wednesday, the fifteenth, Lieutenant Cook failed out of MERCURY BAY. This name had been given to it on account of the observation which had there been made of the transit of that planet over the fun +. The river where oysters had been so plentifully found, he called OYSTER RIVER. There is another river, at the head of the bay, which is the best and safest place for a

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 378 † Mercury Bay lies in latitude 46° 47' south; and in the longitude of 1849 4' weft.

CHAP. ship that wants to stay any length of time. From the number of mangroves about it, the Lieutenant named it MANGROVE RIVER. In feveral parts of Mercury Bay, our voyagers faw, thrown upon the shore, great quantities of iron fand, which is brought down by every little rivulet of fresh water that finds its way from the country. This is a demonstration that there is ore of that metal not far inland; and yet none of the inhabitants of New Zealand who had yet been feen knew the use of iron, or fet upon it the least degree of value. They had all of them preferred the most worthless and useless trifle, not only to a nail, but to any tool of that metal. Before the Endeavour left the bay, the ship's name and that of the Commander were cut upon one of the trees near the watering place, together with the date of the year and month when our navigators were there. Besides this, Mr. Cook, after displaying the English colours, took formal possession of the place in the name of his Britannic Majesty, King George the Third *

18 Nov.

In the range from Mercury Bay, feveral canoes, on the eighteenth, put off from different places, and advanced towards the Endeavour. When two of them, in which there might be about fixty men, came within the reach of the human voice, the Indians fung their war fong; but feeing that little notice was taken of them, they threw a few stones at the English, and then rowed off towards the shore. In a short time, however, they returned, as if with a fixed resolution to provoke our voyagers to a battle, animating themselves by their fong as they had done before. Tupia, without any directions from the gentlemen of the Endeayour, began to expostulate with the natives, and

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 386.

told them that our people had weapons which could C H A Pr destroy them in a moment. Their answer to this 11. expostulation was, in their own language, "come " on shore, and we will kill you all." " Well, " replied Tupia, but why should you molest us " while we are at fea? As we do not wish to " fight, we shall not accept your challenge to come " on shore; and here there is no pretence for a " quarrel, the fea being no more your property "than the ship." This eloquence, which greatly furprized Lieutenant Gook and his friends, as they had not fuggested to Tupia any of the arguments he made use of, produced no effect upon the minds of the Indians, who foon renewed their attack. The oratory of a mulquet, which was fired through one of their boats, quelled their courage, and fent them instantly away-

While our Commander was in the Bay of Islands, he had a favourable opportunity of examining the interior part of the country and its produce. At day break, therefore, on the twentieth of the 20 Nov. month, he fet out in the pinnace and long-boat, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Tupia, and found the inlet at which they entered end in a river, about nine miles above the ship. Up this river, to which was given the name of the Thames, they proceeded till near noon, when they were fourteen miles within its entrance. As the gentlemen then found the face of the country to continue nearly the same, without any alteration in the course of the stream, and had no hope of tracing it to its fource, they landed on the west side, to take a view of the lofty trees which every where adorned its banks. The trees were of a kind which they had feen before, both in Poverty Bay and Hawke's Bay, though only at a distance, They had not walked a hundred yards into

CHAP, into the woods, when they met with one of the trees, which, at the height of fix feet above the ground, was nineteen feet eight inches in the girt. Lieutenant Cook, having a quadrant with him, measured its height from the root to the first branch, and found it to be eighty-nine feet. It was as strait as an arrow, and tapered but very little in proportion to its height; fo that, in the Lieutenant's judgment, there must have been three bundred and fifty-fix feet of folid timber in it, exclufive of the branches. As the party advanced, they faw many other trees, which were still larger. A young one they cut down, the wood of which was heavy and folid, not fit for masts, but such as would make the finest plank in the world. The carpenter of the ship, who was with the party, faid that the timber refembled that of the pitchpine, which is lightened by tapping. If it should appear that some such method would be successful in lightening these trees, they would then furnish masts superior to those of any country in Europe. As the wood was fwampy, the gentlemen could not range far; but they found many flout trees of other kinds, with which they were totally unacquainted, and specimens of which they brought away.

22 Nov.

On the twenty-second, another instance occurred, in which the commanding officer left on board did not know how to exercise his power with the good fense and moderation of Mr. Cook. While some of the natives were in the ship below with Mr. Banks, a young man who was upon the deck stole a half-minute glass, and was detected just as he was carrying it off. Mr. Hicks, in his indignation against the offender, was pleased to order that he should be punished, by giving him twelve lashes with a cat-o'nine tails. When the other

other Indians who were on board faw him CHAP. feized for this purpose, they attempted to refute him; and being resisted, they called for their arms, which were handed from the canoes. At the fame time, the people of one of the canoes attempted to come up the fide of the Fndeavour. The tumust having called up Mr. Banks and Tupia, the natives ran to the latter, and folicited his interpolition. All, however, which he could do, as Mr. Hicks continued inexorable, was to affure them that nothing was intended against the life of their companion, and it was necessary that he should suffer some punishment for his offence. With this explanation they appeared to be fatisfied; and when the punishment had been inflicted, an old man among the spectators, who was supposed to be the criminal's father, gave him a severe beating, and fent him down into his canoe. Notwithstanding this, the Indians were far from being reconciled to the treatment which their countryman had received. Their chearful confidence was gone; and though they promised, at their departure, to return with some fish, the English saw them no more *.

On the twenty-ninth of November, Lieutenant Cook, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and others with them, were in a fituation fomewhat critical and alarming. Having landed upon an island in the neighbourhood of Cape Bret, they were in a few minutes furrounded by two or three hundred people. Though the Indians were all armed, they came on in so confused and straggling a manner, that it did not appear that any injury was intended by them; and the English gentlemen were determined that hostilities should not

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 393.

CHAP. begin on their part. At first the natives continued quiet; but their weapons were held ready to strike, and they seemed to be rather irresolute than peaceable. While the Lieutenant and his friends. remained in this state of suspence, another party of Indians came up; and the boldness of the whole body being increased by the augmentation of their numbers, they began the dance and long, which are their preludes to a battle. An attempt that was made by a number of them, to feize the two boats which had brought our voyagers to land, appeared to be the fignal for a general attack. It now became necessary for Mr. Cook to exert himself with vigour. Accordingly, he discharged his musquet, which was loaded with fmall shot, at one of the forwardest of the affailants, and Mr. Banks and two of our men fired. immediately afterwards. Though this made the natives fall back in some confusion, nevertheless, one of the chiefs, who was at the distance of about twenty yards, had the courage to rally them, and, calling loudly to his companions, led them on to the charge. Dr. Solander instantly discharged his piece at this champion, who, upon feeling the shot, stopped short, and then ran away with the rest of his countrymen. Still, however, they did not disperse, but got upon rising ground, and seemed only to want some leader of resolution to renew the affault. As they were now gotten beyond the reach of small shot, the English fired with ball, none of which taking place, the Indians continued together in a body. While our people were in this doubtful fituation, which lasted about a quarter of an hour, the ship, from which a much greater number of natives were feen than could be discovered on shore, brought her broadfide to bear, and entirely dispersed them,

by firing a few shot over their heads. In this CHAP. skirmish, only two of them were hurt with the fmall thot, and not a fingle life was loft; a cafe which would not have happened if Lieutenant Cook had not restrained his men, who, either from fear or the love of mischief, shewed as much impatience to destroy the Indians as a sportsman to kill his game. Such was the difference between the disposition of the common seamen and mariners, and that of their humane and judicious Commander *...

On the same day Mr. Cook displayed a very exemplary act of discipline. Some of the ship's people, who, when the natives were to be punished for a fraud, assumed the inexorable justice of a Lycurgus, thought fit to break into one of their plantations, and to dig up a quantity of potatoes. For this the Lieutenant ordered each of them to receive twelve lashes, after which two of them were discharged. But the third, in a fingular strain of morality, infifted upon it that it was no crime in an Englishman to plunder an Indian plantation. The method taken by our Commander to refute his casuistry. was to fend him back to his confinement, and not to permit him to be released till he had been punished with fix lashes more. In the w

The Endeavour, on the fifth of December, was in the most imminent hazard of being wrecked. At four o'clock in the morning of that day, our voyagers weighed, with a light breeze; but it being variable with frequent calms, they made little way. From that time till the afternoon, they kept turning out of the bay, and about ten at night were fuddenly becalmed, fo that the ship could neither wear nor exactly

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 403-406.

CHAP, keep her station. The tide or current setting firong, she drove toward land so fast, that before any measures could be taken for her security, the was within a cable's length of the breakers. Though our people had thirteen fathom water, the ground was so foul, that they did not dare to drop their anchor. In this crifis, the pinnace being immediately hoisted out to take the ship in tow, and the men, fenfible of their danger, exerting themselves to the utmost, a faint breeze fprang up off the land, and our navigators perceived with unspeakable joy that the vessel made headway. So near was the to the shore, that Tupia, who was ignorant of the hair's breadth escape the company had experienced, was at this very time converting with the Indians upon the beach, whose voices were distinctly heard, notwithstanding the roar of the breakers. Mr. Cook and his friends now thought that all danger was over; but about an hour afterwards, just as the man in the chains had cried "feventeen " fathom," the ship struck. The shock threw them into the utmost consternation; and almost instantly the man in the chain cried out " five f fathom." By this time, the rock on which the ship had struck being to the windward, she went off without having received the least damage; and the water very foon deepening to twenty fathom, the again failed in fecurity,

The inhabitants in the Bay of Islands were found to be far more numerous than in any other part of New Zealand which Lieutenant Cook had hitherto visited. It did not appear that they were united under one head; and, though their towns were fortified, they feemed to live together in perfect amity now redition bluce did an

The

Reco

The Endeavour, on the ninth of December, CHAP. lying becalmed in DOUBTLESS BAY, an opportunity was taken to enquire of the natives concerning their country; and our navigators learn- 9 Dec. ed from them, by the help of Tupia, that at the distance of three days rowing in their canoes, at a place called MOORE-WHENNUA, the land would take a short turn to the southward, and thence extend no more to the west. This place the English gentlemen concluded to be the land discovered by Tasman, and which had been named by him CAPE MARIA VAN DIEMEN. The Lieutenant, finding the inhabitants so intelligent, enquired farther, if they knew of any country besides their own. To this they answered, that they had never visited any other; but that their ancestors had told them that there was a country of great extent, to the north-west by north, or north north west, called ULIMAROA, to which some people had failed in a very large canoe; and that only a part of them had returned, who reported, that after a passage of a month, they had seen a country where the people eat hogs.

On the thirtieth of December, our navigators faw the land, which they judged to be Cape Maria van Diemen, and which corresponded with the account that had been given of it by the Indians. The next day, from the appearance of Mount Camel, they had a demonstration that, where they now were, the breadth of New Zealand could not be more than two or three miles from sea to sea. During this part of the navigation, two particulars occurred which are very remarkable. In the latitude 35° south, and in the midst of summer, Lieutenant Cook met with a gale of wind, which, from its strength and continuance, was such as he had scarcely ever been

had been all the an order

N. N.

When

II. leagues to the westward, and five weeks in getting ten leagues to the westward, and five weeks in getting fifty leagues; for at this time, being the first of Jan. January, 1770, it was so long since he had passed Cape Bret. While the gale lasted, our voyagers were happily at a considerable distance from the land; since otherwise it was highly probable that they would never have returned to relate their

adventures *.

The shore at Queen Charlotte's Sound, where the English had arrived on the fourteenth of January, feemed to form feveral bays, into one of which the Lieutenant proposed to carry the ship, which was now become very foul, in order to careen her, to repair some defects, and to obtain a recruit of wood and water. At day break the next morning, he stood in for an inlet, and at eight got within the entrance. At nine o'clock, there being little wind, and what there was being variable, the Endeavour was carried by the tide or current within two cables length of the north-west shore, where she had fifty-four fathom water. By the help of the boats she was gotten clear; and about two our people anchored in a very fafe and convenient cove. Soon after, Mr. Cook, with most of the gentlemen, landed upon the coast, where they found a fine stream of excellent water, and wood in the greatest plenty. Indeed the land, in this part of the country, was one forest, of vast extent. As the gentlemen had brought the feine with them, it was hauled once or twice; and with fuch fuccess, that different forts of fish were caught, amounting nearly to three hundred weight. The equal distribution of these among the thip's company, furnished them with a very agreeable refreshment.

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 420.

When Lieutenant Cook, Mr. Banks, Dr., So. CHAP. lander, Tupia, and some others, landed on the fixteenth, they met with an Indian family, among whom they found horrid and indisputable proofs 16 Jan. of the custom of eating human flesh. Not to refume so disagreeable a subject, it may here be obferved once for all, that evidences of the same custom appeared on various occasions.

On the next day a delightful object engaged the attention of our voyagers. The ship lying at the distance of somewhat less than a quarter of a mile from the shore, they were awakened by the singing of an incredible number of birds, who feemed to ftrain their throats in emulation of each other. This wild melody was infinitely fuperior to any they had ever heard of the same kind, and feemed to be like small cells, most exquisitely tuned. It is probable that the diftance, and the water between, might be of no fmall advantage to the found. Upon enquiry, the gentlemen were informed that the birds here always began to fing about two hours after midnight; and that, continuing their music till sunrife, they were filent the rest of the day. In this last respect, they resemble the nightingales of our own country in vain attemp

On the eighteenth, Lieutenant Cook went out in the pinnace to take a view of the bay in which the ship was now at anchor; and found it to be of great extent, confifting of numberless small harbours, and coves, in every direction. The Lieutenant confined his excursion to the western fide, and the coast where he landed being an impenetrable forest, nothing could be feen worthy of notice. As our Commander and his friends were returning, they faw a fingle man in a canoe fishing: rowing up to him, to their great surprize

CHAP. he took not the least notice of them; and even when they were alongside of him, continued to follow his occupation, without adverting to them any more than if they had been invisible. This behaviour was not, however, the result either of sullenness or stupidity; for upon being requested to draw up his net, that it might be examined, he readily complied. He shewed, likewise, to our people his mode of fishing, which was simple and ingenious.

When, on the nineteenth, the armourer's forge was fet up, and all hands on board were bufy in careening, and in other necessary operations about the vessel, some Indians, who had brought plenty of fish, exchanged them for nails, of which they had now begun to perceive the use and value. This may be considered as one instance in which they were enlightened and benefited by their in-

tercourfe with our navigators. " all bus .

While, on the twenty-fecond, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander employed themselves in botanizing near the beach, our Commander, taking a feaman with him, ascended one of the hills of the country. Upon reaching its fummit, he found the view of the inlet, the head of which he had a little before in vain attempted to discover in the pinnace, intercepted by hills still higher than that on which he stood, and which were rendered inaccessible by imperierrable woods. He was, however, amply rewarded for his labour; for he faw the fea on the eastern fide of the country, and a passage leading from it to that on the west, a little to the eastward of the entrance of the inlet where the ship lay. The main land, which was on the fouth-east fide of this inlet, appeared to be a narrow ridge of very high hills, and to form part of the fouth-west side of the streight. On the oppofite

92

19 Jan.

l e

n

h

e. h

-

d

2-

10

id

d

ne

at

n-

w-

W

a

tle

ere

he

ar-

of

ite

eye could reach; and to the fouth-east there was discerned an opening to the sea, which washed the eastern coast. The Lieutenant saw, also, on the east side of the inlet, some islands which he had before taken to be part of the main land. In returning to the ship, he examined the harbours and coves that lie behind the islands which he had seen from the hills. The next day was 23 Jan. employed by him in farther surveys and discoveries.

During a visit to the Indians, on the twentyfourth, Tupia being of the party, they were obferved to be continually talking of guns and shooting people, For this subject of their conversation, the English gentlemen could not at all account. But, after perplexing themselves with various conjectures, they at length learned, that, on the twenty-first, one of our officers, under the pretence of going out to fish, had rowed up to a hippah, or village, on the coast. When he had done fo, two or three canoes coming off towards his boat, his fears fuggested that an attack was intended, in consequence of which three musquets were fired, one with small shot, and two with ball, at the Indians, who retired with the utmost precipitation. It is highly probable that they had come out with friendly intentions; for fuch intentions were expressed by their behaviour, both before and afterwards. This action of the officer exhibited a fresh instance how little fome of the people under Lieutenant Cook had imbibed of the wife, discreet, and humane spirit of their Commander.

On the morning of the twenty-fixth, the Lieutenant went again out in the boat, with Mr. Banks and

26.

CHAP. and Dr. Solander, and entered one of the bays, which lie on the east fide of the inlet, in order to obtain another fight of the streight which passed between the eastern and western seas. Having landed, for this purpose, at a convenient place, they climbed a hill of very considerable height, from which they had a full view of the streight, with the land on the opposite shore, which they judged to be about four leagues distant. As it was hazy in the horizon, they could not fee far to the fouth-east; but Mr. Cook saw enough to determine him to fearch the paffage with the thip, as foon as he should put to sea. The gentlemen found, on the top of the hill, a parcel of loofe stones, with which they erected a pyramid, and left in it some musquet balls, small shot, beads, and fuch other things, which they happened to have about them, as were likely to stand the test of time. These, not being of Indian workmanship, would convince any European who should come to the place and pull it down, that natives of Europe had been there before. After this, the Lieutenant and his friends went to a town of which the Indians had informed them, and which, like one they had already feen, was built upon a fmall island or rock, fo difficult of access, that they gratified their curiofity at the risk of their lives. Here, as had been the case in former visits to the inhabitants of that part of the country near which the ship now lay, they were received with open arms, carried through the whole of the place, and shewn all that it contained. The town confifted of between eighty and a hundred houses, and had only one fighting-stage. Mr. Cook, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander, happened to have with them a few nails and ribbands, and fome paper, with which the people were fo highly

ly gratified, that when the gentlemen went away, CHAP. they filled the English boat with dried fish, of which it appeared that they had laid up large 1770.

quantities.

A report was spread that one of the men that had been fo rashly fired upon by the officer who had visited the hippah, under the pretence of fishing, was dead of his wounds. But, on the twen- 29 Jan. ty-ninth, the Lieutenant had the great confolation of discovering that this report was groundless. On the same day he went again on shore, upon the western point of the inlet, and, from a hill of confiderable height, had a view of the coast to the north-west. The farthest land he could fee in that quarter, was an island at the distance of about ten leagues, lying not far from the main. Between this island and the place where he stood, he discovered, close under the shore, several other islands, forming many bays, in which there appeared to be good anchorage for hipping. After he had fet off the different points for his furvey, he erected another pile of stones in which he left a piece of filver coin, with some musketballs and beads, and a fragment of an old pendant flying at the top.

On the thirteenth of January, the ceremony was performed of giving name to the inlet where our voyagers now lay, and of erecting a memorial of the vifit which they had made to this place. The carpenter having prepared two posts for the purpose, our Commander ordered them to be infcribed with the ship's name, and the dates of the year and the month. One of these he set up at the watering-place, hoisting the union-flag upon the top of it; and the other he carried over to the island that lies nearest the sea, and which is called by the natives MOTUARA. He went first, accompanied

CHAP. accompanied by Mr. Monkhouse and Tupia, to the neighbouring village or hippah, where he met with an old man, who had maintained a friendly intercourse with the English. To this old man, and feveral Indians befides, the Lieutenant, by means of Tupia, explained his defign, which he informed them was to erect a mark upon the island, in order to shew to any other ship which should happen to come thither, that our navigators had been there before. To this the inhabitants readily confented, and promifed that they would never pull it down. He then gave fomething to every one present, and to the old man a filver three-pence, and some spike-nails, with the king's broad arrow cut deep upon them. These were things which Mr. Cook thought were the most likely to be long preserved. After this he conveyed the post to the highest part of the island; and, having fixed it firmly in the ground, hoisted upon it the union-flag, and honoured the inlet with the name of QUEEN CHARLOTTE'S SOUND. At the same time, he took formal possession of this and the adjacent country, in the name and for the use of his Majesty King George the Third. The ceremony was concluded by the gentlemen's drinking a bottle of wine to her Majelty's health; and the bottle being given to the old man who had attended them up the hill, he was highly delighted with his prefent *.

A philosopher, perhaps, might enquire, on what ground Lieutenant Cook could take formal possession of this part of New Zealand, in the name and for the use of the king of Great Britain, when the country was already inhabited, and of courle belonged to those by whom it was occupied, and

accompanied

Hill 109/ . * Hawkefworth, ubi fopra, p. 445. Ve bous

whose ancestors might have resided in it for many CHAR preceding ages. To this the best answer seems to be, that the Lieutenant, in the ceremony performed by him, had no reference to the original inhabitants, or any intention to deprive them of their natural rights, but only to preclude the claims of future European navigators, who, under the auspices, and for the benefit of, their respective states or kingdoms, might form pretentions to which they were not entitled by prior difcoverv.

On the thirty-first, our voyagers having com- 31 Jan. pleted their wooding, and filled their water-cafks, Mr. Cook fent out two parties, one to cut and make brooms, and another to catch fish. In the evening there was a strong gale from the northwest, with such a heavy rain that the little wild muficians on shore suspended their song, which till now had been constantly heard during the night, with a pleasure that it was impossible to lose without regret. The gale, on the first of , Peb. February, encreased to a storm, with heavy gusts from the high land, one of which broke the hawfer that had been fastened to the shore, and induced the necessity of letting go another anchor. Though, towards midnight, the gale became more moderate, the rain continued with fo much violence that the brook which supplied the ship with water overflowed its banks; in confequence of which ten small casks, that had been filled the day before, were carried away, and, notwithstanding the most diligent fearch for them could not be recovered.

The Endeavour, on Monday the fifth, got under fail; but the wind foon failing, our Commander was obliged again to come to an anchor, a little above Motuara. As he was defirous of making still farther enquiries whether any me-

CHAP. mory of Tasman had been preserved in New Zealand, he directed Tupia to ask of the old man before mentioned, who had come on board to take his leave of the English gentlemen, whether he had ever heard that fuch a veffel as theirs had before visited the country. To this he replied in the negative; but faid that his ancestors had told him that there once had arrived a small vessel from a distant land, called ULIMAROA, in which were four men, who upon their reaching the shore were all killed. On being asked where this country lay, he pointed to the northward. Of Ulimaroa Lieutenant Cook had heard fomething before, from the people about the Bay of Islands, who faid that it had been visited by their ancestors. Tupia had also some confused traditionary notions concerning it; but no certain conclusion could be drawn either from his account or that of the old Indian. I what has nood ben won

Soon after the ship came to anchor the fecond time, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, who had gone on shore to see if any gleanings of natural knowledge remained, fell in, by accident, with the most agreeable Indian family they had yet feen, and which afforded them a better opportunity of remarking the personal subordination among the natives than had before offered. The whole behaviour of this family was affable, obliging, and unsuspicious. It was matter of sincere regret to the two gentlemen that they had not fooner met with these people, as a better acquaintance with the manners and disposition of the inhabitants of the country might hence have been obtained in a day, than had been acquired during the whole stay of the English upon the coast.

When, on the fixth of February, Lieutenant Cook had gotten out of the found, he stood over to why serving a reduct in a whithe

r

1770.

the eastward, in order to get the streight well CHAP. open before the tide of ebb approached. At feven in the evening, two small islands which lie off Cape Koamaroo, at the fouth-east head of Queen Charlotte's Sound, bore east, at the distance of about four miles. It was nearly calm, and the tide of ebb fetting out, the Endeavour, in a very short time, was carried by the rapidity of the ftream close upon one of the islands, which was a rock rising almost perpendicularly out of the fea. The danger encreased every moment, and there was but one expedient to prevent the ship's being dashed to pieces, the success of which a few moments would determine. She was now within fittle more than a cable's length of the rock, and had above seventy-five fathom water. But, upon dropping an anchor, and veering about one hundred and fifty fathom of cable, she was happily brought up. This, however, would not have faved our navigators, if the tide, which fet fouth by east, had not, upon meeting with the island, changed its direction to fouth-east, and carried them beyond the first point. In this situation they were not above two cables' length from the rocks; and here they remained in the strength of the tide, which fet to the fouth-east after the rate of at least five miles an hour, from a little after feven till midnight, when the tide abated, and the vessel began to heave. By three in the morning, a light breeze at north-west having sprung up, our voyagers failed for the eastern shore; though they made but little way, in confequence of the tide being against them. The wind, however, having afterwards freshened, and come to north and north-east, with this, and the tide of ebb, they were in a short time hurried through the narrowest part of the streight, and then

CHAP, then stood away for the southernmost land they had in prospect. There appeared over this land a mountain of stupendous height, which was covered with snow. The narrowest part of the streight, through which the Endeavour had been

streight, through which the Endeavour had been driven with such rapidity, lies between Cape Tierawitte, on the coast of Eaheinomauwe, and Cape Koamaroo; the distance between which our Commander judged to be four or five leagues. Notwithstanding the difficulties arising from this

tide, now its strength is known, the streight may be passed without danger.

Some of the officers started a notion that Eaheinomauwe was not an island, and that the land might stretch away to the south-east, from between Cape Turnagain and Cape Pallifer, there being a space of between twelve and fifteen leagues which had not yet been feen. Though Lieutenant Cook, from what he had observed the first time he discovered the streight, and from many other concurrent circumstances, had the strongest conviction that they were mistaken, he, nevertheless, resolved to leave no possibility of doubt with respect to an object of so much importance. For this purpose he gave such a direction to the navigation of the ship as would most effectually tend to determine the matter. After a course of two days, he called the officers upon deck, and asked them, whether they were not now fatisfied that Eaheinomauwe was an To this question they readily answered in the affirmative; and all doubts being removed. the Lieutenant proceeded to farther researches *.

During Mr. Cook's long and minute examination of the coast of New Zealand he gave

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 455.

names to the bays, capes, promontories, islands, CHAP. and rivers, and other places which were feen or visited by him; excepting in those cases where their original appellations were learned from the natives. The names he fixed upon were either derived from certain characteristic of adventitious circumstances, or were conferred in honour of his friends and acquaintance, chiefly those of the naval line. Such of the readers of the present work as defire to be particularly informed concerning them, will naturally have recourse to the history of the voyage at large, or, at least, to the indications of them in the feveral maps on which they are described.

The ascertaining of New Zealand to be an island did not conclude Lieutenant Cook's examination of the nature, fituation, and extent of the country. After this, he completed his circumnavigation, by ranging from Cape Turnagain fouthward along the eastern coast of Poenammoo, round Cape South, and back to the western entrance of the streight he had passed, and which was very properly named Cook's Streight. This range, which commenced on the ninth of February, I shall not minutely and regularly pursue; but content myfelf, as in the former course, with mentioning fuch circumstances as are more directly adapted to my immediate defign.

In the afternoon of the fourteenth, when Mr. Banks was out in the boat a-shooting, our voyagers faw, with their glaffes, four double canoes put off from the fhore towards him, having on board fifty-feven men. The Lieutenant, being alarmed for the lafety of his friend, immediately ordered fignals to be made for his return; but he was prevented from feeing them by the fituation of the fun with regard to the ship. However, it

was

CHAP. was foon with pleasure observed that his boat was in motion; and he was taken on board before the Indians, who perhaps had not discerned him, came 1770. up. Their attention seemed to be wholly fixed upon the ship. They came within about a stone's cast of her, and then stopped, gazing at the English with a look of vacant astonishment. Tupia in vain exerted his eloquence to prevail upon them to make a nearer approach. After furveying our navigators some time, they left them, and made towards the shore. The gentlemen could not help remarking, on this occasion, the different dispositions and behaviour of the different inhabitants of the country, at the first fight of the Endeavour, The people now feen kept aloof with a mixture of timidity and wonder; others had immediately commenced hostilities; the man who was found fishing alone in his canoe appeared to regard our voyagers as totally unworthy of notice; and some had come on board almost without invitation, and with an air of perfect confidence and good-will, From the conduct of the last visiters, Lieutenant Cook gave the land from which they had put off,

> When an island, which lies about five leagues from the coast of Tovy-Poenammoo, and which was named Banks's Island, was first discovered in the direction of fouth by west, some persons on board were of opinion that they faw land bearing fouth-fouth-east, and fouth-east by east. Our Commander, who was himself upon the deck at the time, told them, that in his judgment it was no more than a cloud, which as the fun rose would diffipate and vanish. Being however determined to leave no subject for disputation which experiment could remove, he ordered the ship to steer in the

> and which had the appearance of an island, the

name of LOOKERS-ON.

direction

direction which the supposed country was faid to CHAP. bear. Having gone in this direction eight and twenty miles, without discovering any figns of land, the Endeavour refumed her intended course to the fouthward, it being the particular view of the Lieutenant to afcertain whether Poenammoo was an island or a continent *.

In passing some rocks on the ninth of March, in 9 March. the night, it appeared in the morning that the thip had been in the most imminent danger. Her escape was indeed critical in the highest degree. To these rocks, therefore, which, from their situation, are fo well adapted to catch unwary strangers, Mr. Cook gave the name of the TRAPS. On the same day he reached a point of land which he called the South Cape, and which he supposed, as proved in fact to be the case, the southern extremity of the country +. iore's Sound bitaria

In failing, on Wednesday the fourteenth, the Endeavour passed a small narrow opening in the land, where there feemed to be a very fafe and convenient harbour, formed by an island, which lay eastward in the middle of the opening. On the land behind the opening are mountains, the fummits of which were covered with fnow, that appeared to have recently fallen. Indeed our voyagers, for two days palt, had found the weather extremely cold. On each fide the entrance of the opening, the land rifes almost perpendicularly from the fea to a stupendous height. For this reason Lieutenant Cook did not choose to carry the ship into the harbour. He was sensible that no wind could blow there but right in or right out; terminal and a life of the stream temperature.

dentino)

^{*} Hawkesworth, vol. iii. p. 1-4.

⁺ South Cape lies in latitude 47° 19' fouth, and in longitude 1920 12' west.

CHAP, and he did not think it by any means advisable to put into a place whence he could not have gotten out but with a wind which experience had taught 1770 him did not blow more than one day in a month. Sagacious as this determination of our Commander was, it did not give universal satisfaction. He acted in it contrary to the opinion of fome persons on board, who expressed in strong terms their defire of coming to harbour; not fufficiently confidering, that present convenience ought not to be purchased at the expence of incurring great future

difadvantages *.

To thele rocks, dierefore, which 27 March. By the twenty-seventh of March, Mr. Cook had circumnavigated the whole country of Tovy-Poenammoo, and arrived within fight of the island formerly mentioned, which lies at the distance of nine leagues from the entrance of Queen Charlotte's Sound. Having at this time thirty tons of empty water-casks on board, it was necessary to fill them before he finally proceeded on his wayage. For this purpose he hauled round the island, and entered a bay, fituated between that and Queen Charlotte's Sound, and to which the name was given of ADMIRALTY BAYO and build boal and

The bufiness of wooding and watering having been completed on the thirtieth, and the ship being ready for the lea, the point now to be determined was, what route should be pursued in returning home that would be of most advantage to the public fervice. Upon this subject the Lieutenant thought proper to take the opinion of his officers. He had himself a strong defire to return by Cape Horn, because that would have enabled him to determine, whether there is or is not a fouthern

"Linwhelmers, yet this p. :

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 17-18.

to

-11

ht

h

21 e

28

e-ili

e

•

6

def

)

1770.

continent. But against this scheme it was a suffi- CHAP. cient objection, that our navigators must have kept in a high fouthern latitude, in the very depth of winter, and in a vessel which was not thought to be in a condition fit for the undertaking. The fame reason was urged, with still greater force, against their proceeding directly for the Cape of Good Hope, because no discovery of moment could be expected in that route. It was, therefore, refolved that they should return by the East Indies: and that with this view they should steer westward, till they should fall in with the east coast of New Holland, and then follow the direction of that coast to the northward, till they should arrive at its northern extremity. If that should be found impracticable, it was farther resolved that they should endeavour to fall in with the land, or islands, faid to have been discovered by Quiros *.

In the fix months which Lieutenant Cook had fpent in the examination of New Zealand, he made very large additions to the knowledge of geography and navigation. That country was first discovered in the year 1642, by Abel Jansen Tasman, a Dutch navigator. He traverfed the eastern coast from latitude 34° 43', and entered the streight now called Cook's Streight; but being attacked by the natives foon after he came to an anchor, in the place which he named Murderer's Bay, he never went on shore. Nevertheless, he assumed a kind of claim to the country, by calling it STAATEN LAND, or the Land of the States, in honour of the States-General. It is now usually distinguished in maps and charts by the name of NEW ZEALAND. The whole of the country, ex-

^{*} Hawkelworth, ubi fupra, p. 26.

CHAP. cepting that part of the coast which was seen by Tasman from on board his ship, continued from his time, to the voyage of the Endeavour, altogether unknown. By many persons it has been supposed to constitute a part of a southern continent; but it was now afcertained by Mr. Cook to confift of two large islands, divided from each other by a streight or passage, which is about four or five leagues broad. These islands are situated between the latitudes of 34° and 48° fouth, and between the longitudes of 181° and 194° west; a matter which Mr. Green determined with uncommon exactness, from innumerable observations of the fun and moon, and one of the transits of Mercury. The northermost of these islands is called by the natives Eaheinomauwe, and the fouthermost Tovy, or Tavai Poenammoo. It is not, however, certain, whether the whole fouthern

> Tovy Poenammoo is principally a mountainous, and to all appearance a barren country. The only inhabitants, and figns of inhabitants, that were discovered upon all the island, were the people whom our voyagers faw in Queen Charlotte's Sound, some that came off to them under the fnowy mountains, and feveral fires which were discerned to the west of Cape Saunders. Eaheinomauwe has a much better appearance. Though it is not only hilly but mountainous, even the hills and mountains are covered with wood, and every valley has a rivulet of water. The foil in these vallies, and in the plains, many of which are not overgrown with wood, is in general light, but fer-It was the opinion of Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, as well as of the other gentlemen on board, that all kinds of European grain, plants,

> island, or only part of it, is comprehended under

the latter name.

and fruit, would flourish here in the utmost luxu-CHAP.
riance. There is reason to conclude, from the
vegetables which our navigators found in Eaheinomauwe, that the winters are milder than those in
England; and the summer was experienced not to
be hotter, though it was more equally warm. If
this country, therefore, should be settled by people
from Europe, they might, with a little industry,
very soon be supplied, in great abundance, not
merely with the necessaries, but even with the
luxuries of life.

n

0

T

d

d

a

f-

d

t,

n

T

5,

e

ıt

e

T

e

)-

h

S

e

t

.

n

3,

In Eaheinomauwe there are no quadrupeds but dogs and rats. At least, no others were seen by our voyagers; and the rats are fo fcarce, that they wholly escaped the notice of many on board. Of birds the species are not numerous; and of these no one kind, excepting perhaps the gannet, is exactly the same with those of Europe. Infects are not in greater plenty than birds. The fea makes abundant recompense for this scarcity of animals upon the land. Every creek swarms with fish, which are not only wholesome, but equally delicious with those in our part of the world. The Endeavour feldom anchored in any station, or with a light gale passed any place, that did not afford enough, with hook and line, to ferve the whole ship's company. If the seine was made use of, it feldom failed of producing a still more ample fupply. The highest luxury of this kind, with which the English were gratified, was the lobster, or sea cray-fish. Among the vegetable productions of the country, the trees claim a principal place; there being forests of vast extent, full of the straitest, the cleanest, and the largest timber Mr. Cook and his friends had ever feen. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander were gratified by the novelty, if not by the variety, of the plants. Out of about H 2 four

CHAP. four hundred species, there were not many which had hitherto been described by botanists. is one plant that ferves the natives instead of hemp 1770. and flax, and which excels all that are applied to

the fame purposes in other countries.

If the fettling of New Zealand should ever be deemed an object deserving the attention of Great Britain, our Commander thought that the best place for establishing a colony would either be on the banks of the Thames, or in the territory adjoining the Bay of Islands. Each of these places possesses the advantage of an excellent harbour. By means of the river, fettlements might be extended, and a communication established with the inland parts of the country. Vessels might, likewife, be built of the fine timber which is every where to be met with, at very little trouble and

expence *.

But I am in danger of forgetting myfelf, and of running into a detail, which may be thought rather to exceed the intentions of the present narrative. It is difficult to restrain the pen, when fuch a variety of curious and entertaining matter lies before it; and I must entreat the indulgence of my readers while I mention two or three farther particulars. One circumstance peculiarly worthy of notice, is the perfect and uninterrupted health of the inhabitants of New Zealand. In all the vifits made to their towns, where old and young, men and women, crouded about our voyagers, they never observed a fingle person who appeared to have any bodily complaint; nor among the numbers that were feen naked, was once perceived the flightest eruption upon the skin, or the least mark which indicated that fuch an eruption had

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 38.

formerly existed. Another proof of the health of CHAPO these people is the facility with which the wounds they at any time receive are healed. In the man who had been shot with the musquet-ball through the fleshy part of his arm, the wound seemed to be fo well digested, and in so fair a way of being perfectly healed, that if Mr. Cook had not known that no application had been made to it, he declared that he should certainly have enquired, with a very interested curiosity, after the vulnerary herbs and furgical art of the country. An additional evidence of human nature's being untainted with disease in New Zealand, is the great number of old men with whom it abounds. Many of them, by the loss of their hair and teeth, appeared to be very ancient, and yet none of them were decrepid. Although they were not equal to the young in muscular strength, they did not come in the least behind them with regard to chearfulness and vivacity. Water, as far as our navigators could difcover, is the universal and only liquor of the New Zealanders # It is greatly to be wished, that their happiness in this respect may never be destroyed by fuch a connection with the European nations, as shall introduce that fondness for spirituous liquors which hath been fo fatal to the Indians of North terved the honour, as we that hereattestismA

d

.

n

T

r

y

ts

n

y

to

1-

d

ft

ad

ly

From the observations which Lieutenant Gook and his friends made on the people of New Zealand, and from the similitude which was differried between them and the inhabitants of the South Sea Islands, a strong proof arose that both of them had one common origin; and this proof was rendered indubitable by the conformity of their language. When Tupia addressed himself to the na-

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 56.

CHAP tives of Eaheinomauwe and Poenammoo, he was perfectly understood. Indeed, it did not appear that the language of Otaheite differed more from 1770. that of New Zealand, than the language of the two islands, into which it is divided, did from each other *.

> Hitherto the navigation of Lieutenant Cook had been unfavourable to the notion of a fouthern continent; having fwept away at least three-fourths of the politions upon which that notion had been founded. The track of the Endeavour had demonstrated that the land seen by Tasman. Juan Fernandes, Hermite, the commander of a Dutch fquadron, Quiros, and Roggewein, was not, as they had supposed, part of such a continent. It had also totally destroyed the theoretical arguments in favour of a fouthern continent, which had been drawn from the necessity of it to preserve an equilibrium between the two hemispheres. As. however, Mr. Cook's discoveries, so far as he had already proceeded, extended only to the northward of forty degrees, fouth latitude, he could not, therefore, give an opinion concerning what land might lie farther to the fouthward. This was a matter, therefore, which he earnestly wished to be examined +; and to him was, at length, referved the honour, as we shall hereafter see, of putting a final end to the question do all more

On Saturday the thirty-first of March, our 31 March. Commander failed from Cape Farewell in New Zealand 1 and purfued his voyage to the westward. New Holland, or as it is now called, New South 19 April. Wales, came in fight on the nineteenth of April;

28. and on the twenty-eighth of that month the

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 71. + Ibid p. 77. T Cape Farewell lies in latitude 40° 33' fouth, and longitude 186º west.

thin anchored in BOTANY BAY. On the preceding CHAP. day, in consequence of its falling calm when the vessel was not more than a mile and a half from the shore, and within some breakers, our navigators had been in a very disagreeable situation; but happily a light breeze had forung from the land.

and carried them out of danger.

In the afternoon the boats were manned; and Lieutenant Cook and his friends, having Tupia of their party, fet out from the Endeavour. They intended to land where they had feen fome Indians. and began to hope, that as these Indians had paid no regard to the ship when she came into the bay. they would be as inattentive to the advances of the English towards the shore. In this, however, the gentlemen were disappointed; for as soon as they approached the rocks, two of the men came down upon them to dispute their landing, and the rest ran away. These champions, who were armed with lances about ten feet long, called to our navigators in a very loud tone, and in a harsh dissonant language, of which even Tupia did not understand a fingle word. At the same time, they brandished their weapons, and seemed resolved to defend their coast to the utmost, though they were but two to forty. The Lieutenant, who could not but admire their courage, and who was unwilling that hostilities should commence with such inequality of force on their fide, ordered his boat to lie upon her oars. He and the other gentlemen then parlied with them by figns; and, to obtain their good-will, he threw them nails, beads, and feveral trifles besides, with which they appeared to be well pleased. After this our Commander endeavoured to make them understand that he wanted water, and attempted to convince them, by all the methods in his power, that he had no injurious defign

CHAP. fign against them. Being willing to interpret the waving of their hands as an invitation to proceed, the boat put in to the shore; but no sooner was this perceived, than it was opposed by the two Indians, one of whom feemed to be a youth about nineteen or twenty years old, and the other a man of middle age. The only resource now left for Mr. Cook was to fire a mulquet between them, which being done, the youngest of them dropped a bundle of lances on the rock, but recollecting himself in an instant, he snatched them up again in great hafte. A stone was then thrown at the English, upon which the Lieutenant ordered a mulquet to be fired with small-shot. This struck the eldest upon the legs, and he immediately ran to one of the houses, which was at about a hundred yards distance. Mr. Cook, who now hoped that the contest was over, instantly landed with his party; but they had scarcely quitted the boat when the Indian returned, having only left the rock to fetch a shield or target for his defence. As foon as he came up, he and his comrade threw each of them a lance in the midft of our people, but happily without hurting a fingle person. At the firing of a third mulquet, one of the two men darted another lance, and then both of them ran away. After this the gentlemen repaired to the huts, and threw into the house where the children were, some beads, ribbons, pieces of cloth, and other prefents. These they hoped would procure them the good will of the inhabitants. When, however, the Lieutenant and his companions returned the next day, they had the mortification of finding that the beads and ribbons which they had left the night before, had not been removed from sight attempted to convince them,

thods in his power, that its had no inimines de-

their places, and that not an Indian was to be CHAP. di ha ana vlasi n

Several of the natives of the country came in fight on the thirtieth, but they could not be en so April. gaged to begin an intercourse with our people. They approached within a certain distance of them, and after shouting several times went back into the woods. Having done this once more, Mr. Cook followed them himfelf, alone and unarmed, a confiderable way along the shore, but without

prevailing upon them to stop. +.

On the first of May, he resolved to make an 1 May. excursion into the country. Accordingly, our Commander, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and feven others, all of them properly accoutred for the expedition, fet out, and repaired first to the huts near the watering place, whither fome of the Indians continued every day to refort. Though the little presents which had been left there before had not yet been taken away, our gentlemen added others of still greater value, confishing of cloth, beads, combs, and looking glaffes. After this they went up into the country, the face of which is finely diverlified by wood and lawn. The foil they found to be either fwamp or light fand !

In cultivating the ground there would be no obstruction from the trees, which are tall, strait, and without underwood, and fland at a sufficient distance from each other. Between the trees, the land is abundantly covered with grafs. Our voy-

* Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 89. & feq.

† This day Mr. Green took the fun's meridian altitude a little within the fourth entrance of the bay, which gave the latitude 34º fouth.

In a part of the country that was afterwards examined, the foil was found to be much richer; being a deep black mold, which the Lieutenant thought very fit for the production of grain of any kind.

61236

CHAP, agers faw many houses of the inhabitants, but met with only one of the people, who ran away as foon as he discovered the English. At every place where they went they left presents, hoping that at length they might procure the confidence and good will of the Indians. They perceived some traces of animals; and the trees over their heads abounded with birds of various kinds, among which were many of exquisite beauty. Loriquets and cockatoos, in particular, were fo numerous, that they

flew in flocks of feveral fcores together.

While the Lieutenant and his friends were upon this excursion, Mr. Gore, who had been fent out in the morning to dredge for oysters, having performed that fervice, dismissed his boat, and taking a midshipman with him, set out to join the waterers by land. In his way he fell in with a body of two and twenty Indians, who followed him, and were often at no greater distance than that of twenty yards. When he perceived them fo near, he stopped, and faced about, upon which they likewise stopped; and when he went on again, they continued their pursuit. But though they were all armed with lances, they did not attack Mr. Gore; so that he and the midshipman got in fafety to the watering-place. When the natives came in fight of the main body of the English. they halted at about the distance of a quarter of a mile, and stood still. By this Mr. Monkhouse and two or three of the waterers were encouraged to march up to them; but feeing the Indians keep their ground, they were seized with a sudden fear, which is not uncommon to the rash and fool-hardy, and made a hasty retreat. This step increased the danger which it was intended to avoid. Four of the Indians immediately ran forward, and difcharged

charged their lances at the fugitives, with fuch CHAP. force that they went beyond them. Our people, recovering their spirits, stopped to collect the lances, upon which the natives, in their turn, began to retire. At this time Mr. Cook came up, with Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Tupia; and being defirous of convincing the Indians that they were neither afraid of them, nor defigned to do them any injury, they advanced towards them, endeavouring, by figns of exposulation and entreaty, to engage them to an intercourse, but without effect, nint a thin baffer from with a thin baffer funding

From the boldness which the natives discovered on the first landing of our voyagers, and the tenror that afterwards feized them at the fight of the English, it appears that they were sufficiently intimidated by our fire-arms. There was not, indeed, the least reason to believe that any of them had been much hurt by the fmall fhot which had been fired at them when they attacked our people on their coming out of the boat. Nevertheless. they had probably feen, from their lurking places, the effects which the musquets had upon birds. Tupia, who was become a good markiman, frequently strayed abroad to shoot parrots; and while he was thus employed, he onde met with nine Indians, who, as foon as they perceived that he faw them, rap from him, in great alarm and conwithin the entrance, for the convenience anoilul

While, on the third of May, Mr. Banks was 3 May. gathering plants near the watering-place, Lieutenant Cook went with Dr. Solander and Mr. Monkhouse to the head of the bay, for the purpose of examining that part of the country, and of making farther attempts to form some connections with the natives. In this excursion they acquired additional

YELV.

CHAP. additional knowledge concerning the nature of the II. foil, and its capacities for cultivation, but had no fuccess in their endeavours to engage the inhabitants in coming to a friendly intercourse. Several parties that were sent into the country, on the

parties that were fent into the country, on the May 4. next day, with the same view, were equally unfuccessful. In the afternoon our Commander himfelf, with a number of attendants, made an excursion to the north shore, which he found to be without wood, and to refemble, in some degree, our moors in England. The furface of the ground was, however, covered with a thin brush of plants, rifing to about the height of the knee. Near the coast the hills are low, but there are others behind them, which gradually afcend to a confiderable distance, and are intersected with marshes and morasses. Among the articles of fish which, at different times, were caught, were large stingrays. One of them, when his entrails were taken out, weighed three hundred and thirty-fix pounds.

It was upon account of the great quantity of plants which Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander collected in this place, that Lieutenant Cook was induced to give it the name of BOTANY BAY. It is fituated in the latitude of 34° fouth, and in the longitude of 208° 37 west; and affords a capacious, safe, and convenient shelter for shipping. The Endeayour anchored near the fouth thore, about a mile within the entrance, for the convenience of failing with a foutherly wind, and because the Lieutenant thought it the best situation for watering. But afterwards he found a very fine stream on the north shore, where was a fandy cove, in which a ship might lie almost land-locked, and procure wood and water in the greatest abundance. Though wood is every where plentiful, our Commander

faw

1

1770.

faw only two species of it that could be consider- CHAP. ed as timber. Not only the inhabitants who were first discovered, but all who afterwards came in fight, were entirely naked. Of their mode of life our voyagers could know but little, as not the least connection could be formed with them: but it did not appear that they were numerous, or that they lived in focieties. They feemed, like other animals, to be scattered about along the coast, and in the woods. Not a fingle article was touched by them of all that were left at their huts, or at the places which they frequented; fo little fense had they of those small conveniences and ornaments which are generally very alluring to the uncivilized tribes of the globe. During Mr. Cook's stay at this place, he caused the English colours to be displayed every day on shore, and took care that the ship's name, and the date of the year, should be inscribed upon one of the trees near the watering place *.

At day-break, on Sunday the fixth of May, our 6 May. navigators failed from Botany Bay; and as they proceeded on their voyage, the Lieutenant gave the names that are indicated upon the map to the bays, capes, points, and remarkable hills which fuccessively appeared in fight. On the fourteenth, as the Endeavour advanced to the northward, being then in latitude 30° 22' fouth, and longitude 206° 39' west, the land gradually increased in height, fo that it may be called a hilly country. Between this latitude and Botany Bay, it exhibits a pleafing variety of ridges, hills, valleys, and plains, all clothed with wood, of the same appearance with that which has been mentioned before. The land near the shore is in general low

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi supra, p. 107.

CHAP, and fandy, excepting the points, which are rocky. and over many of which are high hills, that, at their first rising out of the water, have the semblance of islands. On the next day the vessel being about a league from the shore, our voyagers discovered smoke in many places, and having recourse to their glasses, they saw about twenty of the natives, who had each of them a large bundle upon his back. The bundles our people conjectured to be palm leaves for covering the houses of the Indians, and continued to observe them above an hour, during which they walked upon the beach, and up a path that led over a hill of gentle afcent. It was remarkable, that not one of them was feen to stop and look towards the Endeavour. They marched along without the least apparent emotion either of curiosity or surprize, though it was impossible that they should not have discerned the ship by some casual glance as they went along the shore, and though she must have been the most stupendous and unaccountable object they had ever beheld *.

17 May.

While, on the feventeenth, our navigators were in a bay, to which Lieutenant Cook had given the name of Moreton's Bay t, and at a place where the land was not at that time visible, some on board, having observed that the sea looked paler than usual, were of opinion that the bottom of the bay opened into a river. The Lieutenant was fensible that there was no real ground for this fupposition. As the Endeavour had here thirty-four fathom water, and a fine fandy bottom, these circumstances alone were sufficient to pro-

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 113. + The latitude of Morton's Bay is 260 56' fouth, and its longitude 2050 28' weit.

y.

at

n-

e-TS:

9-

of le

C-.

n

n

of

e

e'

e -

d

e

e-

.

e

n.

e

e d

a t 1770.

duce the change which had been noticed in the CHAP. colour of the sea. Nor was it by any means ne-, cessary to suppose a river, in order to account for the land at the bottom of the bay not being visible. If the land there was as low as it had been experienced to be in a hundred other parts of the coast, it would be impossible to see it from the station of the ship. Our Commander would, however, have brought the matter to the test of experiment, if the wind had been favourable to fuch a purpose. Should any future navigator be disposed to determine the question, whether there is or is not a river in this place, Mr. Cook has taken care to leave the best directions for finding its fituation.

On the twenty-fecond, as our voyagers were 22 May. pursuing their course from HARVEY'S BAY, they discovered with their glasses that the land was covered with palm-nut trees, which they had not feen from the time of their leaving the islands within the tropic. They faw also two men walking along the shore, who paid them as little attention as they had met with on former occasions. At eight o'clock in the evening of this day, the ship came to an anchor in five fathom, with a fine fandy bottom. Early in the morning of the next day, the Lieutenant, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, the other gentlemen, Tupia, and a party of men, went on shore, in order to examine the country. The wind blew fresh, and the weather was fo cold, that, being at a confiderable distance from land, they took their cloaks as a necessary equipment for the voyage. When they landed, they found a channel leading into a large lagoon. Both the channel and the lagoon were examined by our Commander with his usual

of which was shot that was equal in size to a turkey, weighing seventeen pounds and a half. All the gentlemen agreed that this was the best bird they had eaten since they lest England; and in honour of it they called the inlet Bustard Bay. Upon the mud banks, and under the mangroves, were innumerable oysters of various kinds, and among others the hammer oyster, with a large proportion of small pearl-oysters. If in deeper water there should be equal plenty of such oysters at their full growth, Mr. Cook was of opinion that a pearl sishery might be established

CHAP. accuracy. There is in the place a small river of fresh water, and room for a few ships to lie in great security. Near the lagoon grows the true mangrove, such as exists in the West India islands, and the first of the kind that had been yet met with by our navigators. Among the shoals and sand banks of the coast, they saw many large birds, and some in particular of the same kind which they had seen in Botany Bay. These they judged to be pelicans, but they were so shy as never to come within reach of a musquet. On the shore was found a species of the bustard, one

The people who were left on board the ship afferted, that, while the gentlemen were in the woods, about twenty of the natives came down to the beach, a-breast of the Endeavour, and after having looked at her for some time, went away. Not a single Indian was seen by the gentlemen themselves, though they found various proofs, in smoak, fires, and the fragments of recent meals,

+ Hawkelworth, ubi fupra, p. 124.

^{*} Buftard Bay lies in latitude 24° 4' fouth, and longitude 208° 18' west.

26.

that the country was inhabited. The place feem-CHAP. ed to be much trodden, and yet not a house, or the remains of a house, could be discerned. Hence the Lieutenant and his friends were difposed to believe that the people were destitute of dwellings, as well as of clothes; and that, like the other commoners of nature, they spent their nights in the open air. Tupia himself was struck with their apparently unhappy condition; and flaking his head, with an air of fuperiority and compassion, said that they were Taata Enos, " poor wretches " minused from a drive

On the twenty-fifth, our voyagers, at the dif- 25 May, tance of one mile from the land, were a-breast of a point, which Mr. Cook found to lie directly under the tropic of Capricorn; and for this reason he called it CAPE CAPRICORN +. In the night of the next day, when the ship had anchored at a place which was diffant four leagues from Cape Capricorn, the tide rose and fell near seven feet; and the flood fet to the westward, and the ebb to the eastward. This circumstance was just the reverse of what had been experienced when the Endeayour was at anchor to the eastward of Bustard Bay. Jim on

While our people were under fail, on the twenty-fixth, and were furrounded with islands, which lay at different distances from the main land, they suddenly fell into three fathom of water. Upon this the Lieutenant anchored, and fent away the mafter to found the channel which lay between the northermost island and the main. Though the channel appeared to have a confidera-

^{*} From measuring the perpendicular height of the last tide, and ascertaining the time of low-water this day, the Lieutenant found that it must be high-water, at the full and change of the moon, at eight o'clock.

† Its latitude is 208° 58' west.

CHAP, ble breadth, our Commander suspected it to be fhallow, and fuch was in fact the cafe. The malter reported, at his return, that he had only two fathom and a half in many places; and where the vessel lay at anchor she had only fixteen feet. which was not two feet more than she drew. Mr. Banks, who, while the mafter was founding the channel, tried to fish from the cabin window with hook and line, was fuccessful in catching two forts of crabs, both of them fuch as our navigators had not feen before. One of them was adorned with a most beautiful blue, in every refpect equal to the ultramarine. With this blue all his claws and joints were deeply tinged; while the under part of him was white, and so exquifitely polished, that in colour and brightness it bore an exact refemblance to the white of old china. The other crab was also marked, though fomewhat more sparingly, with the ultramarine on his joints and his toes; and on his back were three brown spots of a fingular appearance.

27 May.

Early the next morning, Lieutenant Cook, having found a passage between the islands, sailed to the northward, and on the evening of the fucceeding day anchored at about two miles distance from the main. At this time a great number of islands, lying a long way without the ship, were in fight. On the twenty-ninth, the Lieutenant fent away the master with two boats to found the entrance of an inlet which lay to the west, and into which he intended to go with the veffel, that he might wait a few days for the moon's encrease, and have an opportunity of examining the coun-As the tide was observed to ebb and flow confiderably, when the Endeavour had anchored within the inlet, our Commander judged it to be a river that might run pretty far up into land.

Thinking

i

p

tl

q

tl

.b

cl

gı

th

CO

ap

te

ac

TI

Thinking that this might afford a commodious CHAP. fituation for laying the ship ashore, and cleaning her bottom, he landed with the master, in search of a proper place for the purpole. He was accompanied in the excursion by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander; and they found walking exceedingly troublesome, in consequence of the ground's being covered with a kind of grass, the seeds of which were very fharp and bearded. Whenever these seeds stuck into their clothes, which happened at every ftep, they worked forward by means of the beard, till they got at the flesh. Another disagreeable circumstance was, that the gentlemen were incessantly tormented with the stings of a cloud of musquitos. They soon met with feveral places where the ship might conveniently be laid ashore; but were much disappointed in not being able to find any fresh water. In proceeding up the country, they found gum trees, the gum upon which existed only in very small quantities. Gum trees of a similar kind, and as little productive, had occurred in other parts of the Coast of New South Wales. Upon the branches of the trees were ants nefts, made of clay, as big as a bushel. The ants themselves, by which the nefts were inhabited, were fmall, and their bodies white. Upon another species of the gum tree; was found a small black ant, which perforated all the twigs, and, having worked out the pith, occupied the pipe in which it had been contained. Notwithstanding this, the parts in which these insects, to an amazing number, had formed a lodgment, bore leaves and flowers, and appeared to be entirely in a flourishing state. Butterflies were found in fuch multitudes that the account of them feems almost to be incredible. The air was fo crowded with them, for the space of I 2

e

V

d

h

P

0

b

effect;

in every direction; and the branches and twigs of the trees were at the same time covered with others that were not upon the wing. A small sish of a singular kind was likewise met with in this place. Its size was about that of a minnow, and it had two very strong breast-fins. It was found in places which were quite dry, and where it might be supposed that it had been left by the tide; and yet it did not appear to have become languid from that circumstance: for when it was

Though the cutiofity of Mr. Cook and his friends was gratified by the fight of these various objects, they were disappointed in the attainment of their main purpose, the discovery of fresh water and a fecond excursion which was made by them on the afternoon of the same day, was equally unfuccelsful This failure of the Lieute. nant's hopes determined him to make but a fhort flay in the place. Having, however, observed from an eminence that the inlet penetrated a confiderable way into the country, he formed a refolution of tracing it in the morning. Accordingly, at fun-wife, on Wednesday the thirtieth of May, he went on shore, and took a view of the coust and the islands that lie off it, with their beatings. For this purpose he had with him an azimuth compale; but he found that the needle differed very confiderably in its polition, even to thirty degrees; the variation being in fome places more, in others less. Once the needle varied from itself no less than two points in the distance of fourteen feet. Mr. Cook having taken up some of the loofe stones which lay upon the ground ap-

plied them to the needle, but they produced no

approached, it leaped away as nimbly as a freg. Indeed it did not feem to prefer water to land.

30 May.

een

rigs

vith

fish

this

and

ind

it

the

me

was

og.

IA

his

ous

ent

eth

ade

was

Hè-

ort

ed

on-

re-

rd.

of

he

at-

zi-

if-

to

ces

ed

ice

ne

P-

a;

effect : whence he concluded that in the hills there C.H.A.P. was iron ore, traces of which he had remarked both here and in the neighbouring parts. Afterhe had made his observations upon the hill, he proceeded with Dr Solander up the inlet. He fet out with the first of the flood, and had advanced above eight leagues long before it was high water. The breadth of the inlet thus far was from two to five miles, upon a direction fouth-west by fouth; but here it opened every way, and formed a large lake, which to the north-west communicated with the fea. Our Commander not only faw the fea in this direction, but found the tide of flood coming firongly in from that point. He observed, also, an arm of this lake extending to the eastward. Hence he thought it not improbable that it might communicate with the fea in the bottom of the bay, which lies to the weltward of the cape that on the chart is defignated by the name of CAPE TOWNSHEND. On the fouth fide of the lake is a ridge of hills which the Lieutenant was very defirous of climbing. As, however, it was highwater, and the day was far spent; and as the weather, in particular, was dark and rainy, he was afraid of being bewildered among the thouls in the night, and therefore was obliged to give up his inclination, and to make the best of his way to the ship. Two people only were seen by him, who followed the boat along the shore a good way at some distance; but he could not prudently wait for them, as the tide ran strongly in his favour. Several fires in one direction, and smoke in another, exhibited farther proofs of the country's being in a certain degree inhabited.

While

CHAP. 1770.

While Mr. Cook, with Dr. Solander, was tracing the inlet, Mr. Banks and a party with him engaged in a separate excursion, in which they had not proceeded far within land, before their course was obstructed by a swamp, covered with mangroves. This, however, they determined to pass; and having done it with great difficulty, they came up to a place where there had been four small fires, near to which lay some shells and bones of fish that had been roasted. Heaps of grass were also found lying together, on which four or five people appeared to have flept. Mr. Gorè, in another place, observed the track of a large animal. Some bustards were likewise seen, but not any other bird, excepting a few beautiful loriquets, of the fame kind with those which had been noticed in Botany Bay. The country in general, in this part of New South Wales, appeared fandy and barren, and destitute of the accommodations which could fit it for being possessed by settled inhabitants. From the ill fuccess that attended the searching for fresh water, Lieutenant Cook called the inlet in which the ship lay THIRSTY SOUND *. No refreshment of any other fort was here procured by our voyagers +. Our Commander, not having a fingle induce,

ment to stay longer in this place, weighed anchor 31 May. in the morning of the thirty-first, and put to sea. In the profecution of the voyage, when the Endeavour was close under CAPE UPSTART, the variation of the needle, at fun-fet, on the fourth of June, was 9° east, and at sun-rise the next day, it was no more than 5° 35'. Hence the Lieutenant concluded that it had been influenced by iron

4 June. 5.

^{*} Thirsty Sound lies in latitude 22° to' fouth, and longitude 2100 18' weft.

⁺ Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 137.

C.

n-

d

ſe

1.

;

10

s,

h

0

le

er

10

i,

10

y

f

,

d

3.

r

n

-

r

1770.

ore, or by some other magnetical matter contained C H A P. under the furface of the earth. In the afternoon of the feventh, our navigators faw upon one of the Islands what had the appearance of cocoa-nut trees; and as a few nuts would at this time have been very acceptable, Mr. Cook sent Lieutenant Hicks ashore, to see if he could procure any refreshment. He was accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander; and in the evening the gentlemen returned, with an account that what had been taken for cocoa-nut trees were a small kind of cabbage palm, and that, excepting about fourteen or fifteen plants, nothing could be obtained which was worth bringing away. On the eighth, when the Endeayour was in the midst of a cluster of small islands, our voyagers discerned, with their glasses, upon one of the nearest of these islands, about thirty of the natives, men, women, and children, all standing together, and looking with great attention at the ship. This was the first instance of curiosity that had been observed among the people of the country. The present Indian spectators were entirely naked. Their hair was short, and their complexion the fame with that of fuch of the inhabitants as had been feen before *.

In navigating the coast of New South Wales. where the fea in all parts conceals shoals which fuddenly project from the shore, and rocks that rife abruptly like a pyramid from the bottom, our Commander had hitherto conducted his vessel in fafety, for an extent of two and twenty degrees of latitude, being more than one thousand three hundred miles. But, on the tenth of June, as he was purfuing his course from a bay to which he had given the name of TRINITY BAY, the Endea-

Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 147.

CHAP. vour fell into a fituation as critical and dangerous as any that is recorded in the history of navigation; a history which abounds with perilous adventures, and almost miraculous escapes. Our voyagers were now near the latitude assigned to the islands that were discovered by Quiros, and which, without fufficient reason, some geographers have thought proper to join to this land. The ship had the advantage of a fine breeze, and a clear moonlight night; and in standing off from fix till near nine o'clock, she had deepened her water from fourteen to twenty-one fathom. But while our navigators were at supper it suddenly shoaled, and they fell into twelve, ten, and eight fathom, within the compais of a few minutes. Mr. Cook immediately ordered every man to his station, and all was ready to put about and come to an anchor, when deep water being met with again at the next cast of the lead, it was concluded that the vessel had gone over the tail of the shoals which had been feen at fun-fet, and that the danger was now over. This idea of fecurity was confirmed by the water's continuing to deepen to twenty and twenty-one fathom, fo that the gentlemen left the deck in great tranquillity, and went to bed. However, a little before eleven, the water shoaled at once from twenty to seventeen fathom, and before the lead could be cast again, the ship struck, and remained immoveable, excepting fo far as the was influenced by the heaving of the furge, that beat her against the crags of the rock upon which she lay. A few moments brought every perfon upon deck, with countenances suited to the horrors of the situation. As our people knew, from the breeze which they had in the evening, that they could not be very near the shore, there was too much reason to conclude

chude that they were upon a rock of coral, which, CHAP. on account of the sharpness of its points, and the roughness of its surface, is more fatal than any other. On examining the depth of water round the ship, it was speedily discovered that the misfortune of our voyagers was equal to their apprehensions. The vessel had been lifted over a ledge of the rock, and lay in a hollow within it, in some places of which hollow there were from three to four fathom, and in others not fo many feet of water. To complete the scene of distress, it appeared, from the light of the moon, that the fleathing boards from the bottom of the ship were floating away all round her, and at last her false keels fo that every moment was making way for the whole company's being swallowed up by the rashing in of the lead There was now no chance but to lighten her, and the opportunity had undappily been left of doing it to the best advantage ufor as the Endeavour had gone ashore just at highwater, and by this time it had confiderably fallen. the would, when lightened, be but in the faint fituation as at first. The only alleviation of this circumstance was, that as the tide ebbed, the vessel fettled to the rocks, and was not beaten against them with so much violence. Our people had, indeed, fome hope from the next tide, though it was doubtful whether the ship would hold together follong, especially as the rock kept grating part of her bottom with fuch force as to be heard in the fore store-room. No effort, however, was remitted from despair of success. That no time might be loft, the water was immediately started in the hold, and pumped up; fix guns, being all that were upon the deck, a quantity of iron and stone ballast, casks, hoop staves, oil jars, decayed stores,

CHAP, and a variety of things besides, were thrown overboard with the utmost expedition. Every one exerted himself, not only without murmuring and 1770. discontent, but even with an alacrity which almost approached to chearfulness. So sensible, at the same time, were the men of the awfulness of their fituation, that not an oath was heard among them, the detestable habit of profane swearing being instantly subdued by the dread of incurring guilt

when a speedy death was in view.

While Lieutenant Cook and all the people about him were thus employed, the opening of the morn-11 June, ing of the eleventh of June presented them with a fuller prospect of their danger. The land was feen by them at about eight leagues distance, without any island in the intermediate space, upon which, if the ship had gone to pieces, they might have been fet a-shore by the boats, and carried thence by different turns to the main. Gradually, however, the wind died away, and early in the forenoon it became a dead calm; a circumstance this, peculiarly happy in the order of Divine Providence; for if it had blown hard, the veffel must inevitably have been destroyed. High-water being expected at eleven in the morning, and every thing being made ready to heave her off if she should float; to the inexpressible surprize and concern of our navigators, fo much did the day-tide fall short of that of the night, that though they had lightened the ship nearly fifty ton, she did not float by a foot and a half. Hence it became neceffary to lighten her still more, and every thing was thrown overboard that could possibly be spared. Hitherto the Endeavour had not admitted much water; but as the tide fell, it rushed in so fast, that she could scarcely be kept free, though two pumps

pumps were incessantly worked. There were now CHAP. no hopes but from the tide at midnight; to prepare for taking the advantage of which the most vigorous efforts were exerted. About five o'clock in the afternoon the tide began to rife, but, at the fame time, the leak increased to a most alarming degree. Two more pumps, therefore, were manned, one of which unhappily would not work. Three pumps, however, were kept going, and at nine o'clock the ship righted. Nevertheless, the leake had gained fo confiderably upon her, that it was imagined that she must go to the bottom as foon as the ceased to be supported by the rock. It was, indeed, a dreadful circumstance to our Commander and his people, that they were obliged to anticipate the floating of the veffel not as an earnest of their deliverance, but as an event which probably would precipitate their destruction. They knew that their boats were not capable of carrying the whole of them on shore, and that when the dreadful crisis should arrive, all command and fubordination being at an end, a contest for preference might be expected, which would increase even the horrors of shipwreck, and turn their rage against each other. Some of them were sensible that if they should escape to the main land, they were likely to fuffer more upon the whole than those who would be left on board to perish in the waves. The latter would only be exposed to instant death; whereas the former, when they got on shore, would have no lasting or effectual defence against the natives, in a part of the country where even nets and fire-arms could scarcely furnish them with food. But supposing that they should find the means of subsistence; how horrible must be their state, to be condemned to languish out the remainder of their lives in a defolate wilderness. without

CHAP. without the possession or hope of domestic comfort; and to be cut off from all commerce with mankind, excepting that of the naked favages who prowl the defert, and who perhaps are some of the most rude and uncivilized inhabitants of the earth!

> The dreadful moment which was to determine the fate of our voyagers now drew on; and every one faw, in the countenances of his companions, the picture of his own fensations. Not, however, giving way to despair, the Lieutenant ordered the capstan and windlace to be manned with as many hands as could be spared from the pumps, and the ship having floated about twenty minutes after ten o'clock, the grand effort was made, and she was heaved into deep water. It was no small confolation to find that she did not now admit of more water than she had done when upon the rock. By the gaining, indeed, of the leak upon the pumps, three feet and nine inches of water were in the hold; notwithstanding which, the men did not relinquish their labour. Thus they held the water as it were at bay: but having endured excessive fatigue of body, and agitation of mind, for more than twenty-four hours, and all this being attended with little hope of final fuccess, they began, at length, to flag. None of them could work at the pump above five or fix minutes together, after which, being totally exhausted, they threw themselves down upon the deck, though a stream of water, between three or four inches deep, was running over it from the pumps. When those who fucceeded them had worked their time, and in their turn were exhaufted, they threw themselves down in the same manner, and the others started up again, to renew their labour. While thus they were employed in relieving each other,

an accident was very nearly putting an immediate GHAPJ end to all their efforts. The planking which lines, the ship's bottom is called the cieling, between which and the outfide planking there is a space of about eighteen incheston From this cieting only, the man who had hitherto attended the well had taken the depth of the water, and had given the measure accordingly. But, upon his being relieved, the person who came in his room reckoned the depth to the outside planking, which had the appearance of the leak schaving gained upon the pumps eighteen inches in a few minutes. The miltake, however, was foon detected and the accident, which in its commencement was very formidable to them, became, in fact, highly advantageous! Such was the joy which every man felt at finding his fituation better than his fears had fuggefted, that it operated with wonderful energy, and feemed to poffels him with a ftrong perfusition that fearebly any real danger remained. New confidence and new hope inspired fresh wigour; and the efforts of the men were exerted with fo much atacrity and fpirit, that before eight o'clock in the morning the pumps had glined confiderably upon the leak. balk the convertation now turned upon carrying the thip into fome harbour, as a thing not to be doubted, and as hands could be spared from the pumps, they were employed in getting up the anchors. It being found impossible to lave the line bower anchorque was cut away at a whole bable and the cable of the fream anchor was tofts among the rocks; but in the fituation of our people these were trilles which fearcely arracted their notice and The fore topmast and foreward were next erected, and there being a breeze from the leas the Endeavour, at eleven o'clock.

CHAP. o'clock, got once more under fail, and food for II. the land.

1770.

Notwithstanding these favourable circustances. our voyagers were still very far from being in a state of safety. It was not possible long to continue the labour by which the pumps had been made to gain upon the leak; and as the exact place of it could not be discovered, there was no hope of stopping it within. At this crisis, Mr. Monkhouse, one of the midshipmen, came to Lieutenant Cook, and proposed an expedient he had once feen used on board a merchant ship which had fprung a leak that admitted more than four feet water in an hour, and which by this means had been fafely brought from Virginia to London. To Mr. Monkhouse, therefore, the care of the expedient, which is called fothering the ship, was, with proper assistance, committed; and his method of proceeding was as follows. He took a lower studding fail, and having mixed together a large quantity of oakham and wool, he stitched it down, as lightly as possible, in handfuls upon the fail, and spread over it the dung of the sheep of the yessel, and other filth. The fail being thus prepared, it was hauled under the ship's bottom by ropes, which kept it extended. When it came under the leak, the fuction that carried in the water carried in with it the oakham and wool from the furface of the fail. In other parts the water was not fufficiently agitated to wash off the oakham and the wool. The fuccels of the expedient was answerable to the warmest expectations; for hereby the leak was fo far reduced, that, instead of gaining upon three pumps, it was eafily kept under with one. Here was fuch a new fourge of confidence and comfort, that o'clock.

that our people could scarcely have expressed more CHAP. joy if they had been already in port. It had lately been the utmost object of their hope, to run the ship ashore in some harbour, either of an island or the main, and to build a vessel out of her materials, to carry them to the East Indies. Nothing. however, was now thought of but to range along the coast in fearch of a convenient place to repair the damage the Endeavour had fustained, and then to profecute the voyage upon the same plan, as if no impediment had happened. In justice and gratitude to the ship's company, and the gentlemen on board. Mr. Cook has recorded, that although in the midst of their distress all of them seemed to have a just fense of their danger, no man gave way to passionate exclamations, or frantic geltures. Every one appeared to have the perfect " possession of his mind, and every one exerted st himself to the uttermost with a quiet and " patient perseverance, equally distant from the tumultuous violence of terror, and the gloomy inactivity of despair *." Though the Lieutenant hath laid nothing of himfelf, it is well known that his own compolure, fortitude, and activity were equal to the greatness of the occasion.

To complete the history of this wonderful prefervation it is necessary to bring forward a circumstance, which could not be discovered till the ship was laid down to be repaired. It was then found that one of her holes, which was large enough to have funk our navigators, if they had had eight pumps instead of four, and had been able to keep them inceffantly going, was in a great measure filled up by a fragment of the rock, upon which

and long rade same by west,

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 159.

CHAP, the Endeavour had ftruck. To this fingular event, therefore, it was owing, that the water did not pour in with a violence which must speedily have involved the Endeavour and all her company in the main, and to build by .. noiseughab distingni

Hitherto none of the names, by which our Commander had distinguished the several parts of the country feen by him, were memorials of diftrefs. But the anxiety and danger which he and his people had now experienced, induced him to call a point in fight, which lay to the northward, CAPE TRIBULATION trangeros s'girl set of shuti

14 June.

The next object after this event was to look out for a harbour, where the defects of the thip might be repaired, and the veffel put into proper order for future navigation, On the fourteenth, a fmall harbour was happily discovered, which was excellently adapted to the purpose. It was, indeed remarkable that during the whole saurie of the younge our people had feen no place which, in their present eircumstances, could have afforded them the same relief. They could not, however, immediately get into it and in the midst of all their joy for their unexpected de-liverance, they had not forgotten that there was nothing but a lock of wool between them and deion it is necessary to bring forward neithuis

At this time, the fcurvy, with many formidar ble symptoms, began to make its appearance among our navigators of Tupia, in particular, was fo grievoully affected with the disease, that all the remedies prescribed by the surgeon could not resand its progress. Mr. Green, the astronomer, was also upon the decline. These and other circumstances embittered the delay which prevented

Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 167. + Ibid. p. 150. Cape Tribulation lies in latitude 16° 6' south; and longitude 2140 39' west

our Commander and his companions from getting CHAP. on shore. In the morning of the seventeenth, though the wind was still fresh, the Lieutenant ventured to weigh, and to put in for the harbour, 17 June. the entrance into which was by a very narrow channel. In making the attempt the ship was twice run aground. At the first time she went off without any trouble, but the fecond time she stuck fast. Nevertheless, by proper exertions, in conjunction with the rifing of the tide, she floated about one o'clock in the afternoon, and was foon warped into the harbour. The fucceeding day was employed in erecting two tents, in landing the provisions and stores, and in making every preparation for repairing the damages which the Endeavour had fustained. In the mean while, Mr. Cook, who had ascended one of the highest hills that overlooked the harbour, was by no means entertained with a comfortable prospect; the low land near the river being wholly over run with mangroves, among which the falt-water flows at every tide, and the high land appearing to be altogether stoney and barren. Mr. Banks also took a walk up the country, and met with the frames of feveral old Indian houses, and places where the natives, though not recently, had dreffed shell-fish. The boat, which had this day been dispatched to haul the seine, with a view of procuring some fish for the refreshment of the fick, returned without fuccess. Tupia was more fortunate. Having employed himself in angling, and lived entirely upon what he caught, he recovered in a furprizing degree. Mr. Green, to the regret of his friends, exhibited no fymptoms of returning health.

On the nineteenth, Mr. Banks crossed the river to take a farther view of the country; which he found to consist principally of sand-hills. Some

Indian

CHAP Indian houses were seen by him, that appeared to have been very lately inhabited; and in his walk he met with large flocks of pigeons and crows. The pigeons were exceedingly beautiful. Of these he fhot feveral; but the crows which were exactly like those in England, were so shy that they never came within the reach of his gun.

22 June.

:3.

24.

It was not till the twenty-fecond that the tide forfar left the Endeavour, as to give our people an opportunity of examining her leak. In the place where it was found, the rocks had made their way through four planks, and even into the timbers. Three more planks were greatly damaged; and there was fomething very extraordinary in the appearances of the breaches and Not a fpling ter was to be feen, but all was smooth as if the whole had been out away by an inftrument. It was a peculiarly happy circumstance that the time bers were here very close, fince otherwise the ship could not possibly have been faved. Now also it was that the fragment of the rock was discovered. which, by flicking in the leak of the wessel, had been such a providential instrument of her prefertook a walk up the country, and met withorter

29 Oh the fame day, nome of the people who had been lent to shoot pigeons for the fick, and who had discovered many Indian houses, and a fine fiream of fresh water, reported at their return, that they had feen an animal as large as a greyhound, of a flender make, of a moufe colour, and extremely fwift. 1 As the Lieutenanti was walking, on the morning of the twenty-fourth, at a little distance from the ship, he had an opportumity of feeing an animal of the same kind. From the description he gave of it, and from an imperfeet view which occurred to Mr. Banks, the latter gentleman was of opinion that its species was hitherto unknown. to ydaginang figures or barrol HEIDIT The

The polition of the wessel, while she was refit- CHAP. ting for feat was very near depriving the world of. that botanical knowledge, which Mr. Banks had procured at the expende of for much labour, and fuchilvarious perils ... Fon the greater fecurity of the curious collection of plants which he had made during the whole youage, he had removed them into the bread toom. This room is in the after part of the ship, the head of which, for the purpose of repairing her, was laid much higher than the stein No lone having thought of the danger to which this circumstance might expose the plants, they were found to be under water. However, by the exercise of unremitting care and attention, the larger part of them were reftored facond attempt, which w.noitsvinsking the stafficant

On the twenty ninth of June, at two o'clock in 29 June. thermorning aMr. Cooks in conjunction with Mr. Green, observed an emersion of Jupiter's first fatellith. al-Ilhelotime here was 12 18 179 which gave the longitude of the place at 214040530 west bits latitude is 15°,26's fouth. In The next morning the Lieutenant fent fome of the young gentlemento take a plan of the harbour, whilst he himself ascended a hill, that he might gain a full prospect of the feat and it was a prospect which prefented him with a lively view of the difficulties of his fituation. To his great concern he faw innumerable fand banks and shoals, lying in every direction of the coaft. Some of them extended as far as he could differn with his glass, and many of them did but just rife above water. To the northward there was an appearance of a passage, and this was the only direction in which our Commander could hope to get clear, in the profecution of his voyage; for as the wind blew constantly from the fouth-east, to return by the fouthward

CHAP, fouthward would have been extremely difficult, if not absolutely impossible. On this, and the preceding day, our people had been very fuccessful in hauling the feine. The fupply of fish was fo great, that the Lieutenant was now able to diffribute two pounds and a half to each man. A quantity of greens having likewise been gathered, he ordered them to be boiled with the peas. Hence an excellent mess was produced, which, in conjunction with the fish, afforded an unspeakable refreshment to the whole of the ship's company .

2 July.

.

lamming.

Early in the morning of the second of July, Lieutenant Cook fent the master out of the harbour, in the pinnace, to found about the shoals. and to fearch for a channel to the northward. A fecond attempt, which was made this day to heave off the ship, was as unsuccessful as a former one had been. The next day the master returned, and reported that he had found a passage out to fea, between the shoals. On one of these shoals, which confifted of coral rocks, many of which were dry at low water, he had landed, and found there cockles of fo enormous a fize, that a fingle cockle was more than two men could eat. At the fame place, he met with a great variety of other shell-fish, and brought back with him a plentiful fupply for the use of his fellow voyagers. At highwater, this day, another effort was made to float the ship, which happily succeeded; but it being found that the had fprung a plank between decks, it became necessary to lay her ashore a second time. The Lieutenant being anxious to attain Bese was surrappearance

a perfect

On the first of July, the thermometer, in the shade, rose to 87°, which was higher than it had been on any day fince our navigators had come upon the coast of New South Wales.

a perfect knowledge of the state of the vessel, got CHAP. one of the carpenter's crew, a man in whom he, could confide, to dive, on the fifth, to her bottom, that he might examine the place where the s July. sheathing had been rubbed off. His report, which was, that three streaks of the sheathing, about eight feet long, were wanting, and that the main plank had been a little rubbed, was perfectly agreeable to the account that had been given before by the master and others, who had made the fame examination; and our Commander had the confolation of finding that, in the opinion of the carpenter, this matter would be of little consequence. The other damage, therefore, being repaired, the ship was again floated at high water. and all hands were employed in taking the stores on board, and in putting her into a condition for proceeding on her voyage *. To the harbour in which she was refitted for the sea, Mr. Cook gave the name of the ENDEAVOUR RIVER.

On the morning of the fixth, Mr. Banks, accompanied by Lieutenant Gore, and three men, fet out in a small boat up the river, with a view of spending a few days in examining the country. In this expedition nothing escaped his notice which related either to the natural history or the inhabitants of the places he visited. Though he met with undoubted proofs that several of the natives were at no great distance, none of them came within sight. Having sound, upon the whole, that the country did not promise much advantage from a farther search, he and his party reimbarked in their boat, and returned, on the eighth, to the ship. During their excursion, they had slept

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 175.

CHAP. upon the ground in perfect fecurity, and without once reflecting upon the danger they would have incurred, if in that fituation they had been dif-

covered by the Indians. was a light of facts (170)

Lieutenant Cook had not been fatisfied with the account which the mafter had given of his having traced a passage, between the shoals, into the sea. He fent him out, therefore, a fecond time, upon the same business; and, on his return, he made a different report. Having been seven leagues out to fea, the master was now of opinion that there was no fuch paffage as he had before imagined. His expedition, however, though in this respect unfuccessful, was not wholly without its advantage. On the very rock where he had feen the large cockles, he met with a great number of turtle; and though he had no better an instrument than a boat-hook, three of them were caught, which together weighed feven hundred and ninetyone pounds. An attempt, which, by order of the Lieutenant, was made the next morning to obtain some more turtle, failed through the misconduct of the same officer, who had been so fortunate on the preceding day.

Hitherto the natives of this part of the country had eagerly avoided holding any intercourse with our people: but at length their minds, through the good management of Mr. Cook, became more favourably disposed. Four of them having appeared, on the tenth, in a fmall canoe, and feeming to be bufily employed in striking fish, some of the ship's company were for going over to them in a boat. This, however, the Lieutenant would not permit, repeated experience having convinced him that it was more likely to prevent than to procure an interview. He determined to purfue a contrary method, and to try what could be

9 July.

done by letting them alone, and not appearing to CHAP! make them, in the least degree, the objects of his notice. So fuccessful was this plan, that, after fome preparatory intercourse, they came alongfide the fhip, without expressing any fear or distrust. The conference was carried on, by figns, with the utmost cordiality till dinner-time, when, being invited by our people to go with them and partake of their provision, they declined it, and went away in their canoe. One of these Indians was fomewhat above the middle age; the three others were young. Their stature was of the common fize, but their limbs were remarkably small. The colour of their skin was a dark chocolate. Their hair was black, but not woolly; and their features were far from being difagreeable. They had lively eyes, and their teeth were even and white. The tones of their voices were foft and mufical, and there was a flexibility in their organs of speech, which enabled them to repeat, with great facility, many of the words pronounced by the English word bellerb nache has

On the next morning, our voyagers had and 11 July, ther visit from four of the natives. Three of them were the fame who had appeared the day before, but the fourth was a stranger, to whom his companions gave the name of YAPARICO. He was distinguished by a very peculiar ornament. This was the bone of a bird, nearly as thick as a man's finger, and five or fix inches long, which he had thrust into a hole, made in the griffle that divides the nostrils. An instance of the like kind, and only one, had been feen in New Zealand. It was found, however, that among all these people the fame part of the note was perforated; that they had holes in their ears; and that they had bracelets, made of plaited hair, upon the upper bachmila

part

12 July.

14.

16.

CHAP. part of their arms. Thus the love of ornament takes place among them, though they are absorbed to the state of arms and the state of arms are stated as a state of arms.

1770. lutely destitute of apparel.

Three Indians, on the twelfth, ventured down to Tupia's tent, and were so well pleased with their reception, that one of them went with his canoe to setch two others, who had never been seen by the English. On his return, he introduced the strangers by name, a ceremony which was never omitted upon such occasions. From a farther acquaintance with the natives, it was found that the colour of their skins was not so dark as had at first been apprehended, and that all of them were remarkably clean limbed, and extremely active and nimble. Their language appeared to be more harsh than that of the islanders in the South sea.

On the fourteenth, Mr. Gore had the good fortune to kill one of the animals before mentioned, and which had been the subject of much speculation. It is called by the natives Kanguroo; and when dreffed proved most excellent meat. Indeed, our navigators might now be faid to fare fumptuously every day; for they had turtle in great plenty, and it was agreed that these were far superior to any which our people had ever tasted in England. This the gentlemen justly imputed to their being eaten fresh from the sea, before their natural fat had been wasted, or their juices changed, by the fituation and diet they are exposed to when kept in tubs. Most of the turtle here caught were of the kind called green turtle, and their weight was from two to three hundred pounds.

In the morning of the fixteenth, while the men were engaged in their usual employment of getting the ship ready for the sea, our Commander

climbed

climbed one of the heights on the north fide of CHAP. the river, and obtained from it an extensive view of the inland country, which he found agreeably diversified by hills, valleys, and large plains, that in many places were richly covered with wood. This evening, the Lieutenant and Mr. Green observed an emersion of the first satellite of Jupiter, which gave 214° 53′ 45″ of longitude. The observation taken on the twenty-ninth of June had given 214° 48′ 30″; and the mean was 214° 48′ 7½″, being the longitude of the place west of Greenwich.

On the seventeenth, Mr. Cook sent the master 17 July. and one of the mates in the pinnace, to fearch for a channel to the northward; after which, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, he went into the woods on the other fide of the water. In this excursion the gentlemen had a farther opportunity of improving their acquaintance with the Indians, who by degrees became so familiar, that feveral of them the next day ventured on board the ship. There the Lieutenant left them. apparently much entertained, that he might go with Mr. Banks to take a farther furvey of the country, and especially to indulge an anxious curiofity they had of looking round about them upon the sea; of which they earnestly wished, but scarcely dared to hope, that they might obtain a favourable and encouraging prospect. When, after having walked along the shore seven or eight miles to the northward, they ascended a very high hill, the view which presented itself to them inspired nothing but melancholy apprehensions. In every direction, they faw rocks and shoals without number; and there appeared to be no passage out to sea, but through the winding channels between them, the navigation of which could

CHAP: not be accomplished without the utmost degree of difficulty and danger. The spirits of the two gentlemen were not raised by this excursion.

1770. 19 July.

On the nineteenth our voyagers were vifited by ten of the natives; and fix or feven more were feen at a distance, chiefly women, who were as naked as the male inhabitants of the country. There being at that time a number of turtles on the deck of the ship, the Indians who came on board were determined to get one of them; and expressed great disappointment and anger, when our people refused to comply with their wishes. Several attempts were made by them to fecure what they wanted by force; but all their efforts proving unfuccefsful, they fuddenly leaped into their canoe in a transport of rage, and paddled towards the shore. The Lieutenant, with Mr. Banks, and five or fix of the ship's crew, immediately went into the boat, and got ashore, where many of the English were engaged in various employments. As foon as the natives reached the land, they feized their arms, which had been laid up in a tree, and having fnatched a brand from under a pitch-kettle that was boiling, made a circuit to the windward of the few things our people had on shore, and with furprizing quickness and dexterity fet fire to the grass in their way. The grafs, which was as dry as stubble, and five or fix feet high, burnt with furprizing fury; and a tent of Mr. Banks's would have been destroyed, if that gentleman had not immediately got some of the men to fave it, by hauling it down upon the beach. Every part of the fmith's forge that would burn was confumed. This transaction was followed by another of the fame nature. In fpite of threats and entreaties, the Indians went to a different place, where feveral of the Endeavour's crew were washing, and where the seine, the other nets,

1779:

Bets, and a large quantity of linen were laid out CHAP. to dry, and again fet fire to the grafs. The audacity of this fresh attack rendered it necessary that a musket, loaded with small shot, should be difcharged at one of them; who being wounded, at the distance of about forty yards, they all betook themselves to flight. In the last instance the fire was extinguished before it had made any confiderable progress; but where it had first begun it foread far into the woods. The natives being still in fight, Mr. Cook, to convince them that they had not yet gotten out of his reach, fired a mulquet, charged with ball, a-breast of them among the mangroves, upon which they quickened their pace, and were foon out of view. It was now expected that they would have given our navigators no farther trouble; but in a little time their voices were heard in the woods, and it was perceived that they came nearer and nearer. The Lieutenant, therefore, together with Mr. Banks, and three or four more persons, set out to meet them; and the refult of the interview, in confequence of the prudent and lenient conduct of our Commander and his friends, was a complete reconciliation. Soon after the Indians went away, the woods were feen to be on fire at the distance of about two miles. This accident, if it had happened a little fooner, might have produced dreadful effects; for the powder had been but a few days on board, and it was not many hours that the store tent, with all the valuable things contained in it, had been removed. From the fury with which the grais would burn in this hot climate, and the difficulty of extinguishing the fire, our voyagers determined never to expose themselves to the like danger, but to clear the ground around them, if ever again they should be under a necessity of pitching their tents in fuch a fituation.

CHAP. In the evening of this day, when every thing was gotten on board the ship, and she was nearly ready for failing, the master returned with the disagreeable account that there was no passage for her to the northward. The next morning the Lieutenant himself sounded and buoyed the bar. At this time all the hills for many miles round were on fire, and the appearance they assumed at night was eminently striking and splendid.

23 July.

24.

26.

In an excursion which was made by Mr. Banks, on the twenty-third, to gather plants, he found the greatest part of the cloth that had been given to the Indians lying in a heap together. This, as well as the trinkets which were bestowed upon them, they probably regarded as useless lumber. Indeed, they feemed to fet little value on any thing possessed by our people, excepting their turtle; and that was a commodity which could not

be spared.

As Lieutenant Cook was prevented by blowing weather from attempting to get out to fea, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander feized another opportunity, on the twenty-fourth, of purfuing their botanical refearches. Having traverfed the woods the greater part of the day without fuccess, as they were returning through a deep valley, they difcovered lying upon the ground feveral marking nuts, the Anacardium orientale. Animated with the hope of meeting with the tree that bore them, a tree which perhaps no European botanist had ever feen, they fought for it with great diligence and labour, but to no purpose. While Mr. Banks was again gleaning the country, on the twentyfixth, to enlarge his treasure of natural history, he had the good fortune to take an animal of the Opoffum tribe, together with two young ones. It was a

female, and, though not exactly of the fame species, CHAP. much refembled the remarkable animal which Monf. de Buffon hath described by the name of phalanger. cish decuare to us of

29 July.

On the morning of the twenty-ninth, the weather becoming calm, and a light breeze having fprung up by land, Lieutenant Cook fent a boat to fee what water was upon the bar, and all things were made ready for putting to fea. But, on the return of the boat, the officer reported that there were only thirteen feet of water on the bar. As the ship drew thirteen feet six inches, and the sea breeze fet in again in the evening, all hope of failing on that day was given up. The weather being more moderate on the thirty-first, the Lieutenant had thoughts of trying to warp the veffel out of the harbour; but upon going out himself in the boat, he found that the wind still blew fo fresh, that it would not be proper to make the attempt. A difagreeable piece of intelligence was given on the succeeding day. The carpenter, who had examined the pumps, reported that they were all of them in a state of decay. One of them was fo rotten, that, when hoisted up, it dropped to pieces, and the rest were not in a much better condition. The chief confidence, therefore, of our navigators was now in the foundness of the ship; and it was a happy circumstance that she did not admit more than one inch of water in an ept his courie ion a, bruod

Early on the third of August, another unsuc- 3 August. cessful attempt was made to warp the vessel out of the harbour: but in the morning of the next day the efforts of our voyagers were more prosperous, and the Endeavour got once more under fail, with a light air from the land, which foon died away, and was followed by fea breezes from fouth-east by

CHAP: by fouth With these breezes the ship stood off to fea; east, by north, having the pinnace a-head, which was predeted to keep founding without in 1770 A little before noon the Lieutenant .vial es termission. anchored in fifteen fathom water, with a fandy bottom; the reason of which was, that he did not think it fafe to run in among the shoals, till, by taking a view of them from the mast head, at low-water, he might be able to form some judgment which way it would be proper for him to fleer. This was a matter of nice and arduous determination. As yet Mr. Cook was in doubt whether he should beat back to the southward, round all the shoals, or feek a passage to the eastward or the northward : nor was it possible to fay whether each of these courses might not be attended

with equal difficulty and danger to dred add to the The impartiality and humanity of Lieutenant Cook's conduct in the distribution of provisions ought not to pass unnoticed so Whatever turtle or other fish were caught, they were always equally divided among the whole thip's crew, the meanest person on board having the same share with the Lieutenant himself, He hath justly observed, that this is a rule, which every commander will find it his interest to follow, in any voyage of a similar of our navigators was now in the foundnets-srutan

Great difficulties occurred in the navigation 5 August. from the Endeavour river, On the fifth of August, the Lieutenant had not kept his course long, before shoals were discovered in every quarter, which obliged him, as night approached, to come to an anchor. In the morning of the fixth, there was fo strong a gale, that our voyagers were prevented from weighing. When it was low-water, Mr. Cook, with feveral of his officers, kept a look-out

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 200-203.

1770

at the mast-head, to see if any passage could be CHAP. discovered between the shoals. Nothing, however, was in view excepting breakers, which extended from the fouth round by the east as far as to the north-west and reached out to sea, beyond the fight of any of the gentlemen. It did not appear that these breakers were caused by one continued shoal, but by feveral, which lay detached from each other. On that which was farthest to the eastward the fea broke very high, fo that the Lieutenant was induced to think that it was the outermost shoal. He was now convinced that there was no paffage to fea, but through the labyrinth formed by thefe shoals; and, at the same time, he was wholly at a loss what course to steer, when the weather should permit the vessel to fail. The master's opinion was, that our navigators should beat back the way they came; but, as the wind blew frongly and almost without intermission, from that quarter; this would have been an rendless labour a and yet, if a passage could not be found to the northward, there was no other alternative. Amidst these anxious deliberations, the gale increased, and continueds with little remission; till the morning of the tenth, when, the weather 10 August. becoming more moderate, our Commander weighed, and flood in for the land ... He had now come to a final determination of feeking a passage along the thore to the northward to virgin lo In purmance of this resolution, the Endeavour proceeded in her course, and at noon came between the farthermost headland that lay in fight, and three islands which were four or five leagues to the north of it, out at sea. Here our navigators thought that they faw a clear opening before them, * Com Planery Mes in Milade 14 of fourth, and in langifule

* Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 204-208.

onli

CHAP, and began to hope that they were once more out of danger. Of this hope, however, they were foon deprived; on which account the Lieutenant gave to the headland the name of CAPE FLAT-TERY *. After he had steered some time along the shore, for what was believed to be the open channel, the petty officer at the mast-head cried aloud that He faw land a-head, which extended quite round to the three islands, and that between the ship and them there was a large reef. Mr. Cook upon this ran up the mast-head himself, and plainly discerned the reef, which was so far to the windward that it could not be weathered. As to the land which the petty officer had supposed to be the main, our Commander was of opinion that it was only a cluster of small islands. The master and fome others, who went up the mast-head after the Lieutenant, were entirely of a different opinion. All of them were positive that the land in fight did not confift of islands, but that it was a part of the main; and they rendered their report still more alarming, by adding, that they faw breakers around them on every fide. In a fituation fo critical and doubtful, Mr. Cook thought proper to come to an anchor, under a high point, which he immediately afcended, that he might have a farther view of the fea and the country. The prospect he had from this place, which he called Point Look-our, clearly confirmed him in his former opinion; the justness of which displayed one of the numerous instances wherein it was manifest how much he exceeded the people about him in the fagacity of his judgment concerning matters of navigation.

^{*} Cape Flattery lies in latitude 14° 56' fouth, and in longitude 2140 43 weft.

The Lieutenant, being anxious to discover more CHAP distinctly the situation of the shoals, and the channel between them, determined to visit the northermost and largest of the three islands before mentioned; which, from its height, and its lying five leagues out to fea, was peculiarly adapted to his purpose. Accordingly, in company with Mr Banks, whose fortitude and curiofity stimulated him to take a share in every undertaking, he fet out in the pinnace, on the morning of the eleventh, upon this expedition. He fent, at the 11 August. fame time, the mafter in the yawl, to found between the low islands and the main land. About one o'clock, the gentlemen reached the place of their destination, and immediately, with a mixture of hope and fear, proportioned to the importance of the bufiness, and the uncertainty of the event, ascended the highest hill they could find. When the Lieutenant took a furvey of the prospect around him, he discovered, on the outside of the islands, and at the distance of two or three leagues from them, a reef of rocks, upon which the fea broke in a dreadful furf, and which extended farther than his fight could reach. Hence however, he collected that there were no shoals beyond them: and, as he perceived feveral breaks or openings in the reef, and deep water between that and the islands, he entertained hopes of getting without the rocks. But though he faw reason to indulge, in some degree, this expectation, the haziness of the weather prevented him from obtaining that fatisfactory intelligence which he ardently defired. He determined, therefore, by flaying all night upon the island, to try whether the next day would not afford him a more distinct and comprehensive prospect. Accordingly, the gentlemen took up

1770.

OHAP, their lodging under the shelter of a bush which grew upon the beach. Not many hours were devoted by them to fleep; for at three in the morning Mr. Cook mounted the hill a fecond time, but had the mortification of finding the weather much more hazy than it had been on the preceding day. He had early fent the pinnace, with one of the mates, to found between the island and reefs, and to examine what appeared to be a channel through them. The mate, in consequence of its blowing hard, did not dare to venture into the channel, which he reported to be very narrow. Nevertheless, our Commander, who judged from the defcription of the place that it had been feen to disadvantage, was not discouraged by this account.

While the Lieutenant was engaged in his furvey, Mr. Banks, always attentive to the great object of natural history, collected some plants which he had never met with before. No animals were perceived upon the place excepting lizards, for which reason the gentlemen gave it the name of LIZARD ISLAND. In their return to the ship. they landed on a low fandy island that had trees upon it, and which abounded with an incredible number of birds, principally fea-fowl. Here they found the nest of an eagle, and the nest of fome other bird, of what species they could not distinguish; but it must certainly be one of the largest kinds that exists. This was apparent from the enormous fize of the nest, which was built with sticks upon the ground, and was no less than fix and twenty feet in circumference, and two feet eight inches in height *. The fpot

which

^{*} In the twentieth volume of the Philosophical Transactions, (p. 361.) where there is a short account of New Holland, a bird's nest is mentioned, larger than that which is described above.

which the gentlemen were now upon, they called CHAP. EAGLE SLAND edition souls made als!

1770.

When Lieutenant Cook got on board, he entered into a very ferious deliberation concerning the course he should pursue. After considering what he had feen himself, and the master's report, he was of opinion that by keeping in with the main land, he should run the risk of being locked in by the great reef, and of being compelled at last to return back in search of another passage. By the delay that would hence be occasioned, our navigators would almost certainly be prevented from getting in time to the East Indies, which was a matter of the utmost importance, and indeed of absolute necessity; for they had now not much more than three months provision on board. at fhort allowance. The judgment the Lieutenant had formed, together with the facts and appearances on which it was grounded, he stated to his officers, by whom it was unanimously agreed, that the best thing they could do would be to quit the coast entirely, till they could approach it again with less danger. Journ and around

In pursuance of this resolution, the Endeavour, early in the morning of the thirteenth, got 13 August. under fail, and successfully passed through one of the channels or openings in the outer reef. which Mr. Cook had feen from the island. When the ship had gotten without the breakers, there was no ground within one hundred and fifty fathom, and our people found a large fea rolling in upon them from the fouth-east This was a certain fign that neither land nor shoals were near them in that direction.

So happy a change in the fituation of our voyagers was fenfibly felt in every breaft, and Merchania to La La still on not of was

CHAP. was visible in every countenance; They had been little less than three months in a state that perpetually threatened them with destruction. Frequently had they paffed their nights at anchor within hearing of the furge that broke over the shoals and rocks; and they knew that, if by any accident the anchors should not hold against an almost continual tempest, they must in a few minutes inevitably perish. They had failed three hundred and fixty leagues, without once, even for a moment, having a man out of the chains heaving the lead. This was a circumstance which perhaps had never happened to any other vessel. But now, our navigators found themselves in an open sea, with deep water; and the joy they experienced was proportioned to their late danger, and their present security. Nevertheless, the very waves, which proved by their swell that our people had no rocks or shoals to fear, convinced them, at the fame time, that they could not put a confidence in the ship equal to what they had done before she struck. So far were her leaks widened by the blows the received from the waves, that she admitted no less than nine inches of water in an hour. If the company had not been lately in fo much more imminent danger, this fact, confidering the state of the pumps, and the navigation which was still in view, would have been a matter of very ferious concern, bandan on save evedt

The passage or channel, through which the Endeavour passed into the open sea beyond the reef, lies in latitude 14° 32' fouth. It may always be known by the three high islands within it, to which, on account of the use they may be of in guiding the way of future voyagers, our Commander gave the

appellation of the ISLANDS OF DIRECTION.

It was not a long time that our navigators en- CHAP. joyed the fatisfaction of being free from the alarm of danger. As they were purfuing their course in the night of the fifteenth, they founded frequent- 15 Aug. ly, but had no bottom with one hundred and forty fathom, nor any ground with the same length of line. Nevertheless, at four in the morning of the fixteenth, they plainly heard the roaring of the furf, and at break of day faw it foaming to a vast height, at no more than the distance of a mile. The waves which rolled in upon the reef carried the vessel towards it with great rapidity; and, at the fame time, our people could reach no ground with an anchor, and had not a breath of wind for the fail. In a fituation fo dreadful, there was no resource but in the boats; and, most unhappily, the pinnace was under repair. By the help, however, of the long-boat and the yawl, which were fent a-head to tow, the ship's head was got round to the northward, a circumstance which might delay, if it could not prevent destruction. This was not effected till fix o'clock, and our voyagers were not then a hundred yards from the rock, upon which the fame billow that washed the side of the vessel broke to a tremendous height the very next time it rose. There was only, therefore, a dreary valley between the English and destruction; a valley no wider than the bafe of one wave, while the fea under them was unfathomable. The carpenter, in the mean while, having hastily patched up the pinnace, she was hoisted out, and sent a-head to tow, in aid of the other boats. But all these efforts would have been ineffectual, if a light air of wind had not fprung up, just at the crisis of our people's fate. It was fo light an air, that at any other time it would not have been observed: but it was fufficient to turn the scale in favour of

CHAP. our navigators; and, in conjunction with the affistance which was afforded by the boats, it gave the ship a perceptible motion obliquely from the reef. The hopes of the company now revived: but in less than ten minutes a dead calm succeeded, and the vessel was again driven towards the breakers, which were not at the distance of two hundred yards. However, before the ground was loft which had already been gained, the fame light breeze returned, and lasted ten minutes more. During this time, a fmall opening, about a quarter of a mile distant, was discovered in the reef; upon which, Mr. Cook immediately fent out one of the mates to examine it, who reported that its breadth was not more than the length of the ship. but that within it there was smooth water. This discovery presented the prospect of a possibility of escape, by pushing the vessel through the opening. Accordingly, the attempt was made, but it failed of fuccess; for when our people, by the joint affistance of their boots and the breeze, had reached the opening, they found that it had become highwater; and, to their great furprize, they met the tide of ebb running out like a mill-stream. In direct contrariety to their expectations, fome advantage was gained by this event. Though it was impossible to go through the opening, the stream which prevented the Endeavour from doing it, carried her out about a quarter of a mile; and the boats were fo much affifted in towing her, by the tide of ebb, that at noon she had gained the distance of nearly two miles. However, there was yet too much reason to despair of deliverance. For even if the breeze, which had now died away, had revived, our navigators were still embayed in the reef: and the tide of ebb being spent, the tide of flood, notwithstanding their utmost efforts,

forts, drove the ship back again into her former C H A P. perilous fituation. Happily, about this time, another opening was perceived, nearly a mile to the westward. Our Commander immediately sent Mr. Hicks, the first lieutenant, to examine it; and in the mean while the Endeavour struggled hard with the flood, fometimes gaining and fometimes losing ground. During this severe service, every man did his duty with as much calmness and regularity as if no danger had been near. At length, Mr. Hicks returned with the intelligence that the opening, though narrow and hazardous, was capable of being passed. The bare possibility of passing it was encouragement sufficient to make the attempt; and indeed all danger was less to be dreaded by our people than that of continuing in their prefent fituation. A light breeze having fortunately forung up, this, in conjunction with the aid of the boats, and the very tide of flood that would otherwise have been their destruction, enabled them to enter the opening, through which they were hurried with amazing rapidity. Such was the force of the torrent by which they were carried along, that they were kept from driving against either side of the channel, which in breadth was not more than a quarter of a mile. While they were shooting this gulph, their foundings were remarkably irregular, varying from thirty to feven fathom, and the ground at bottom was foul.

As foon as our navigators had gotten within the reef, they came to an anchor; and their joy was exceedingly great at having regained a fituation which three days before they had quitted with the utmost pleasure and transport. Rocks and shoals, which are always dangerous to the mariner even when they are previously known and marked,

CHAP. marked, are peculiarly dangerous in feas which have never been navigated before; and in this part of the globe they are more perilous than in any other. Here they confift of reefs of coral rock, which rife like a wall almost perpendicularly out of the deep, and are always overflowed at high-water. Here, too, the enormous waves of the vast fouthern ocean, meeting with so abrupt a refistance, break with inconceivable violence, in a furf which cannot be produced by any rocks or storms in the northern hemisphere. A crazy ship, shortness of provision, and a want of every necessary, greatly increased the danger to our present voyagers of navigating in this ocean. Nevertheless, such is the ardour of the human mind, and so flattering is the distinction of a first discoverer, that Lieutenant Cook and his companions chearfully encountered every peril, and fubmitted to every inconvenience. They chose rather to incur the charge of imprudence and temerity, than to leave a country unexplored which they had discovered, or to afford the least colour for its being faid, that they were deficient in perfeverance and fortitude *. It fcarcely needs to be added, that it was the high and magnanimous fpirit of our Commander, in particular, which inspired his people with so much resolution and vigour.

The Lieutenant, having now gotten within the reef, determined, whatever might be the confequence, to keep the main land on board in his future route to the northward. His reason for this determination was, that, if he had gone without the reef again, he might have been carried by it so far from the coast, as to prevent his being able to afcertain whether this country, did, or did

stories no de non * Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 220.

not, join to New Guinea; a question which he CHAP. had fixed upon resolving, from the first moment that he had come within fight of land. To the opening through which the Endeavour had passed, our Commander, with a proper sense of gratitude to the Supreme Being, gave the name of Provi-DENTIAL CHANNEL. In the morning of the feventeenth, the boats had been fent out, to fee what refreshments could be procured; and returned in the afternoon with two hundred and forty pounds of the meat of shell-fish, chiefly of cockles. Some of the cockles were as much as two men could move, and contained twenty pounds of good meat. Mr. Banks, who had gone out in his little boat, accompanied by Dr. Solander, brought back a variety of curious shells, and many species of corals.

In the profecution of the voyage, our people, on the nineteenth, were encompassed on every fide with rocks and shoals: but, as they had lately been exposed to much greater danger, and these objects were now become familiar, they began to regard them comparatively with little concern. On the twenty-first, there being two points in view, between which our navigators could fee no land, they conceived hopes of having at last found a passage into the Indian sea. Mr. Cook, however, that he might be able to determine the matter with greater certainty, resolved to land upon an island which lies at the fouth-east point of the passage. Accordingly, he went into the boat, with a party of men, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander. As they were getting to shore, fome of the natives feemed inclined to oppose their landing, but foon walked leifurely away. The gentlemen immediately climbed the highest hill, from which no land could be feen between the ensured out bon : flowr & fouth-

1770.

19.

CHAP. fouth-west and west-south-west; so that the Lieutenant had not the least doubt of finding a channel through which he could pass to New Guinea. As he was now about to quit the coast of New Holland, which he had traced from latitude thirtyeight to this place, and which he was certain no European had ever seen before, he once more hoisted English colours. He had, indeed, already taken possession of several particular parts of the country. But he now took possession of the whole eastern coast, with all the bays, harbours, rivers, and islands situated upon it, from latitude 38° to latitude 101 fouth, in right of his Majesty King George the Third, and by the name of New South Wales. The party then fired three vollies of fmall arms, which were answered by the fame number from the ship. When the gentlemen had performed this ceremony upon the island, which they called Possession Island, they reimbarked in their boat, and, in consequence of a rapid ebb tide, had a very difficult and tedious return to the vessel.

23 August.

On the twenty-third, the wind had come round to the fouth-west; and though it was but a gentle breeze, yet it was accompanied by a swell from the same quarter, which, in conjunction with other circumstances, confirmed Mr. Cook in his opinion that he had arrived to the northern extremity of New Holland, and that he had now an open sea to the westward. These circumstances afforded him peculiar fatisfaction, not only because the dangers and fatigues of the voyage were drawing to a conclusion, but because it could no longer be doubted whether New Holland and New Guinea were two separate islands. The north-east entrance of the streight lies in the latitude of 10° 39' fouth, and in the longitude of 218° 36' west; and the passage is formed by the main

main land, and by a congeries of islands, to the CHAP. north-west, called by the Lieutenant the PRINCE of WALES's ISLANDS, and which may probably extend as far as to New Guinea. Their difference is very great both in height and circuit, and many feemed to be well covered with herbage and wood: nor was there any doubt of their being inhabited. Our Commander was perfuaded, that among these islands as good passages might be found as that through which the vessel came, and the access to which might be less perilous. The determination of this matter he would not have left to future navigators, if he had been less harraffed by danger and fatigue, and had possessed a ship in better condition for the purpose To the channel through which he passed, he gave the name of ENDEAVOUR STREIGHTS *.

New Holland, or, as the eastern part of it was called by Lieutenant Cook, is New South Wales, is the largest country in the known world which does not bear the name of a continent. The length of coast along which our people sailed, when reduced to a strait line, was no less than twenty-feven degrees of latitude, amounting nearly to two thousand miles. In fact, the square furface of the island is much more than equal to the whole of Europe. For a particular account of the natural and animal productions of the country, and a minute description of its inhabitants, we must refer to the voyage at large. In general, we may observe, with regard to the natives, that their number bears no proportion to the extent of their territory. So many as thirty of them had never been feen together but once, and that was at Botany Bay. Even when they appeared determin-

CHAP. ed to engage the English, they could not master above fourteen or fifteen fighting men; and it was manifest that their sheds and houses did not lie so close together, as to be capable of accommodating a larger party. Indeed our navigators faw only the fea-coast on the eastern side; between which and the western shore there is an immense tract of land that is wholly unexplored. But it is evident, from the totally uncultivated state of the country which was feen by our people, that this immense tract must either be altogether desolate, or at least more thinly inhabited than the parts which were Of traffic the natives had no idea, nor could any be communicated to them. The things which were given them they received, but did not appear to understand the signs of the English requiring a return. There was no reason to believe that they eat animal food raw. As they have no vessel in which water can be boiled, they either broil their meat upon the coals, or bake it in a hole by the help of hot stones, agreeably to the custom of the inhabitants of the South-Sea islands. Fire is produced by them with great facility, and they spread it in a surprizing manner. For producing it they take two pieces of foft wood, one of which is a stick about eight or nine inches long, while the other piece is flat. The flick they shape into an obtuse point at one end, and pressing it upon the flat wood, turn it nimbly by holding it between both their hands. In doing this, they often shift their hands up, and then move them down, with a view of increasing the pressure as much as possible. By this process they obtain fire in less than two minutes, and from the smallest spark they carry it to any height or extent with great speed and dexterity.

It was not possible, considering the limited intercourse tercourse which our navigators had with the na- CHAP. tives of New South Wales, that much could be learned with regard to their language. Nevertheless, as this is an object of no small curiosity to the learned, and is, indeed, of peculiar importance in fearthing into the origin of the various nations that have been discovered, Mr. Cook and logue de his friends took some pains to collect such a specimen of it as might, in a certain degree, answer the purpose. Our Commander did not quit the country without making fuch observations, relative to the currents and tides upon the coast, as, while they increase the general knowledge of navigation, may be of service to future voyagers. The irregularity of the tides is an object worthy of notice *.

From the coast of New South Wales the Lieutenant steered, on the twenty-third of August, 23 August. for the coast of New Guinea, and on the twentyfifth fell upon a dangerous shoal. The ship was in fix fathom, but scarcely two were found, upon founding round her, at the distance of half a cable's length. This shoal was of such an extent, reaching from the east round by the north and west to the south-west, that there was no method for the veffel to get clear of it, but by her going back the way in which she came. Here was another hair's-breadth escape; for it was nearly highwater, and there ran a short cockling sea, which if the ship had struck must very soon have bulged her. So dangerous was her situation, that if her direction had been half a cable's length more either to the right or left, she must have struck beforethe fignal for the shoal could have been made.

It had been Lieutenant Cook's intention to steer

north-

X

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 267.

Guinea, and it was his purpose to touch upon it,

Guinea, and it was his purpose to touch upon it,

if that could be found practicable. But in consequence of the shoals he met with, he altered his course, in the hope of finding a clearer channel, and deeper water. His hope was agreeably veriable August. sied; for by noon, on the twenty-sixth, the depth

August. fied; for by noon, on the twenty-fixth, the depth of water was gradually increased to seventeen father. On the twenty-eighth, our voyagers

found the fea to be in many places covered with a brown fcum, fuch as the failors usually call fpawn. When the Lieutenant first saw it he was alarmed, fearing that the ship was again among shoals; but the depth of water, upon founding, was discovered to be equal to what it was in other places. The fame appearance had been observed upon the coasts of Brazil and New Holland, in which cases it was at no great distance from the shore. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander examined the fcum, but could not determine what it was, any farther than as they faw reason to suppose that it belonged to the vegetable kingdom. The failors, upon meeting with more of it, gave up the notion of its being spawn, and finding a new name for it, called it fea-fawdust. 1941 flaw danol adi of flaw

3 Sept.

At day-break, on the third of September, our navigators came in fight of New Guinea, and stood in for it, with a fresh gale, till nine o'clock, when they brought to, being in three fathom water, and within about three or four miles of land. Upon this the pinnace was hoisted, and the Lieutenant set off from the ship with the boat's crew, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Mr. Banks's servants, being in all twelve persons

^{*} The latitude was now to 10 fouth, and the longitude 220 12 west.

well armed. As foon as they came ashore, they CHAP. discovered the prints of human feet, which could not long have been impressed upon the fand. Concluding, therefore, that the natives were at no great distance, and there being a thick wood which reached to within a hundred yards of the water, the gentlemen thought it necessary to proceed with caution, left their retreat to the boat should be cut off. When they had walked fome way along the skirts of the wood, they came to a grove of cocoa-nut trees, at the fruit of which they looked very wishfully; but not thinking it fafe to climb, they were obliged to leave it without tasting a fingle nut. After they had advanced about a quarter of a mile from the boat, three Indians rushed out of the wood with a hideous shout, and as they ran towards the English, the foremost threw fomething out of his hand, which flew on one fide of him, and burned exactly like gunpowder, though without making any report. The two other natives having at the same instant discharged their arrows, the Lieutenant and his party were under a necessity of firing, first with fmall shot, and a second time with ball. Upon this, the three Indians ran away with great agility. As Mr. Cook had no disposition forcibly to invade this country, either to gratify the appetites or the curiofity of his people, and was convinced that nothing was to be done upon friendly terms, he and his companions returned with all expedition towards their boat. When they were aboard, they rowed abreast of the natives, who had come down to the shore in aid of their countrymen, and whose number now amounted to between fixty and a hundred. Their appearance was much the fame as that of the New Hollanders: they nearly refembled them in stature, and in having their

CHAP, their hair short and cropped. Like them, also, they were absolutely naked; but the colour of their skin did not seem quite so dark, which, however, might be owing to their being less dirty. While the English gentlemen were viewing them, they were shouting defiance, and letting off their fires by four or five at a time. Our people could not imagine what these fires were, or what purposes they were intended to answer. Those who discharged them had in their hands a short piece of stick, which they swung side-ways from them. and immediately there issued fire and smoke, exactly refembling those of a musquet, and of as fhort a duration. The men on board the ship who observed this surprizing phenomenon, were fo far deceived by it as to believe that the Indians had fire-arms. To the persons in the boat it had the appearance of the firing of vollies, without one fide of him and burned example a report.

The place where this transaction happened lies in the latitude of 6° 15' fouth, and is about fixty-five leagues to the north-east of Port Saint Augustine, or Walche Caep, and is near what is called in the charts C. de la Colta de St. Bonaventura. In every part of the coast, the land is covered with a vast luxuriance of wood and herbage. The cocoa-nut, the bread fruit, and the plantain-tree, flourish here in the highest perfection; besides which the country abounds with most of the trees, shrubs, and plants, that are common to the South Sea islands, New Zealand,

and New Holland *.

Soon after Mr. Cook and his party had returned to the ship, our voyagers made fail to the westward, the Lieutenant having refolved to fpend no more

[#] Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 279.

time upon this coast; a resolution which was greatly CHAP. to the fatisfaction of a very confiderable majority of his people. Some of the officers indeed were particularly urgent that a number of men might be fent albore, to cut down the cocos nut trees for the take of their fruit. This, however, our Commander absolutely refused, as equally unjust and cruel. It was morally certain, from the preceding behaviour of the natives, that if their property had been invaded they would have made a vigorous effort to defend it; in which case the lives of many of them must have been sacrificed; and perhaps, too, feveral of the English would have fallen in the contest. The necessity of a quarrel with the Indians would have been regretted by the Lieutenant, even if he had been impelled to it by a want of the necessaries of life; but to engage in it for the transient gratification that would arise from obtaining two or three hundred green cocoa-nuts, appeared in his view highly criminal. The fame calamity, at least with regard to the natives, would probably have occurred, if he had fought for any other place on the coaft, to the northward and westward, where the ship might have lain fo near the shore as to cover his people with the guns when they had landed. Befides, there was cause to believe, that, before such a place could have been found, our navigators would have been carried fo far to the westward as to be obliged to go to Batavia, on the north fide of Java. This, in Mr. Cook's opinion, would not have been to fafe a passage, as that to the fouth of Java, through the streights of Sunda. Another reason for his making the best of his way to Batavia, was the leakiness of the vessel, which rendered it doubtful whether it would not be neceffary to heave her down when the arrived at M that

11. 1770.

CHAP that port. Our Commander's resolution was farther confirmed by the confideration, that no difcovery could be expected in leas which had already been navigated, and where the coast had been fufficiently described both by Spanish and Dutch geographers, and especially by the latter. The only merit claimed by the Lieutenant, in this part of his voyage, was the having established it as a fact beyond all controverfy, that New Holland and New Guinea are two distinct countries.

Without staying, therefore, on the coast of New Guinea, the Endeavour, on the same day, directed her course to the westward, in pursuing which Mr. Cook had an opportunity of rectifying the errors of former navigators. Very early in the morning of the fixth of September, our voyagers passed a small island which lay to the northnorth-west; and at day-break they discovered another low island, extending from that quarter to north-north-east. Upon the last island, which appeared to be of confiderable extent, the Lieutenant would have landed to examine its produce. if the wind had not blown to fresh as to render his design impracticable. Unless these two islands belong to the Arrou islands, they have no place in the charts; and if they do belong to the Arrou islands, they are laid down at too great a distance from New Guinea *. Some other land which was feen this day ought, by its distance from New Guinea, to have been part of the Arrou islands; but if any dependence can be placed on former charts, it lies a degree farther to the fouth.

On the feventh, when the ship was in lati-

tude

6 Sept.

^{*} Mr. Cook found the fouth part of them in latitude 7º 6' fouth, and in longitude 225° west.

tude 94 30 fouth, and longitude 229° 34' west, CHAP. our people ought to have been in fight of the Weafel isles, which in the charts are laid down at the distance of twenty or twenty-five leagues from the coast of New Holland. But as our Commander faw nothing of them, he concluded that they must have been placed erroneously. will this be deemed furprizing, when it is confidered that not only these islands, but the coast which bounds this fea, have been explored at different times, and by different persons, who had not all the requifites for keeping accurate journals which are now possessed; and whose various difcoveries have been delineated upon charts by others, perhaps at the distance of more than a century after fuch discoveries had been made.

f

-

d

r

h

1-

is

2-

n

u

ce

h

m

u

ed

he

ti-

th,

de

In pursuing their course, our navigators passed the islands of Timor, Timor-lavet, Rotte, and While they were near the two latter islands, they observed about ten o'clock at night, on the fixteenth of the month, a phænomenon in 16 Sept. the heavens, which in many particulars resembled the Aurora Borealis, though in others it was very different. It consisted of a dull reddish light, which reached about twenty degrees above the horizon; and though its extent, at times, varied much, it never comprehended less than eight or ten points of the compass. Through, and out of the general appearance, there passed rays of light of a brighter colour, which vanished, and were renewed nearly in the same manner as those of the Aurora Borealis, but entirely without the tremulous or vibratory motion which is feen in that phænomenon. The body of this light bore fouthfouth-east from the ship, and continued, without any diminution of its brightness, till twelve o'clock, and probably a longer time, as the gentlemen M 2

CHAP. were prevented from observing it farther, by their

retiring to fleep.

By the fixteenth, Lieutenant Cook had gotten 16 Sept. clear of all the illands which had then been laid down in the maps as fituated between Tittlor and Java, and did not expect to meet with any other in that quarter. But the next mortling an island was feen bearing west-south-west, and at first he believed that he had made a new discovery. As foon as our voyagers had come close in with the north fide of it, they had the pleafing prospect of houses and cocoa-nut trees, and of what still more agreeably surprized them, numerous flocks of sheep. Many of the people on board were at this time in a bad state of health, and no small number of them had been diffatisfied with the Lieutenant for not having touched at Timor. He readily embraced, therefore, the opportunity of landing at a place which appeared fo well calculated to supply the necessities of the company, and to remove both the fickness and the discontent which had fpread among them *. This place proved to be the island of SAVU, where a settlement had lately been made by the Dutch.

The great defign of our Commander was to obtain provisions, which, after some difficulty, and fome jealoufy on the part of Mr. Lange, the Dutch Resident, were procured. These provisions were nine buffaloes, fix sheep, three hogs, thirty dozen of fowls, many dozens of eggs, fome co-coa-nuts, a few limes, a little garlic, and feveral hundred gallons of palm-fyrup. In obtaining these refreshments at a reasonable price, the English were not a little affisted by an old Indian, who appeared to be a person of considerable authority

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 289.

as Sept.

:00 t

under the king of the country. The Lieutenant C HAP. and his friends were one day very hospitably entertained by the king himself, though the royal 1770. etiquette did not permit his majesty to partake of

the banquet.

s

f

e f

it e

.

o y,

ie is ty

al

g-

10

ty

ler

So little, in general, had the island of Savubeen known, that Mr. Cook had never seen a map or chart in which it is clearly or accurately laid down. The middle of it lies in about the latitude of 10 35 south, and longitude 237 30 west; and from the ship it presented a prospect than which nothing can be more beautiful. This prospect, from the verdure and culture of the country, from the hills, richly clothed, which rise in a gentle and regular ascent, and from the state-lines and beauty of the trees, is delightful to a degree, that can scarcely be conceived by the most lively imagination. With regard to the productions and natives of the island, the account which our navigators were enabled to give of them, and which is copious and entertaining, was, in a great measure, derived from the information of Mr. Lange.

An extraordinary relation is given of the morals of the people of this island, and which, if true, must fill every virtuous mind with pleasure. Their characters and conduct are represented as irreproachable, even upon the principles of Christianity. Though no man is permitted to have more than one wife, an illicit commerce between the fexes is scarcely known among them. Instances of their are very rare, and so far are they from revenging a supposed injury by murder, that when any difference arises between them, they immediately and implicitly refer it to the determination

Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 297.

ar Sept.

, Oct.

2.

5.

They will not so much as make it the subject of private debate, lest they should hence be provoked to resentment and ill-will. Their delicacy and cleanliness are suited to the purity of their morals. From the specimen which is given of the language of Savu, it appears to have some affinity with that of the South Sea Islands. Many of the words are exactly the same, and the terms of numbers are derived from the same

origin *.

On the twenty-first of September, our navigators got under sail, and having pursued their voyage till the first of October, on that day they came within light of the island of Java. During their course from Savu, Lieutenant Cook allowed twenty minutes a day for the westerly current, which he concluded must run strong at this time, especially on the coast of Java; and accordingly, he found that this allowance was exactly equivalent to the effect of the current upon the ship. Such was the sagacity of our Commander's judgment in whatever related to navigation.

On the second, two Dutch ships being sent to lie off Anger Point, the Lieutenant sent Mr. Ficks on board one of them, to enquire news concerning England, from which our people had so long been absent. Mr. Hicks brought back the agreeable intelligence, that the Swallow, commanded by Captain Carteret, had been at Batavia two years before. In the morning of the fifth, a prow came alongside of the Endeavour, with a Dutch officer, who sent down to Mr. Cook a printed paper in English, duplicates of which he had in other

^{*} Hawkefworth, ubi supra, p. 327, 328, 329—Parkinson's Journal of a voyage to the South Seas, p. 163—169.

languages. This paper was regularly figned, in CHAP. the name of the Governor and Council of the Indies, by their Secretary, and contained nine queftions, very ill expressed, two of which only the Lieutenant thought proper to answer. These were what regarded the nation and name of his veffel, and whither she was bound. On the ninth, our 9 Oc. voyagers stood in for Patavia road, where they found the Harcourt Indiaman from England, two English private traders, and a number of Dutch ships. Immediately a boat came on board the Endeavour, and the officer who commanded having enquired who our people were, and whence they came, instantly returned with such answers as were given him. In the mean time, Mr. Cook fent a Lieutenant ashore to acquaint the Governor of his arrival, and to make an apology for not having faluted; a ceremony he had judged better to omit; as he could only make use of three guns, excepting the fwivels, which he was of opinion they submitted to ill usage. I sheard be ton bluow

It being universally agreed that the ship could not safely proceed to Europe without an examination of her bottom, our Commander determined to apply for leave to heave her down at Batavia; and for this purpose he drew up a requestion writing, which, after he had waited first upon the Governor General, and then upon the Council, was readily complied with, and he was told that he should have every thing he wanted.

In the evening of the tenth, there was a dreadful ftorm of thunder, lightning, and rain; during which the main-mast of one of the Dutch East Indiamen was split, and carried away by the deck; and the main-top-mast, and top-gallant-mast were shivered to pieces. The stroke was probably directed

CHAP, rected by an iron spindle which was at the maintop-gallant-mast-head. As this ship lay very near the Endeavour, the could fcarcely have avoided fharing the same fate, had it not been for the conducting chain, which fortunately had been just gotten up, and which conveyed the lightning over the fide of the veffel. But though she escaped the lightning, the explosion shook her like an earthquake ; and the chain, at the fame time, appeared like a line of fire. Mr. Cook has embraced this occasion of earnestly recommending similar chains to every ship; and hath expressed his hope that all who read his narrative will be warned against having an iron spindle at the mass head.

> The English gentlemen had taken up their lodge: ing and boarding at a hotel, or kind of inn, kept by the order of Government. Here they met with those impositions, in point of expence and treatment; which are too common to admit of much furprize. It was not long, however, that they submitted to ill usage. By a farther acquaintance with the manner of dealing with their hoft, and by spirited remonstrances, they procured a better furnished table Mr. Banks in a few days hired a finall house for himself and his party; and as foon as he was fettled in his new habitation. fent for Tupia, who had hitherto continued on board on account of fickness. When he quitted the thip, and after he came into the boat, he was exceedingly lifeless and dejected to but he fooher! did he enter the town than he appeared to be infpired with another, foul. A fcene to entirely new and extraordinary filled hint with amazement The houses, carriages, streets, people, and al multiplicity of other objects, rushing upon him ats once, produced an effect fimilar to what is afcribed

1770

S Nov.

to enchantment. His boy, Tayeto, expressed his C H A B. wander and delight in a still more rapturous manner. . He danced along the freets in a kind of extacy, examining every object with a refeles and eager curiofity, which was excited and gratified every moment. Tupia's attention was particularly excited by the various dreffes of the passing multitude ; and when he was informed that at Batavizevery one wore the drefe of his own country, he expressed his define of appearing in the garbrof Challeite Accordingly, South Scardoth being feat for from the thirt, he equipped himfelf with great expedition and dexterity wary rebusion

Lieutenant Gook imagined that at Batavia he should find it easy to take up what money he might: want for repairing and relating the Endeavour; but in this he was mistaken. No private person could be found who had ability and inclination to furnish the fum which was necessary. In this exigency, the Lieutenant had recourse, by a written request to the Governor, from whom he obtained an order for being supplied out of the Dutch company's treasury. viub ob or elda erew ner nadt

When our voyagers had been only nine days at Batavia, they began to feel the fatal effects of the climate and fituation. Topia, after his first flow of spirits had subsided grewevery day worse and worfe; and Tayeto was feined with an inflammation upon his ylungs. ... Mr. Bands and Dr. Solander, were amacked by fevens, and, in a little time, almost every perfor, both on board and on thore, was fick. The diffres of our people was indeed very great, and the profpect before them discouraging in the highest degree, Tupia, being defirous of breathing a freen air than among the numerous houses that obstructed it ashore, had a tent ereded for him on Cooper's Island, to which he o to dw

this poor Indian with the greatest humanity, tilly he was rendered incapable of doing it, by the violent increase of his own diforder. On the fifth of

lent increase of his own disorder. On the fifth of November, Mr. Monkhouse, the surgeon of the ship, a fensible, skilful man, whose loss was not a little aggravated by the fituation of the English, fell the first facrifice to this fatal country. Tayeto died on the ninth, and Tupia, who loved him with the tenderness of a parent, funk at once after the loss of the boy, and survived him only a few days. The diforders of Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander grew to fuch a height, that the physician declared they had no chance of preferving their lives but by removing into the country. Accordingly, a house was hired for them at the distance of about two miles from the town; where, in confequence of enjoying a purer air, and being better nurled by two Malayan women, whom they had bought, they recovered by flow degrees. At. length; Lieutenant Cook was himfelf taken ill; and out of the whole ship's company, not more

In the midst of these distresses, our Commander was diligently and vigorously attentive to the repair of his vessel. When her bottom came to be examined, she was found to be in a worse condition than had been apprehended. Her false keel and main keel were both of them greatly injured; a large quantity of the sheathing was torn off; and among several planks which were much damaged, two of them, and the half of a third, were so worn for the length of six seet, that they were not above the eighth part of an inch in thickness; and here the worms had made way quite into the timbers. In this state the Endeavour had sailed many hundred leagues, in a quarter of the globe

where

where havigation is dangerous in the highest de-CHAP. gree. It was happy for our voyagers that they were ignorant of their perilous fituation; for it must have deeply affected them, to have known that a confiderable part of the bottom of the veffel was thinner than the fole of a shoe, and that all their lives depended upon fo flight and fragile a barrier between them and the unfathomable order was carried to Mr. Hicks, who commesso

The repair of the Endeavour was carried on very much to Mr. Cook's fatisfaction. In justice to the Dutch officers and workmen, he hath de clared that, in his opinion, there is not a marine yard in the world, where a ship can be laid with more convenience, lafety, and dispatch, or repair ed with greater diligence and skilk to He was parl ticularly pleased with the manner of heaving down by two masts, and gives it a decided preferencests the method which had hitherto been practifed by the English. The Lieutenant was not one of these on whom the bigotry could be charged of adhering to old customs, in opposition to the dictates fincerity of his defire to asone regres bas nother to

TUBy the eighthroof December, the Endeavour, 8 Dec. was perfectly refitted. From that time to the twenty-fourth, our people were employed in completing her flock of water, provisions, and flores, in erecting fome new pumps and in various other necessary operations. All this business would have been effected much fooner of it had not been retarded by the general fickness of the ments In the afternoon of the twenty-fourth, dour Commander took teave of the Governor of Baravia, and of feveral other gentlemen belonging to the place, with whom he had formed connections. and to whom he had been greatly obliged for

their civilities and affiltance. In the mean while,

Ranciy

an

is Dec.

C. B A R. an accident intervened, which might have been attended with disagreeable effects. A feaman, who had run away from one of the Dutch thips in the road, entered on board the Endeavour, Upon his being reclaimed as a subject of Holland, Mr. Cook, who was on shore declared, that, if the man appeared to be a Dutchman, he faculd centainly be delivered up. When, however, the order was carried to Mr. Hicks, who commands ethon board, he refused to surrender the seaman, alleging, that he was a subject of Great Britain. born in Ireland. In this conduct Mr. Hicks act ed in perfect conformity to the Lieutenant's intention and directions. The captain of the Dutch vessel, in the next place, by a message from the Governor General, demanded the man as a subject of Denmark. To this Mr. Cook replied, that there must be some mistake in the General's mesfage, fince he would never demand of him a Dar nish feaman, whose only crime was that of preferring the English to the Dutch fervice. At the fame time the Lieutenant added, that to hew the fincerity of his defire to avoid disputes, if the man was a Dane he should be delivered up as a courtely to but that if he appeared to be an English subject, he should be kept at all events. Soon after, a letter was brought from Mr. Hicks, containing indubitable proofs that the feamen in quel tion was a subject of his Britannic majesty. This letter Mr. Gook feat to the Governor, with an affurance to his Excellency that he would not part with the man jon vany terms. A conduct fo firm and decifive produced the defired effect, no more being heard of the affair to the affair to hear selv

25 Dec.

In the evening of the twenty-fifth, our Commander went on board, together with Mr. Banks, and the rest of the gentlemen who resided constantly Stantly on there. The gentlemen, though confi-CHAP. derably better, were far from being perfectly recovered. At this time, the fick persons in the thip amounted to forty, and the rest of the company were in a very feeble condition. It was remarkable, that every individual had been ill excepting the fail maker, who was an old man between feventy and eighty years of age, and who was drunk every day, during the relidence of our people at Baravia. Three feamen, and Mr. Green's fervant, died, besides the surgeon, Tupia, and Tayeto. Tupia did not entirely fall a facrifice to the unwholesome, stagnant, and putrid air of the country. As he had been accustomed, from his birth, to fubfilt chiefly upon vegetable food, and particularly on tipe fruit, he foon contracted the disorders which are incident to a sea life, and would probably have funk under them, before the voyage of the English could have been completed, even if they had not been obliged to go to Batavia to refit their veffel

Our navigators did not stay at this place without gaining an extensive acquaintance with the productions of the country, and the manners and customs of the inhabitants. The information which was obtained on these heads is detailed at large in Dr. Hawkefworth's narrative, and will be found to constitute a very valuable addition to what was heretofore known upon the subject.

On Thursday the twenty seventh of December, the Endeavour stood out to sea; and on the fifth of January, 1771, she came to an anchor, under the south-east side of Prince's island. The design of this was to obtain a recruit of wood and water, and to procure some refreshments for the fick,

27 Dec. 5 Jan. 177 1.

[#] Hawkefworth, ubi fupra, p. 351.

CHAP, many of whom had become much worse than they were when they left Batavia. As foon as the veffel was fegured, the Lieutenant, Mr. 1771. Banks, and Dr. Solander went on shore, and were conducted, by some Indians they met with, to a person who was represented to be the king of the country. After exchanging a few compliments with his majesty, the gentlemen proceeded to business, but could not immediately come to a settle-

ment with him, in respect to the price of turtle. They were more successful in their fearch of a watering-place, having found water conveniently fituated, and which they had reason to believe would prove good. As they were going off, some of the natives fold them three turtle, under a promise that the king should not be informed of

the transaction. of mediani e

On the next day, a traffic was established with the Indians, upon fuch terms as were offered by the English; so that by night our people had plenty of turtle. The three which had been purchased the evening before, were in the mean time dreffed for the ship's company, who, excepting on the preceding day, had not, for nearly the space of four months, been once served with falt provisions. Mr. Banks, in the evening, paid his respects to the king at his palace, which was fituated in the middle of, a rice field. His majefty was builty employed in dressing his own supper; but this did not prevent him from receiving his vifitant in a very gracious manner. During the following days, the commerce with the natives for provisions was continued; in the course of which they brought down to the trading place, not only a quantity of turtle, but fowls, fish, monkies, small deer, and some vegetables. * Hawkeful Lablingra, p. 19

II lan.

On the evening of the eleventh, when Mr. CHAP. Cook went on shore to see how those of his people. conducted their bufiness who were employed in wooding and watering, he was informed that an axe had been stolen. As it was a matter of confequence to prevent others from being encouraged to commit thefts of the like kind, he resolved not to pass over the offence, but to infift upon redress from the king. Accordingly, after some altercation, his majesty promised that the axe should be restored in the morning, and the promise was faithfully performed. le; and lo

On the fifteenth, our Commander weighed, and 15 Jan. flood out for fea . Prince's island, where he lay about ten days, was formerly much frequented by the India ships of many nations, and especially those of England; but it had lately been forfaken, on account of the supposed badness of its water. This supposition, however, arose from a want of duly examining the brook by which the water is fupplied. It is, indeed, brackish at the lower part of the brook, but higher up it will be found excellent. The Lieutenant, therefore, was clearly of opinion, that Prince's island is a more eligible place for ships to touch at, than either at North Island or New Bay; from neither of which places any confiderable quantity of other refreshments can be procured.

As the Endeavour proceeded on her voyage to the Cape of Good Hope, the feeds of difease, which had been received at Batavia, appeared with the most threatening symptoms, and reduced our navigators to a very melancholy fituation. The ship was, in fact, nothing better than an

hospital,

^{*} Java Head, from which the Lieutenant took his departure, lies in latitude 60 49' fouth, and in longitude 2530 12' west.

CHAP. hospital, in which those who could go about were not fufficient for a due attendance upon those who were fick. Left the water which had been taken in at Prince's Island should have had any share in adding to the diforder tof the men, the Lieutenant ordered it to be purified with time; and as a farther remedy against infection, he directed all the parts of the veffel between the decks to be washed with winegar. The imalady had taken too deep root to be speedily eradicated. Mr. Banks was areduced fo dow by lit, sthat for fome time there was no hope of his life; and fo fatal was the disease to imany others, that almost every nightia dead body was committed to the fea. There were buried in about the course of fix weeks, Mr. Sporing, va gentleman who was one of Mr. Banks's affiltants, Mr. Parkinfon, his matural chiftory painter, Mr. Green the aftronomer, the boatfwain, the carpenter and his mate, Mr. Monk-

^{*} Mr. Charles Green (the youngest son of Mr. Johna Green of Swinton, near Rotherham, in Yorkshire, a considerable farmer, and a freeholder of the county) was born in the year 1735. The principal part of his education he derived from his added brother, the Rev. John Green, late of Denmark Street. Soho. Mr. John Green was master of a school in that place, and, after some time, took in his brother Charles, as an assistant teacher. In this situation, he made such a progress in astronomical knowledge, that, in the latter end of the year 1760, he became assistant to Dr. Bradley, at the Royal Observatory, at Greenwich. This was upon the occasion of Mr. Charles Mason's having quitted that office, to go to the Cape of Good Hope, for the purpose of observing the transit of Venus, in 1767. With Dr. Bradley, Mr. Green remained at the observatory, till the Doctor's death, which happened in 1762. Upon Mr. Bliss's appointment to the place of Astronomer Royal, Mr. Green continued to be affistant to that gentleman. As Mr. Blifs's health was very precarious, and his refidence chiefly at Oxford, the principal care of the observations devolved on Mr. Green. Indeed, he was fo ufeful to Mr. Blifs, that when, in 1763, in conjunction with Dr. Maskelyne, he was appointed by the Commissioners of the Board of Longitude to go to Barbadoes, to make observations for the trial of Mr. Harrison's time-keeper,

house the midshipman, another midshipman, the CHAP. old jolly fail-maker and his affiftant, the fhip's cook, the corporal of the marines, two of the carpenter's crew, and nine feamen. In all, the loss amounted to three and twenty persons; be-

1771.

it was agreed that a temporary affiftant only should be provided at Greenwich, till his return. Accordingly, he remained at the obfervatory till the death of Mr. Blifs, in September, 1764, and the appointment of Dr. Maskelyne, in the spring following. After this, he was employed by a number of gentlemen, who had formed a scheme of bringing water from some part of the river Coln, below Uxbridge, to Marybone. But Mr. Green having proved, by this furvey, that there would be a deficiency of fall, if the water should be taken from the tail of the lowest mill in that stream, and objections being raifed, by the proprietors of those mills, to the water's being taken above them, the defign dropped. Mr. Green's appointment, by the Royal Society, to observe, together with Lieutenant Cook, the transit of Venus in 1769, having already been related in the course of this work, it is sufficient to add, that he fell a martyr to the unwholesome air of Batavia; for though he lived to quit that place, he died twelve days afterwards, of a

dysentery, on the 29th of January, 1771.

Mr. Green was tolerably well versed in most branches of the mathematics, and had a tincture of various other sciences. Metaphysical enquiries were his favourite pursuits; and he was more fond of displaying his knowledge in this respect than was conducive to his advantage. Though he loved his friend much, he fometimes shewed that he loved his jest better, by which he made himself enemies. He was a most excellent observer. Of this Dr. Maskelyne was so well convinced, that, though they had disagreed at Barbadoes, and were not afterwards on terms of friendship, the Doctor not only proposed him to the Royal Society, as the most proper person to observe the transit of Venus, but supported his interest with great earnestness, against some others of the Society, who wished to send out a different person. The observations of Mr. Green which particularly related to the transit of Venus, were printed in conjunction with those of Lieutenant Cook. His remaining ones, which are pretty numerous, are now preparing for publication, under the direction of the Commissioners of Longitude. Mr. Green was engaged for a time, in concert with Dr. Scott, the present Rector of Simonburn, Mr. Falconer, the author of the Shipwreck, and some other persons, in writing a dictionary of arts and sciences; but he did not continue his affiftance through more than half the work. Mr. Green, as a reward for his going to Barbadoes, had been appointed purfer of the Aurora frigate, which was afterwards made choice of to earry

Dable that these calamitous events, which could not fail of making a powerful impression on the mind of Lieutenant Cook, might give occasion to his turning his thoughts more zealously to those methods of preserving the health of seamen, which he afterwards pursued with such remarkable success.

15 March.

On Friday the fifteenth of March, the Endeavour arrived off the Cape of Good Hope; and as foon as fhe was brought to an anchor, our Commander waited upon the Governor, from whom he received affurances that he should be furnished with every supply which the country could afford. His first care was to provide a proper place for the sick, whose number was not small; and a house was speedily found, where it was agreed that they should be lodged and boarded at the rate of two shillings a day for each person.

The run from Java Head to the Cape of Good Hope did not furnish many subjects of remark that could be of any great use to suture voyagers. Such observations, however, as occurred to him the Lieutenant has been careful to record, not being willing to omit the least circumstance that may contribute to the safety and facility of navi-

gation.

The Cape of Good Hope had been fo often

Mr. Vansittart, and the other Supervisors, out to India. As Mr. Green was then absent with Lieutenant Cook, his old colleague, Mr. Falconer, applied to the Commissioners of the Navy, for leave to exchange the Bristol, to which he belonged, for the Aurora. In consequence of this he was lost with her; and, probably, at no great distance, either of time or space, from where the body of her quondam purser, Mr. Green, was committed to the deep. [From the information of Mr. Wales.]

* Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 413.

described

described before our people stopped there, that CHAP. even if it had entered into my plan to give a particular account of the countries vifited by Mr. Cook, and of the manners of their inhabitants, I should have omitted what Dr. Hawkesworth hath related concerning the place. It is fufficient therefore, to fay, that the Lieutenant, having lain at the Cape to recover the fick, to procure stores, and to refit his vessel, till the fourteenth of April, 14 April. then stood out of the Bay, and proceeded in his voyage homeward. In the morning of the twentyninth, he croffed his first meridian, having circumnavigated the globe in the direction from east The confequence of this was, that he had loft a day, an allowance for which had been made at Batavia. On the first of May he arrived at 1st May. St. Helena, where he staid till the fourth to refresh; during which time Mr. Banks employed himfelf in making the complete circuit of the Island, and in visiting the places most worthy of observation.

The manner in which flaves are described as being treated in this island must be mentioned with indignation. According to our Commander's representation, while every kind of labour is performed by them, they are not furnished either with horses or with any of the various machines which art has invented to facilitate their task. Carts might conveniently be used in some parts, and where the ground is too steep for them, wheelbarrows might be employed to great advantage; and yet there is not a wheelbarrow in the whole island. Though every thing which is conveyed from place to place is done by flaves alone, they have not the fimple convenience of a porter's knot, but carry their burden upon their heads. They appeared to be a miserable race, worn out by the united operation of excessive labour and ill usage; and N 2 Mr.

CHAP. Mr. Cook was forry to observe, and to fay, that instances of wanton cruelty were much more frequent among his countrymen at St. Helena, than among the Dutch, who are generally reproached with want of humanity, both at Batavia and the Cape of Good Hope *. It is impossible for a feeling mind to avoid being concerned that fuch an account should be given of the conduct of any who are entitled to the name of Britons. The Lieutenant's reproof, if just, hath, it may be hoped, long before this reached the place, and produced some good effect +. If slavery, that difgrace to religion, to humanity, and, I will add, to found policy, must still be continued, every thing ought to be done which can tend to foften its horrors.

4 May.

When our Commander departed from St. Helena, on the fourth, it was in company with the Portland man of war, and twelve Indiamen. With this fleet he continued to fail till the tenth, when perceiving that the Endeavour proceeded much more heavily than any of the other vessels, and that the was not likely to get home fo foon as the rest, he made a fignal to speak with the Portland. Upon this Captain Elliot himself came on board, and Mr. Cook delivered to him the common log-books of his ship. and the journals of some of the officers. The

^{*}Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 159.

+ Near the conclusion of Captain Cook's second voyage, there is the following short note. "In the account given of St. Helena, in the narrative of my former voyage, I find some mistakes. Its inhabitants are far from exercising a wanton cruelty over "their flaves; and they have had wheel-carriages and porters knots for many years." [vol. ii. p. 270.] This note I infert with pleasure. Nevertheless, I cannot think that the Lieutenant could have given so strong a representation of things, if, at the time in which it was written, it had been wholly without foundation.

Endeavour, however, kept in company with the CHAP. fleet till the morning of the twenty-third, at which time there was not a fingle vessel in fight. On that day died Mr. Hicks, and in the evening his 23 May. body was committed to the fea, with the usual ceremonies. Mr. Charles Clerke, a young man extremely well qualified for the station, and whose name will hereafter frequently occur, received an order from Mr. Cook to act as Lieutenant in Mr. Hicks's room.

The rigging and fails of the ship were now become fo bad, that fomething was continually giving way. Nevertheless, our Commander pursued his course in safety; and on the tenth of June, 10 June. land, which proved to be the Lizard, was discovered by Nicholas Young, the boy who had first feen New Zealand. On the eleventh, the Lieutenant ran up the channel. At fix the next morning he passed Beachy Head; and in the afternoon of the same day he came to an anchor in the Downs, and went on shore at Deal *.

Thus ended Mr. Cook's first voyage round the world, in which he had gone through fo many dangers, explored fo many countries, and exhibited the strongest proofs of his possessing an eminently fagacious and active mind; 'a mind that was equal to every perilous enterprize, and to the boldest and most successful efforts of navigation and discovery. napottary, floo it the mogrefs to

and Council of the Royal Society were highly is tisfied with the meaner in which the trenit

Harris Doller

CHAPTER

^{*} Hawkesworth, ubi supra, p. 434. all cannot be desided, but that Prefid

CHAPTER THE THIRD.

The History of Captain Cook's Life, from the End of his first, to the Commencement of his second Voyage round the World.

CHAP. THE manner in which Lieutenant Cook had performed his circumnavigation of the globe, justly entitled him to the protection of 1771. Government, and the favour of his Sovereign. Accordingly, he was promoted to be a Commander in his Majesty's navy, by commission bearing August. date on the twenty-ninth of August, 1771 *. Mr. Cook, on this occasion, from a certain consciousness of his own merit, wished to have been appointed a Post Captain. But the Earl of Sandwich, who was now at the head of the Admiralty Board, though he had the greatest regard for our navigator, could not concede to his request, because a compliance with it would have been inconfiftent with the order of the naval service. The difference was in point of rank only, and not of advantage. A Commander has the fame pay as a Post Captain, and his authority is the same when he is in actual employment. The distinction is a necessary step in the progress to the higher honours

of the profession +.

It cannot be doubted, but that the President and Council of the Royal Society were highly satisfied with the manner in which the transit of

Sammili.

Venus

^{*} From the books of the Admiralty.

⁺ From the information of the Right Honourable the Earl of Sandwich.

Venus had been observed. The papers of Mr. CHAP. Cook and Mr. Green, relative to this subject, were put into the hands of the Astronomer Royal, to be by him digested, and that he might deduce from them the important consequences to science which resulted from the observation. This was done by him with an accuracy and ability becoming his high knowledge and character. On the twenty-first of May, 1772, Captain Cook com- 21 May. municated to the Royal Society, in a letter addreffed to Dr. Maskelyne, an " account of the "flowing of the tides in the South Sea, as ob-" ferved on board His Majesty's bark, the En-" deavour *."

The reputation our navigator had acquired by his late voyage was defervedly great; and the defire of the public to be acquainted with the new scenes and new objects which were now brought to light, was ardently excited. It is not furprize ing, therefore, that different attempts were made to fatisfy the general curiofity. There foon appeared a publication, entitled, " a Journal of a "Voyage round the World." This was the production of some person who had been upon the expedition; and, though his account was dry and imperfect, it ferved, in a certain degree, to relieve the eagerness of enquiry. The journal of Sydney Parkinson, draughtsman to Sir Joseph Banks, to whom it belonged by ample purchase, was likewise printed, from a copy surreptitiously obtained; but an injunction from the Court of Chancery for some time prevented its appearance. This work, though dishonestly given to the world, was recommended by its plates. But it was Dr. Hawkefworth's account of Lieutenant Cook's voy-

^{*} Philosophical Transactions, vol. lxii. p. 357, 358.

CHAP. age which completely gratified the public curiofity. This account, which was written by authority, was drawn up from the journal of the Lieutenant, and the papers of Sir Joseph Banks; and, besides the merit of the composition, derived an extraordinary advantage from the number and excellence of its charts and engravings, which were furnished at the expence of Government. The large price given by the booksellers for this work, and the avidity with which it was read, displayed, in the strongest light, the anxiety of the nation to be fully informed in every thing that belonged to

the late navigation and discoveries.

Captain Cook, during his voyage, had failed over the Pacific Ocean in many of those latitudes in which a fouthern continent had been expected to lie. He had afcertained that neither New Zealand nor New Holland were parts of fuch a continent. But the general question concerning its existence had not been determined by him, nor did he go out for that purpose, though some of the reasons on which the notion of it had been adopted were dispelled in the course of his navigation. It is well known how fondly the idea of a Terra Australis incognita had for nearly two centuries been entertained. Many plaufible philosophical arguments had been urged in its support, and many facts alleged in its favour. The writer of this narrative fully remembers how much his imagination was captivated, in the more early part of his life, with the hypothesis of a fouthern continent. He has often dwelt upon it with rapture, and been highly delighted with the authors who contended for its existence, and displayed the mighty consequences which would result from Though his knowledge was its being discovered. infinitely

infinitely exceeded by that of some able men who CHAP. had paid a particular attention to the subject, he did not come behind them in the sanguineness of his hopes and expectation. Every thing, however, which relates to science must be separated from fancy, and brought to the test of experiment: and here was an experiment richly deserving to be tried. The object, indeed, was of peculiar magnitude, and worthy to be pursued by a great prince, and a great nation.

Happily, the period was arrived in Britain for the execution of the most important scientific defigns. A regard to matters of this kind, though fo honourable to crowned heads, had heretofore been too much neglected even by some of the best of our princes. Our present Sovereign had already distinguished his reign by his patronage of science and literature; but the beginnings which had hitherto been made were only the pledges of future munificence. With respect to the object now in view, the gracious dispositions of his Majesty were ardently seconded by the noble Lord who had been placed at the head of the Board of Admiralty. The Earl of Sandwich was poffeffed of a mind which was capable of comprehending and encouraging the most enlarged views and schemes with regard to navigation and discovery. Accordingly, it was by his particular recommendation that a resolution was formed for the appointment of an expedition, finally to determine the question concerning the existence of a southern continent *. Quiros feems to have been the

^{*} Mr. Dalrymple had renewed the attention of the public to this object by his historical collection, in two volumes, quarto, of the feveral voyages and discoveries in the South Pacific Ocean. The first volume appeared in 1770, and the second in 1771.

CHAP, first person who had any idea that such a continent existed, and he was the first that was sent out for the sole purpose of ascertaining the fact. He did not fucceed in the attempt; and the attempts of various navigators, down to the present century, were equally unfuccessful *.

When the design of accomplishing this great object was resolved upon, it did not admit of any hefitation by whom it was to be carried into execution. No person was esteemed equally qualified with Captain Cook, for conducting an enterprize the view of which was to give the utmost possible extent to the geography of the globe, and the knowledge of navigation. For the greater advantage of the undertaking, it was determined that two ships should be employed; and much attention was paid to the choice of them, and to their equipment for the service. After mature deliberation by the Navy Board, during which particular regard was had to the Captain's wisdom and experience, it was agreed, that no veffels were fo proper for discoveries in distant unknown parts, as those which were constructed like the Endea-This opinion concurring with that of the Earl of Sandwich, the Admiralty came to a refolution, that two ships should be provided of a fimilar construction. Accordingly, two vessels, both of which had been built at Whitby, by the fame person who built the Endeavour, were purchased of Captain William Hammond, of Hull. They were about fourteen or fixteen months old at the time when they were bought, and, in Captain Cook's judgment, were as well adapted to the intended fervice as if they had been expressly constructed for that purpose. The largest of the two,

which

W

to

tı

t

^{*} Introduction to the Voyage towards the South Pole, and round the World, p. xi.

which confifted of four hundred and fixty-two CHAP. tons burthen, was named the Resolution. To the III. other, which was three hundred and thirty-fix tons burthen, was given the name of the Adven- 28 Nov. ture. On the twenty-eighth of November, 1771, Captain Cook was appointed to the command of the former; and, about the same time, Mr. Tobias Furneaux was promoted to the command of the latter. The complement of the Resolution, including officers and men, was fixed at a hundred and twelve persons; and that of the Adventure, at eighty-one. In the equipment of these ships, every circumstance was attended to that could contribute to the comfort and fuccess of the voyage. They were fitted in the most complete manner, and supplied with every extraordinary article which was fuggested to be necessary or useful. Lord Sandwich, whose zeal was indefatigable upon this occasion, visited the vessels from time to time, to be affured that the whole equipment was agreeable to his wishes, and to the satisfaction of those who were to engage in the expedition. Nor were the Navy and Victualling Boards wanting in procuring for the ships the very best of stores and provisions, with some alterations in the species of them, that were adapted to the nature of the enterprize; besides which, there was an ample supply of antiscorbutic articles, such as malt, four krout, falted cabbage, portable broth, faloup, mustard, marmalade of carrots, and inspissated juice of worth and beer.

No less attention was paid to the cause of science in general. The Admiralty engaged Mr. William Hodges, an excellent landscape painter, to embark in the voyage, in order to make drawings and paintings of such objects as could not so well be comprehended from written descriptions. Mr. John Reinhold Forster and his son were fixed

upon

CHAP. upon to explore and collect the natural history of the countries which might be vifited, and an am-\$771.

ple fum was granted by parliament for the purpose. That nothing might be wanting to accomplish the scientific views of the expedition, the Board of Longitude agreed with Mr. William Wales and Mr. William Bayley, to make astronomical observations. Mr. Wales was stationed in the Resolution, and Mr. Bayley in the Adventure. By the same Board they were furnished with the best of instruments, and particularly with four time-pieces, three constructed by Mr. Arnold, and one by Mr. Kendal on Mr. Harrison's principles *.

Though Captain Cook had been appointed to the command of the Resolution on the twentyeighth of November, 1771, fuch were the prepa-28 Nov.

rations necessary for so long and important a voyage, and the impediments which occasionally and unavoidably occurred, that the ship did not fail from Deptford till the ninth of April following,

nor did she leave Long Reach till the tenth of 10 May. May. In plying down the river, it was found necessary to put into Sheerness, in order to make fome alterations in her upper works. These the

officers of the yard were directed immediately to take in hand; and Lord Sandwich and Sir Hugh Pallifer came down to fee them executed in the

most effectual manner. The ship being again completed for fea by the twenty-fecond of June, Captain Cook on that day failed from Sheernefs,

and, on the third of July, joined the Adventure in Plymouth Sound. Lord Sandwich, in his return from a vifit to the dock-yards, having met

the Resolution on the preceding evening, his Lordship and Sir Hugh Pallifer gave the last mark

* General Introduction, ubi supra, p. xxiii.

22 June.

1772.

9 April.

3 July.

of their great attention to the object of the voy-CHAP. age, by coming on board, to affure themselves that every thing was done which was agreeable to our Commander's wishes, and that his vessel was

equipped entirely to his fatisfaction.

At Plymouth Captain Cook received his instructions; with regard to which, without entering into a minute detail of them, it is sufficient to say, that he was sent out upon the most enlarged plan of discovery that is known in the history of navigation. He was instructed not only to circumnavigate the whole globe, but to circumnavigate it in high southern latitudes, making such traverses, from time to time, into every corner of the Pacific Ocean not before examined, as might sinally and effectually resolve the much agitated question about the existence of a southern continent, in any part of the southern hemisphere to which access could be had by the efforts of the boldest and most skilful navigators.

CHAPTER

^{*} Cook's Voyage towards the South Pole, and round the World, p. 1, 2, 3. Introduction to the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, p. xix.

CHAPTER THE FOURTH.

1772.

The History of Captain Cook's Life during his fecond Voyage round the World.

on the thirteenth of July, Captain Cook failed from Plymouth, and on the twenty-ninth of the same month anchored in Funchiale Road, in the island of Madeira. Having obtained a supply of water, wine, and other necessaries at

a supply of water, wine, and other necessaries at August that island, he left it on the first of August, and sailed to the southward. As he proceeded in his voyage, he made three puncheons of beer of the inspissated juice of malt; and the siquor produced was very brisk and drinkable. The heat of the weather, and the agitation of the ship, had hitherto withstood all the endeavours of our people to prevent this juice from being in a high state of fermentation. If it could be kept from fermenting, it would be a most valuable article at sea.

The Captain having found that his stock of water would not last to the Cape of Good Hope, without putting his men to a scanty allowance, resolved to stop at St. Jago, one of the Cape de Verd islands, for a supply. At Port Praya, in this island, he anchored on the tenth of August, and by the sourceenth had completed his water, and procured some other refreshments; upon which he set sail, and prosecuted his course. He embraced the occasion, which his touching at St. Jago afforded him, of giving such a delineation and description of Port Praya, and of the supplies there

10.

to

n

ft

ir

to

ci

m

th

fie

th

fu

ta

be

de

fh

or

th

ni

th

fo

CT

pr

bl

12

fo

m

T

M

lef

to be obtained, as might be of service to future CHAP.

navigators.

On the twentieth of the month, the rain poured down upon our voyagers, not in drops, but in 20 August. streams; and the wind, at the same time, being variable and rough, the people were obliged to attend so constantly upon the decks, that few of them escaped being completely soaked. circumstance is mentioned to shew the method that was taken by Captain Cook to preserve his men from the evil consequences of the wet to which they had been exposed. He had every thing to fear from the rain, which is a great promoter of fickness in hot climates. But to guard against this effect, he purfued fome hints that had been fuggested to him by Sir Hugh Pallifer and Captain Campbell, and took care that the ship should be aired and dried with fires made between the decks, and that the damp places of the veffel should be smoked; beside which, the people were ordered to air their bedding, and to wash and dry their clothes, whenever there was an opportunity. The refult of these precautions was, that there was not one fick person on board the Refolution.

Captain Cook, on the eighth of September, 8 Sept. crossed the line in the longitude of 8° west, and proceeded, without meeting any thing remarkable, till the eleventh of October, when at 6h 24m 12', by Mr. Kendal's watch, the moon rose about four digits eclipfed; foon after which the gentlemen prepared to observe the end of the eclipse. The observers were, the Captain himself, and Mr. Forster, Mr. Wales, Mr. Pickersgill, Mr. Gilbert, and Mr. Harvey.

Our Commander had been informed, before he left England, that he failed at an improper feafon

11 O&.

CHAP. of the year, and that he should meet with much calm weather, near and under the line. But though fuch weather may happen in some years, 1772. it is not always, or even generally, to be expected. So far was it from being the case with Captain Cook, that he had a brisk fouth-west wind in those very latitudes where the calms had been predicted: nor was he exposed to any of the tornadoes, which are fo much spoken of by other navigators. On the twenty-ninth of the month, between eight and nine o'clock at night, when our voyagers were near the Cape of Good Hope, the whole sea, within the compass of their fight, became at once, as it were, illuminated. The Captain had been formerly convinced, by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, that fuch appearances in the ocean were occasioned by infects. Mr. Forster, however, seemed disposed to adopt a different To determine the question, our Comopinion. mander ordered fome buckets of water to be drawn up from along-fide the ship, which were found full of an innumerable quantity of small globular infects, about the fize of a common pin's head, and quite transparent. Though no life was perceived in them, there could be no doubt of their being living animals, when in their own proper element; and Mr. Forster became now well fatisfied that they were the cause of the sea's illumination *.

> On the thirtieth, the Resolution and Adventure anchored in Table Bay; soon after which Captain Cook went on shore, and, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, and the two Mr. Forsters, waited on Baren Plettenberg, the Governor of the Cape of Good Hope, who received the gentlemen

r

th

A

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 5—15.—Forster's Voyage round the World. Vol. 1. p. 54—57.

with

with great politeness, and promised them every CHAP. affistance the place could afford. From him our Commander learned that two French ships from the Mauritius, about eight months before, had discovered land, in the latitude of 48° south, along which they failed forty miles, till they came to a bay, into which they were upon the point of entering, when they were driven off and separated in a hard gale of wind. Previously to this misfortune, they had lost some of their boats and people, that had been fent to found the bay. Captain Cook was also informed by Baron Plettenberg. that in the month of March, two other French ships from the island of Mauritius, had touched at the Cape in their way to the South Pacific Ocean; where they were going to make discoveries, under the command of M. Marion.

From the healthy condition of the crews both of the Resolution and Adventure, it was imagined by the Captain that his stay at the Cape would be very short. But the necessity of waiting till the requifite provisions could be prepared and collected, kept him more than three weeks at this place; which time was improved by him in ordering both the ships to be caulked and painted, and in taking care that, in every respect, their condition should be as good as when they left England.

On the twenty-second of November, our Com- 22 Nov. mander failed from the Cape of Good Hope, and proceeded on his voyage, in fearch of a fouthern continent. Having gotten clear of the land, he directed his course for Cape Circumcision; and judging that cold weather would foon approach. he ordered flops to be ferved to fuch of the people as were in want of them, and gave to each man the fearnought jacket and trowfers allowed by the Admiralty. On the twenty-ninth, the wind, which

was

17721 6 Dec.

CHAP. was west-north-west, increased to a storm, that continued, with some few intervals of moderate weather, till the fixth of December *. By this gale, which was attended with hail and rain, and which blew at times with fuch violence that the ships could carry no sails, our voyagers were driven far to the eastward of their intended course, and no hopes were left to the Captain of reaching Cape Circumcifion. A still greater misfortune was the loss of the principal part of the live stock on board, confifting of fheep, hogs, and geefe. the same time, the sudden transition from warm, mild weather, to weather which was extremely cold and wet, was so severely felt by our people, that is was necessary to make some addition to their allowance of spirits, by giving each of them a dram on particular occasions.

Our navigators, on the tenth of December, began to meet with islands of ice +. One of these islands was so much concealed from them by the haziness of the weather, accompanied with snow and fleet, that they were fleering directly towards it, and did not fee it till it was at a less distance than that of a mile. Captain Cook judged it to be about fifty feet high, and half a mile in circuit. It was flat at the top, and its fides role in a perpendicular direction, against which the fea broke to a great height. The weather continuing to be hazy, the Captain, on account of the ice islands, was obliged to proceed with the utmost caution. Six of them were passed on the twelfth, some of which were nearly two miles in circuit, and fixty

10.

tl

ta

ge

^{*} The ships were now in the latitude of 480 41' fourh, and longitude 18° 24' eait.

⁺ They were then in the latitude of 500 40' fouth, and longitude 200' east of the Cape of Good Hope.

feet high: nevertheless, fuch were the force and C H A P. height of the waves, that the fea broke quite over . IV. them. Hence was exhibited a view that for a few moments was pleasing to the eye; but the pleafure was foon swallowed up in the horror which feized upon the mind, from the prospect of danger. For if a ship should be so unfortunate as to get on the weather fide of one of thefe illands, the would be dashed to pieces in a moment.

The veffels, on the fourteenth, were stopped by 14 Dec. an immense field of low ice, to which no end could be seen, either to the east, west, or south. In different parts of this field, were islands or hills of ice, like those which our voyagers had found floating in the fea, and twenty of which had prefented themselves to view the day before. Some of the people on board imagined that they faw land over the ice, and Captain Cook himfelf at first entertained the same sentiment. But upon more narrowly examining these ice hills, and the various appearances they made when feen through the haze, he was induced to change his opinion. On the eighteenth, though in the morning our navigators had been quite imbayed, they were, notwithstanding, at length enabled to get clear of the field of ice. They were, however, at the same time, carried in among the ice islands, which perpetually fucceeded one another; which were almost equally dangerous; and the avoiding of which was a matter of the greatest difficulty. But perilous as it is to fail in a thick fog, among these floating rocks, as our Commander properly called them; this is preferable to the being entangled with immense fields of ice under the same circumstances. In this latter case the great danger to be apprehended, is the getting fast in the

CHAP. ice; a fituation which would be alarming in the

highest degree *. A shi tadi

It had been a generally received opinion, that fuch ice as hath now been described, is formed in bays and rivers. Agreeably to this supposition, our voyagers were led to believe that land was not far distant, and that it lay to the fouthward behind the ice. As, therefore, they had failed above thirty leagues along the edge of the ice, without finding a paffage to the fouth, Captain Cook determined to run thirty or forty leagues to the eaft, and afterwards to endeavour to get to the fouthward. If in this attempt he met with no land or other impediment, his design was to stretch behind the ice, and thus to bring the matter to a decision. The weather, at this time, affected the fenses with a feeling of cold much greater than that which was pointed out by the thermometer +, fo that the whole crew complained. In order the better to enable them to fustain the severity of the cold, the Captain directed the fleeves of their jackets to be lengthened with baize; and had a cap made for each man of the fame stuff, strengthened with canvals. These precautions greatly contributed to their comfort and advantage. It is worthy of obfervation, that although the weather was as sharp, on the twenty-fifth of December, as might have been expected, in the same month of the year, in any part of England, this was the middle of fummer with our navigators. Some of the people now appearing to have symptoms of the scurvy, fresh

* Cook, ubi supra, p. 15-27. Our people were now in latitude 55° 8°, and in longitude 24° 3′.

† It was from 30 to 34.

cur unitamess. In this latter cafe the great dan-

e trow be apprehended. Is the getting fall in the

25 Dec.

29 Dec.

31.

Jan.

wort was given them every day, prepared, under CHAP. the direction of the furgeons, from the malt which

had been provided for the purpose.

By the twenty-ninth, it became fufficiently afcertained, from the course our Commander had purfued, that the field of ice, along which the thips had failed, did not join to any land, as had been conjectured *. At this time, Captain Cook came to a refolution, provided he met with no impediment, to run as far west as the meridian of Cape Circumcisson. While he was profecuting this defign, a gale arofe, on the thirty-first, which brought with it fuch a fea as rendered it very dangerous for the veffels to remain among the ice; and the danger was increased by discovering an immense field to the north, which extended farther than the eye could reach. As our voyagers were not above two or three miles from this field, and were furrounded by loofe ice, there was no time to deliberate. They hauled to the fouth; and though they happily got clear, it was not till the ships had received feveral hard knocks from the loofe pieces, which were of the largest kind. On Friday the first of January, 1773, the gale abated; and, on the next day in the afternoon, our people had the felicity of enjoying the fight of the moon, the face of which had been feen by them but once fince they had departed from the Cape of Good Hope. Hence a judgment may be formed of the fort of weather they had been exposed to, from the time of their leaving that place. The present oppor-

1773.

Our people were now in the latitude of 59' 12', and in longitude 190 1', east; which was three more to the west than when they first fell in with the field ice.

CHAP. tunity was eagerly feized, for making feveral obfervations of the fun and moon . To more barill adit

Captain Cook was now nearly in the fame longitude which is affigned to Cape Circumcifion, and about ninety-five leagues to the fouth of the latitude in which it is faid to lie. At the fame time, the weather was so clear, that land might have been feen at the distance of fourteen or fifteen leagues. He concluded, it, therefore, to be very probable, that what Bouvet took for land was nothing but mountains of ice, furrounded by loofe or field ice. Our present navigators had naturally been led into a fimilar mistake. The conjecture, that fuch ice as had lately been feen was joined to land, was a very plaufible one, though not founded on fact. Upon the whole, there was good reason to believe, that no land was to be met with, under this meridian, between the latitude of fifty-five and fifty-nine, where some had been supposed to exist.

Amidst the obstructions Captain Cook was exposed to, from the ice islands which perpetually fucceeded each other, he derived one advantage from them, and that was, a supply of fresh water. Though the melting and stowing away the ice takes up some time, and is, indeed, rather tedious, this method of watering is otherwise the most expeditions our Commander had ever known. The water produced was perfectly sweet and well tasted. Upon the ice islands penguins, albatroffes, and other birds were frequently feen. It had hitherto been the received opinion, that fuch birds never go far from land, and that the fight of

^{*} The longitude deduced from these observations was 9° 34' 30" eaft.—The latitude was 589 53' 30" fouth.

them is a fure indication of its vicinity. That this CHAP. opinion is not well founded, at least where ice islands exist, was now evinced by multiplied experience, wohl was to all says sold

a beb.

By Sunday the seventeenth of January, Captain 17 Jan. Cook reached the latitude of 67° 15' fouth, when he could advance no farther. At this time the ice was entirely closed to the fouth, in the whole extent from east to west-south-west, without the least appearance of any opening. The Captain, therefore, thought it no longer prudent to perfevere in failing fouthward; especially as the summer was already half spent, and there was little reason to hope that it would be found practicable to get round the ice. Having taken this resolution, he determined to proceed directly in fearch of the land which had lately been discovered by the French, and as, in pursuing his purpole, the weather was clear at intervals, he fpread the ships a-breast four miles from each other, in order the better to investigate any thing that might lie in their way. On the first of February, our voyagers were in the latitude of 48° 30', fouth, and in longitude 58° 7' east, nearly in the meridian of the island of St. Mauritius. This was the situation in which the land faid to have been discovered by the French was to be expected; but as no figns of it had appeared, our Commander bore away to the eaft. Captain Furneaux, on the fame day, informed Captain Cook that he had just seen a large float of sea or rock weed, and about it several of the birds called divers. These were certain signs of the vicinity of land, though whether it lay to the east or west could not possibly be known. Our Commander, therefore, formed the defign of proceeding in his present latitude four or five degrees of longitude to the west of the meridian he was

CHAP now in, and then to pursue his researches eastward. The west and north-west winds, which had continued for some days, prevented him from carrying this purpose into execution. However, he was convinced, from the perpetual high feathe had lately met with, that there could be no great extent of land to the west. of some and become

2 Feb.

While Captain Cook, on the next day, was steering eastward * Captain Furneaux told him that he thought the land was to the north-west of them; as he had, at one time, observed the sea to be smooth when the wind blew in that direction. This observation was by no means conformable to the remarks which had been made by our Commander himself. Nevertheless, such was his readiness to attend to every suggestion, that he resolved to clear up the point, if the wind would admit of his getting to the west in any reasonable time. The wind, by veering to the north, did admit of his pursuing the fearch; and the result of it was, his conviction that if any land was near, it could only be an ifland of no confiderable extent, right

Captain Cook and his philosophical friends, while they were traverfing this part of the fouthern ocean, paid particular attention to the variation of the compass, which they found to be from 27° 50', to 30° 26' west. Probably the mean of the two extremes, viz. 29° 4, was the nearest the truth, as it coincided with the variation obferved on board the Adventure. One unaccount? able circumstance is worthy of notice, though it did not now occur for the first time. It is, that when the fun was on the starboard of the ship, the variation was the least; and when on the larboard Commander, therefore, form

fide, the greatest.

On the eighth, our Commander, in consequence

of no fignals having been answered by the Adven- CHAP. ture, had reason to apprehend that a separation had taken place. After waiting two days, during which guns were kept discharging, and false fires were burnt in the night, the fact was confirmed; fo that the Resolution was obliged to proceed alone in her voyage. As she pursued her course, penguins and other birds, from time to time, appeared in great numbers; the meeting with which gave our navigators some hopes of finding land, and occasioned various speculations with regard to its fituation. Experience, however, convinced them that no stress was to be laid on such hopes. They were so often deceived, that they could no longer look upon any of the oceanic birds, which frequent high latitudes, as fure figns of the vicinity of land.

In the morning of the leventeenth, between midnight and three o'clock, lights were feen in the heavens, fimilar to those which are known in the northern hemisphere, by the name of the Aurora Borealis. Captain Cook had never heard that an Aurora Auftralis had been feen before. The officer of the watch observed that it sometimes broke out in spiral rays, and in a circular form; at which time its light was very strong, and its appearance beautiful. oIt was not perceived to have any particular direction. On the contrary, at various times, it was conspicuous in different parts of the heavens, and diffuled its light throughout the whole atmosphere, aguab from floor

On the twentieth, our navigators imagined that they faw land to the fouth-west. Their conviction of its real existence was so strong, that they had no doubt of the matter; and accordingly they endeavoured to work up to it, in doing which the weather was favourable to their purpose. However, what had been taken for land proved company only

17 Feb.

CHAP. only to be clouds, that in the evening entirely difappeared, and left a clear horizon, in which nothing could be discerned but ice islands. At night the Aurora Australis was again seen, and the appearance it assumed was very brilliant and luminous. It first discovered itself in the east, and in a short time spread over the whole heavens.

23 Feb.

24.

In the night of the twenty-third, when the thip was in latitude 61° 52' fouth, and longitude 05° 2' east, the weather being exceedingly stormy, thick, and hazy, with fleet and fnow, our voyagers were on every fide furrounded with danger. In fuch a fituation, it was natural for them to wish for day-light; but day-light, when it came, ferved only to encrease their apprehensions, by exhibiting those huge mountains of ice so their view. which the darkness had prevented them from seeing. These unfavourable circumstances, at so advanced a feafon of the year, discouraged Captain Cook from putting in execution a resolution he had formed of once more croffing the antarctic circle. Accordingly, early in the morning of the twenty-fourth, he stood to the north, with a very hard gale, and a very high fea, which made great destruction among the ice islands. But so far was this incident from being of any advantage to our navigators, that it greatly encreased the number of pieces they had to avoid. The large pieces which broke from the ice islands, were found to be much more dangerous than the islands themfelves. While the latter rose so high out of the water, that they could generally be feen, unless the weather was very thick and hazy, before our people nearly approached them, the others could not be discerned, in the night, till they were under the ship's bows. These dangers, however, were now become so familiar to the Captain and his company,

company, that the apprehentions they caused were C H A P. never of long duration; and a compensation was, in some degree, made for them, by the seasonable supplies of fresh water which the ice islands afforded, and by their very romantic appearance. The foaming and dashing of the waves into the curious holes and caverns which were formed in many of them, greatly heightened the scene; and the whole exhibited a view that at once filled the mind with admiration and horror, and could only be described by the hand of an able painter.

> 25 to 28. Feb.

In failing from the twenty-fifth to the twentyeighth, the wind was accompanied with a large hollow fea, which rendered Captain Cook certain that no land, of any confiderable extent, could lie within a hundred or a hundred and fifty leagues from east to fouth-west. Though this was still the fummer feafon in that part of the world, and the weather was become fomewhat warmer than it had been before, yet fuch were the effects of the cold, that a few having farrowed nine pigs in the morning, all of them, notwithstanding the utmost care to prevent it, were killed before four o'clock in the afternoon. From the same cause, the Captain himself and several of his people had their fingers and toes chilblained. For fome days afterward, the cold confiderably abated; but still it could not be faid that there was fummer weather, according to our Commander's ideas of fammer in the northern hemisphere as far as fixty degrees of latitude, which was nearly as far as he had then been alook to weiv a driw basics.

As he proceeded on his voyage, from the twentyeighth of February to the eleventh of March, he II March, had ample reason to conclude, from the swell of the fea and other circumstances, that there could

forme

28 Feb.

be

CHAP. be no land to the fouth, but what must lie at a great distance. do a bas : a metub anol to reven

The weather having been clear on the thirteenth 1773.

14 March. and fourteenth, Mr. Wales had an opportunity of getting some observations of the sun and moon; the results of which, reduced to noon, when the latitude was 58° 22° fouth, gave 136° 22° eaft longitude. Mr. Kendal's and Mr. Arnold's watches gave each of them 134° 42'; and this was the first and only time in which they had pointed out the fame longitude fince the ships had departed from England. The greatest difference, however, between them, fince our voyagers had left the Cape, had not much exceeded two degrees! (53) wouldn't

From the moderate, and what might almost be called pleasant weather, which had occurred for two or three days, Captain Cook began to wish that he had been a few degrees of latitude farther fouth; and he was even tempted to incline his course that way. But he soon met with weather which convinced him that he had proceeded full -far enough; and that the time was approaching when these seas could not be navigated without enduring intense cold. As he advanced in his course, he became perfectly affured afrom repeated proofs, that he had left no land behind him in the direction of west-fouth-west; and that no land lay to the fouth on this fide fixty degrees of latitude. He came, therefore, to a resolution, on the seventeenth , to quit the high fouthern latitudes, and to proceed to New Zealand, with a view of looking for the Adventure, and of refreshing his people. He had, also,

^{*} The Refolution was now in latitude 590 7 fouth, and longitude 146° 53' east.

fome thoughts, and even a defire of vifiting the CHAP. east coast of Van Diemen's Land, in order to fatisfy himself whether it joined the coast of New 1773. South Wales. The wind, however, not permitting him to execute this part of his defign, he shaped his course to New Zealand, in fight of which he arrived on the twenty fifth, and where he came 25 March. to anchor on the day following, in Dusky Bay. He had now been a hundred and seventeen days at sea, during which time he had sailed three thousand six hundred and sixty leagues, without having once come within sight of land.

After so long a voyage, in a high southern latitude, it might reasonably have been expected that many of Gaptain Cook's people would be ill of the scurvy. This, however, was not the case. So salutary were the effects of the sweet wort, and several articles of provision, and especially of the frequent airing and sweetening of the ship, that there was only one man on board who could be said to be much afflicted with the disease; and even in that man, it was chiefly occasioned by a bad habit of body, and a complication of other disorders.

As our Commander did not like the place in which he had anchored, he fent Lieutenant Pickersgill over to the south-east side of the bay, in search of a better; and the Lieutenant succeeded in sinding a harbour that was in every respect desirable. In the mean while, the sishing-boat was very successful; returning with fish sufficient for the whole crew's support; and in the morning of the next day, as many were caught as served for dinner. Hence were derived certain hopes of being plentifully supplied with this article. Nor

CHAP. did the shores and woods appear less destitute of wild fowl: fo that our people had the prospect of enjoying with eafe, what, in their fituation, might be called the luxuries of life. Thefe agreeable circumstances determined Captain Cook to stay fome time in the bay, in order to examine it thoroughy; as no one had ever landed before on any of the fouthern parts of New Zealand, done of

27 March.

On the twenty-seventh, the ship entered Pick-ERSGILL HARBOUR; for fo it was called, from the name of the gentleman by whom it had first been discovered. Here wood, for fuel and other purpofes, was immediately at hand; and a fine ftream of fresh water was not above a hundred vards from the flern of the veffel. Our voyagers, being thus advantageously situated, began vigoroully to prepare for their necessary occupations, by clearing places in the woods, in order to fet up the astronomer's observatory, and the forge for the iron work, and to erect tents for the failmakers and coopers. They applied themselves, also, to the brewing of beer from the branches or leaves of a tree which greatly resembled the American black spruce. Captain Cook was persuaded, from the knowledge which he had of this tree. and from the fimilarity it bore to the foruce, that, with the addition of inspissated juice of wort and melasses, it would make a very wholesome liquor. and supply the want of vegetables, of which the country was destitute. It appeared, by the event, that he was not mistaken in his judgment.

Several of the natives were feen on the twentyeighth, who took little notice of the English, and were very thy of access; and the Captain did not choose to force an intercourse with them, as he had been instructed, by former experience, that the best method of obtaining it was to leave the

time

23.

time and place to themselves. While our Com- CHAP. mander continued in his present situation, he took IV. every opportunity of examining the bay. As he was profecuting his furvey of it, on the fixth of 6 April. April, his attention was directed to the north fide, where he discovered a fine capacious cove, in the bottom of which is a fresh-water river. On the west fide are several beautiful cascades; and the shores are so steep, that water might directly be conveyed from them into the ship. Fourteen ducks, besides other birds, having been shot in this place, he gave it the name of DUCK COVE. When he was returning in the evening, he met with three of the natives, one man and two women, whose fears he foon diffipated, and whom he engaged in a conversation, that was little understood on either fide. The youngest of the women had a volubility of tongue that could not be exceeded; and she entertained Captain Cook, and the gentlemen who accompanied him, with a dance.

By degrees, our Commander obtained the goodwill and confidence of the Indians. His prefents, however, were at first received with much indifference, hatchets and spike-nails excepted. At a visit, on the twelfth, from a family of the natives, the Captain, perceiving that they approached the ship with great caution, met them in a boat, which he quitted when he came near them, and went into their canoe. After all, he could not prevail upon them to go on board the Resolution; but at length they put on shore in a little creek, and seating themselves abreast of the English vessel, entered into familiar conversation with several of the officers and feamen; in which they paid a much greater regard to some, whom they probably mistook for females, than to others. So well, indeed, were they now reconciled to our voyagers, that

they

TV. tance of a hundred yards from the ship's wateringplace. Captain Cook, in his interview with them,
had caused the bagpipes and fife to play, and the
drum to beat. The two former they heard with
apparent insensibility; but the latter excited in
them a certain degree of attention.

18 April.

On the eighteenth, a Chief, with whom some connections had already been formed, was induced, together with his daughter, to come on board the Resolution. Previously to his doing it, he prefented the Captain with a piece of cloth and a green talk hatchet. He gave also a piece of cloth to Mr. Forster; and the girl gave another to Mr. Hodges. Though this custom of making presents, before any are received, is common with the natives of the South Sea isles, our Commander had never till now feen it practifed in New Zealand. Another thing performed by the Chief before he went on board, was the taking of a fmall green branch in his hand, with which he struck the ship's fide feveral times, repeating a fpeech or prayer. This manner, as it were, of making peace, is likewife prevalent among all the nations of the South Seas. When the Chief was carried into the cabin, he viewed every part of it with some degree of furprize; but it was not possible to fix his attention to any one object for a fingle moment. The works of art appeared to him in the fame light as those of nature, and were equally distant from his powers of comprehension. He and his daughter seemed to be the most struck with the number of the decks, and other parts of the ship.

As Captain Cook proceeded in examining Dusky Bay, he occasionally met with some few more of the natives, with regard to whom he used every mode of conciliation. On the twentieth, the

Chief

Chief and his family, who had been more intimate CHAP. with our navigators than any of the rest of the Indians, went away, and never returned again. This was the more extraordinary, as in all his visits he had been gratified with presents. From different persons he had gotten nine or ten hatchets, and three or four times that number of large spike-nails, besides a variety of other articles. So far as these things might be deemed riches in New Zealand, he was undoubtedly become by far the

most wealthy man in the whole country.

One employment of our voyagers, while in Dusky Bay, consisted in seal-hunting, an animal which was found ferviceable for three purpofes. The skins were made use of for rigging, the fat afforded oil for the lamps, and the flesh was eaten. On the twenty-fourth, the Captain, having five 24 April. geefe remaining of those he had brought with him from the Cape of Good Hope, went and left them at a place to which he gave the name of Goose Cove. This place he fixed upon for two reasons: first, because there were no inhabitants to disturb them; and fecondly, because here was the greatest supply of proper food; so that he had no doubt of their breeding, and hoped that in time they might fpread over the whole country, to its eminent advantage. Some days afterward, when every thing belonging to the ship had been removed from the shore, the fet fire to the topwood, in order to dry a piece of ground, which he dug up, and fowed with feveral forts of garden feeds. The foil, indeed, was not fuch as to promife much fuccess to the planter; but it was the best that could be difcovered no embrod abidw bas

The twenty-fifth of April, was the eighth fair day our people had fuccessively enjoyed; and there Priciola of lis of was I ne trees a

25.

CHAP. was reason to believe that such a circumstance was very uncommon in the place where they now lay, and at that feafon of the year. This favourable 1773. weather afforded them the opportunity of more fpeedily completing their wood and water, and of putting the ship into a condition for sea. On the evening of the twenty-fifth, it began to rain; and the weather was afterward extremely variable, being, at times, in a high degree wet, cold, and stormy. Nothing, however, prevented Captain Cook from profecuting, with his usual fagacity and diligence, his fearch into every part of Dusky Bay; and, as there are few places in New Zealand where necessary refreshments may be so plentifully obtained as in this bay, he hath taken care to give fuch a description of it, and of the adjacent country, as may be of fervice to fucceeding navigators. Although this country lies far remote from what is now the trading part of the world, yet, as he justly observes, we can by no means tell what use

> The various anchoring places are delineated on our Commander's chart, and the most convenient of them he has particularly described. Not only about Dusky Bay, but through all the southern part of the western coast of Tavai-poenammoo, the country is exceedingly mountainous. A profpect more rude and craggy is rarely to be met with; for inland there are only to be feen the fummits of mountains of a tremendous height, and confisting of rocks that are totally barren and naked, excepting where they are covered with But the land which borders on the fea fnow. coast is thickly cloathed with wood, almost down to the water's edge; and this is the case with regard to all the adjoining islands. The trees are

> future ages may derive from the discoveries made in the present.

of

of various kinds, and are fit for almost every pos- CHAP. fible use. Excepting in the river Thames, Captain Cook had not found finer timber in all New Zealand; the most considerable species of which is the spruce-tree; for that name he had given it from the fimilarity of its foliage to the American fpruce, though the wood is more pondrous, and bears a greater resemblance to the pitch pine. Many of these trees are so large, that they would be able to furnish main-masts for fifty gun ships. Amidst the variety of aromatic trees and shrubs which this part of New Zealand produced, there were none which bore fruit fit to be eaten. But for a farther account of the foils, vegetable productions, and animals of the coast, I must refer to the Captain's own narrative; only taking notice, that the country was not found fo destitute of quadrupeds as was formerly imagined.

As Dusky Bay presented many advantages to our navigators, fo it was attended with some difagreeable circumstance. There were great numbers of small black fand flies, which were troublefome to a degree that our Commander had never experienced before. Another evil arose from the continual quantity of rain that occurred in the bay. This might, indeed, in part proceed from the feafon of the year: but it is probable that the country must at all times be subject to much wet weather, in consequence of the vast height, and vicinity of the mountains. It was remarkable that the rain, though our people were perpetually exposed to it, was not productive of any evil confequences. On the contrary, fuch of the men as were fick and complaining when they entered the bay, recovered daily, and the whole crew foon became strong and vigorous. So happy a circumstance could only be attributed to the healthi-P 2 ness

CHAP. ness of the place, and the fresh provisions it afforded; among which, the beer was a very material article.

The inhabitants of Dusky Bay are of the same race with the other natives of New Zealand, speak the same language, and adhere nearly to the same customs. Their mode of life appears to be a wandering one; and though they are sew in number, no traces were remarked of their families being connected together in any close bonds of union or friendship.

While the Resolution lay in the bay, Mr. Wales made a variety of scientific observations, relative to latitude and longitude*, the variation of the compass, and the diversities of the tides; a short account of which Captain Cook has given in his voyage, for the instruction and benefit of the

public +.

When Captain Cook left Dusky Bay, he directed his course for Queen Charlotte's Sound, where he expected to find the Adventure. This was on the eleventh of May, and nothing remarkable occurred till the seventeenth, when the wind at once flattened to a calm, the sky became suddenly obscured by dark dense clouds, and there was every prognostication of a tempest. Soon after, six waterspouts were seen, four of which rose and spent themselves between the ship and the land; the sifth was at a considerable distance on the other side of the vessel; and the sixth, the progressive motion of which was not in a straight, but in a crooked line, passed within sifty yards of the stern of

11 May.

^{*} The latitude of Mr. Wales's observatory at Pickersgill harbour was 45° 47' 26'h. south,; and its longitude 166° 18' east. + Cook, ubi supra, p. 69—102.

19.

the Resolution, without producing any evil effect CHAP. As the Captain had been informed that the firing of a gun would diffipate water-spouts, he was forry that he had not tried the experiment. But, though he was near enough, and had a gun ready for the purpose, his mind was so deeply engaged in viewing these extraordinary meteors, that he forgot to give the necessary directions.

On the next day, the Resolution came within 18 May. fight of Queen Charlotte's Sound, where Captain Cook had the fatisfaction of discovering the Adventure; and both ships felt uncommon joy at thus meeting again, after an absence of fourteen weeks. As the events which happened to Captain Furneaux, during the separation of the two vessels, do not fall within the immediate defign of the prefent narrative, it may be sufficient to observe, that he had an opportunity of examining, with fomewhat more accuracy than had hitherto been done, Van Diemen's Land; and his opinion was, that there are no straights between this land and New Holland, but a very deep bay. He met, likewise, with farther proofs that the natives of New Zealand are eaters of human flesh *.

The morning after Captain Cook's arrival in Queen Charlotte's Sound, he went himself, at day-break, to look for scurvy-grass, celery, and other vegetables; and he had the good fortune to return with a boat-load, in a very short space of time. Having found that a fufficient quantity of these articles might be obtained for the crews of both the ships, he gave orders that they should be boiled, with wheat and portable broth, every day for breakfast; and with peafe and broth for dinner. Experience had taught him that the

vegetables

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 103, 105, 115, 118, 120.

CHAP. vegetables now mentioned, when thus dreffed, are extremely beneficial to feamen, in removing the various fcurbutic complaints to which they are 1773.

fubject.

Our Commander had entertained a defire of visiting Van Diemen's Land, in order to inform himself whether it made a part of New Holland. But as this point had been, in a great measure, cleared up by Captain Furneaux, he came to a resolution to continue his researches to the east, between the latitudes of 41° and 46; and he directed accordingly, that the ships should be gotten ready for putting to fea as foon as possible. On the twentieth, he fent on shore the only ewe and ram that remained of those which, with the intention of leaving them in this country, he had brought from the Cape of Good Hope. Soon after he vifited feveral gardens, that by order of Captain Furneaux had been made and planted with various articles; all of which were in such a flourishing state that, if duly attended to, they promifed to be of great utility to the natives. The next day, Captain Cook himself set some men to work to form a garden on Long Island, which he flocked with different feeds, and particularly with the roots of turnips, carrots, parsnips, and pota-These were the vegetables that would be of the most real use to the Indians, and of these it was eafy to give them an idea, by comparing them with fuch roots as they themselves knew. On the twenty-fecond, Captain Cook received the unpleasant intelligence that the ewe and ram, which with fo much care and trouble he had brought to this place, were both of them found dead. It was supposed that they had eaten fome poisonous plant; and by this accident all

21.

12.

all the Captain's hopes of stocking New Zealand C H A P. with a breed of sheep were instantly blasted.

1773.

The intercourse which our great navigator had with the inhabitants of the country, during this his second visit to Queen Charlotte's Sound, was of a friendly nature. Two or three families took up their abode near the ships, and employed themselves daily in fishing, and in supplying the English with the fruits of their labour. No small advantage hence accrued to our people, who were by no means such expert sishers as the natives, nor were any of our methods of sishing equal to theirs. Thus in almost every state of society particular arts of life are carried to perfection; and there is something which the most polished nations may learn from the most barbarous.

On the second of June, when the Resolution 2 June. and Adventure were almost ready to put to sea, Captain Cook sent on shore, on the east side of the sound, two goats, a male and a semale; and Captain Furneaux lest, near Cannibal Cove, a boar and two breeding sows. The gentlemen had little doubt but that the country would, in time, be stocked with these animals, provided they were not destroyed by the Indians before they became wild. Afterwards there would be no danger; and as the natives knew nothing of their being lest behind, it was hoped that it might be some time before they would be discovered.

It is remarkable that, during Captain Cook's fecond visit to Charlotte Sound, he was not able to recollect the face of any one person whom he had seen there three years before. Nor did it once appear, that even a single Indian had the least knowledge of our Commander, or of any of our people who had been with him in his last voyage. Hence he thought it highly probable, that the

greatest

CHAP. greatest part of the natives who inhabited this found in the beginning of the year 1770, had either fince been driven out of it, or had removed, of their own accord, to some other situation. Not one third of the inhabitants were there now, that had been feen at that time. Their strong hold on the Point of Motuara was deferted, and in every part of the found many forfaken habitations were discovered. In the Captain's opinion, there was not any reason to believe that the place had ever been very populous, From comparing the two yoyages together, it may be collected, that the Indians of Eahei-nomauwe are in somewhat of a more improved state of society than those of Tavai-poenammoo.

4 June.

Part of the fourth of June was employed by Captain Cook in visiting a Chief and a whole tribe of the natives, confisting of between ninety and a hundred persons, including men, women, and children. After the Captain had distributed some presents among these people, and shewn to the Chief the gardens which had been made, he returned on board, and spent the remainder of the day in the celebration of his Royal Master's nativity. Captain Furneaux and all his officers were invited upon the occasion; and the seamen were enabled, by a double allowance, to partake of the general joy.

As fome might think it an extraordinary step in our Commander to proceed in discoveries so far fouth as forty-fix degrees of latitude, in the very depth of winter, he has recorded his motives for this part of his conduct. Winter, he acknowledges, is by no means favourable for discoveries. Nevertheless, it appeared to him to be necessary that fomething should be done in that feafon, in order to lessen the work in which he was engaged;

and lest he should not be able to finish the disco- CHAP. very of the fouthern part of the South Pacific Ocean in the enfuing fummer. Besides, if he should discover any land in his route to the east. he would be ready to begin to explore it, as foon as ever the feafon should be favourable. Independently of all these considerations, he had little to fear; having two good thips well provided. and both the crews being healthy. Where then could he better employ his time? If he did nothing more, he was at least in hopes of being enabled to point out to posterity, that these seas may be navigated, and that it is practicable to purfue difcoveries, even in the depth of winter. Such was the ardour of our navigator for profecuting the ends of his voyage, in circumstances which would have induced most men to act a more cautious part!

During Captain Cook's stay in the Sound, he had observed that the second visit to this country had not mended the morals of the natives of either fex. He had always looked upon the females of New Zealand as more chafte than the generality of Indian women. Whatever favours a few of them might have granted to the people in the Endeavour. fuch intercourfes usually took place in a private manner, and did not appear to be encouraged by But now the Captain was told that the male Indians were the chief promoters of a shameful traffic, and that, for a spikenail, or any other thing they valued, they would oblige the women to prostitute themselves, whether it were agreeable or contrary to their inclinations. At the fame time, no regard was paid to the privacy which decency required. The account of this fact must be read with concern by every well wisher to the

good

CHAP. good order and happiness of society, even without IV. adverting to confiderations of a higher nature.

On the feventh of June, Captain Cook put to 1773. 7 June. fea from Queen Charlotte's Sound, with the Adventure in company. For the nautical part of the route from New Zealand to Otaheite, which continued till the fifteenth of August, I shall refer my readers to the Captain's voyage; and shall only felect fuch circumstances as are more immediately fuitable to the defign of the present narrative. 29 July. was found, on the twenty-ninth of July, that the crew of the Adventure were in a fickly state. Her cook was dead, and about twenty of her best men were rendered incapable of duty by the fcurvy and flux. At this time, no more than three men were on the fick lift on board the Refolution; and only one of these was attacked with the scurvy. Some others, however, began to discover the symptoms

Captain Cook could not account for the prevalence of the scurvy being so much greater in the Adventure than in the Resolution, unless it was owing to the crew of the former's being more scurbutic when they arrived in New Zealand than the crew of the latter, and to their eating few or no vegetables while they lay in Queen Charlotte's Sound. This arose partly from their want of knowing the right sorts, and partly from the dislike which seamen have to the introduction of a new diet. Their aversion to any unusual change of food is so great, that it can only be

of it; and accordingly, recourse was had to wort, marmalade of carrots, and the rob of le-

^{*} Cook's Voyages, ubi supra, p. 121-130.

overcome by the fleady and persevering example CHAP. and authority of a commander. Many of Captain Cook's people, officers as well as common failors, difliked the boiling of celery, scurvy-grass, and other greens with the peas and wheat; and by fome the provision, thus prepared, was refused to be eaten. But, as this had no effect on the Captain's conduct, their prejudice gradually fubfided: they began to like their diet as much as the rest of their companions; and, at length, there was hardly a man in the ship who did not attribute the freedom of the crew from the fcurvy, to the beer and vegetables which had been made use of at New Zealand. Henceforward, whenever the feamen came to a place where vegetables could be obtained, our Commander feldom found it necesfary to order them to be gathered; and, if they were scarce, happy was the person who could lay hold on them first.

On the first of August, when the ships were in August. the latitude of 25° 1, and the longitude of 134° 6' west, they were nearly in the same situation with that which is affigned by Captain Carteret for Pitcairn's Island, discovered by him in 1767. For this island, therefore, our voyagers diligently looked; but faw nothing. According to the longitude in which he had placed it, Captain Cook must have passed it fifteen leagues to the west. But as this was uncertain, he did not think it prudent to lofe any time in fearthing for it, as the fickly state of the Adventure's people required as speedy an arrival as possible at a place of refreshment. A fight of it, however, would have been of use in verifying, or correcting, not only the longitude of Pitcairn's Island, but of the others discovered by Captain Carteret in that neighbourhood. It is a ciminution of the value of that gentleman's

CHAP. gentleman's voyage, that his longitude was not confirmed by astronomical observations, and that hence it was liable to errors, the correction of

which was out of his power.

As Captain Cook had now gotten to the northward of Captain Carteret's tracks, he no longer entertained any hopes of discovering a continent. Islands were all that he could expect to find, until he returned again to the fouth. In this and his former voyage, he had croffed the ocean in the latitude of 40 and upwards, without meeting any thing which could, in the leaft, induce him to believe that he should attain the great object of his pursuit. Every circumstance concurred to convince him that, between the meridian of America and New Zealand, there is no fouthern continent; and that there is no continent farther to the fouth, unless in a very high latitude. This, however, was a point too important to be left to opinions and conjectures. It was to be determined by facts; and the ascertainment of it was appointed, by our Commander, for the employment of the enfuing fummer.

It was the fixth of August before the ships had 6 August. the advantage of the trade wind *. This they got at fouth-east, being at that time in the latitude of 19' 36' fouth, and the longitude of 131° 32' west. As Captain Cook had obtained the fouth-east trade wind, he directed his course to the west-north-west; not only with a view of keeping in with the strength of the wind, but also to get to the north of the islands discovered in his former voyage, that he might have a chance

> of meeting with any other islands which might lie in the way. It was in the track which

^{*}The not meeting with the fouth-east trade wind sooner is no new thing in this fea.

1773-

had been purfued by M. de Bougainville that our CHAP. Commander now proceeded. He was forry that, he could not spare time to fail to the north of this track; but at present, on account of the sickly flate of the Adventure's crew, the arriving at a place where refreshments could be procured, was an object superior to that of discovery. of the islands which were passed by Captain Cook, he gave the names of Resolution Island, Doubtful Island, Furneaux Island, and Adventure Island *. They are supposed to be the same that were seen by M. de Bougainville; and these with several others, which constitute a cluster of low and half drowned isles, that gentleman distinguished by the appellation of the Dangerous Archipelago. fmoothness of the sea sufficiently convinced our navigators that they were furrounded by them, and that it was highly necessary to proceed with the utmost caution, especially in the night +.

Early in the morning, on the fifteenth of Au- 15 August. gust, the ships came within fight of Osnaburg Island, or Maitea, which had been discovered by Captain Wallis. Soon after, Captain Cook acquainted Captain Furneaux that it was his intention to put into Oaiti-piha Bay, near the foutheast end of Otaheite, for the purpose of procuring what refreshments he could from that part of the island, before he went down to Matavai. At fix in the evening the island was seen bearing west; and our people continued to advance towards it

^{*} Resolution Island is in latitude 17° 24' south, and longitude 141° 39' west; Doubtful Island, latitude 17° 20', longitude 141° 38'; Furneaux Island, latitude 17° 5', longitude 143° 16; and Adventure Island, latitude 17° 4', longitude 144° 30' west.

⁺ Cook's Voyages, ubi fupra, p. 131-143.

IV. 1773.

CHAP, till midnight, when they brought to till four o'clock in the morning; after which they failed in for the land with a fine breeze at east. At daybreak, they found themselves within the distance of half a league from the reef; and, at the fame time, the breeze began to fail them, and was at last succeeded by a calm It now became necessary for the boats to be hoisted out, in order to tow off the ships; but all the efforts of our voyagers, to keep them from being carried near the reef, were insufficient for the purpose. As the calm continued, the fituation of the vessels became still more dangerous. Captain Cook, however, entertained hopes of getting round the western point of the reef, and into the bay. But, about two o'clock in the afternoon, when he came before an opening or break of the reef, through which he had flattered himself that he might get with the ships, he found, on fending to examine it, that there was not a sufficient depth of water. Nevertheless, this opening caused such an indraught of the tide of flood through it, as was very near proving fatal to the Resolution; for as soon as the vessels got into the stream, they were carried towards the reef with great impetuofity. moment the Captain perceived this, he ordered one of the warping machines, which was held in readiness, to be carried out with about four hundred fathoms of rope; but it did not produce the least effect; and our navigators had now in profpect the horrors of shipwreck. They were not more than two cables length from the breakers; and, though it was the only probable method which was left of faving the ships, they could find no bottom to anchor. An anchor, however, they did drop; but before it took hold, and brought them up, the Resolution was in less than three fathom

fathom water, and struck at every fall of the sea, C HAP. which broke close under her stern in a dreadful furf, and threatened her crew every moment with destruction. Happily, the Adventure brought up without striking. Presently, the Resolution's people carried out two kedge anchors, with hawfers to each; and these found ground a little without the bower. By heaving upon them, and cutting away the bower anchor, the ship was gotten afloat, where Captain Cook and his men lay for some time in the greatest anxiety, expecting every minute that either the kedges would come home, or the hawfers be cut in two by the rocks. At length, the tide ceased to act in the same direction; upon which the Captain ordered all the boats to try to tow off the veffel. Having found this to be practicable, the two kedges were hoved up; and at that moment a light air came off from the land, by which the boats were fo much affifted, that the Resolution soon got clear of all danger. Our Commander then ordered all the boats to affift the Adventure; but before they reached her, she was under sail with the land breeze, and in a little time joined her companion, leaving behind her three anchors, her coasting cable, and two hawfers, which were never recovered. Thus were our voyagers once more fafe at fea, after narrowly escaping being wrecked on the very island at which, but a few days before, they had most ardently wished to arrive. It was a peculiarly happy circumstance, that the calm continued, after bringing the ships into so dangerous a state. For if the sea breeze, as is usually the case, had fet in, the Resolution must inevitably have been loft, and probably the Adventure likewife.

During the time in which the English were in this critical fituation, a number of the natives were an board the Relotation, and no bad

radiana

Nevertheless, they seemed to be insensible of our people's danger, shewing not the least surprize, joy, or fear, when the ships were striking; and they went away a little before sun-set, quite unconcerned. Though most of them knew Captain Cook again, and many enquired for Mr. Banks and others who had been with the Captain before, it was remarkable that not one of them asked for

17 August.

On the seventeenth, the Resolution and Adventure anchored in Oaiti-piha Bay, immediately upon which they were crowded with the inhabitants of the country, who brought with them cocoanuts, plantains, bananoes, apples, yams, and other roots, which were exchanged for nails and beads. To fome who called themselves chiefs. our Commander made prefents of shirts, axes, and feveral articles beside, in return for which they promifed to bring him hogs and fowls; a promife which they did not perform, and which, as might be judged from their conduct, they had never had the least intention of performing. In the afternoon of the same day, Captain Cook landed in company with Captain Furneaux, for the purpose of viewing the watering-place, and of founding the disposition of the natives. The article of water, which was now much wanted on board, he found might conveniently be obtained, and the inhabitants behaved with great civility. Notwithstanding this civility, nothing was brought to market, the next day, but fruit and roots, though it was faid that many hogs were feen about the houses in the neighbourhood. The cry was, that they belonged to Waheatoua the Earee de hi, or king; who had not yet appeared, nor, indeed, any other chief of note. Among the Indians that came on board the Resolution, and no small number

number of whom did not scruple to call them CHAP. selves Earees, there was one of this fort, who had been entertained in the cabin most of the day, and to all of whose friends Captain Cook had made prefents, as well as liberally to himself. At length, however, he was caught taking things which did not belong to him, and handing them out of the quarter gallery. Various complaints of the like nature being, at the fame time, made against the natives who were on deck, our Commander turned them all out of the ship. His cabin guest was very rapid in his retreat; and the Captain was so exasperated at his behaviour, that after the Earee had gotten to some distance from the Resolution, he fired two musquets over his head, by which he was so terrified, that he quitted his canoe, and took to the water. Captain Cook then fent a boat to take the canoe; but when the boat approached the shore, the people on land began to pelt her with stones. The Captain, therefore, being in some pain for her safety, as she was unarmed, went himself in another boat to protect her, and ordered a great gun, loaded with ball, to be fired along the coast, which made all the Indians retire from the shore, and he was fuffered to bring away two canoes without the least shew of opposition. In a few hours peace was restored, and the canoes were returned to the first person who came for them.

It was not till the evening of this day that any one enquired after Tupia, and then the enquiry was made by only two or three of the natives. When they learned the cause of his death, they were perfectly fatisfied; nor did it appear to our Commander that they would have felt a moment's uneafiness, if Tupia's decease had proceeded from any other cause than sickness. They were as little

!-

0

h

e

at

or

d,

ns

all er concerned

1.1. 1773:

CHAP. concerned about Actourou, the man who had gone away with M. de Bougainville. But they were continually asking for Mr. Banks, and for feveral others who had accompanied Captain Cook

in his former voyage. dil 26

Since that voyage, very confiderable changes had happened in the country. Toutaha, the regent of the greater peninfula of Otaheite, had been killed in a battle which was fought between the two kingdoms about five months before the Refolution's arrival; and Otoo was now the reigning prince. Tubourai Tamaide, and several more of the principal friends to the English, had fallen in this battle, together with a large number of the common people. A peace subfilted at prefent, between the two grand divisions of the island.

20 August.

On the twentieth, one of the natives carried off a musquer belonging to the guard on shore. Captain Cook, who was himself a winness of the transaction, fent fome of his people after him; but this would have been to very little purpole, if the thief had not been intercepted by feveral of his own countrymen, who parfued him voluntarily, knocked him down, and returned the mufquet to the English. This act of justice prevented our Commander from being placed in a difagreeable lituation. If the natives had not given their immediate affistance, it would scarcely have been in his power to have recovered the mufquet by any gentle means whatever; and if he had been obliged to have recourse to other methods, he was fure of losing more than ten times its value.

The fraud of one who appeared as a Chief, is, perhaps, not unworthy of notice. This man, in a visit to Captain Cook, prefented him with a quantity of fruit; among which were a number of

their liquor by our people, and afterwards thrown overboard. These the Chief had picked up, and tied so artfully in bundles, that at first the deception was not perceived. When he was informed of it, without betraying the least emotion, and affecting a total ignorance of the matter, he opened two or three of the nuts himself, fignified that he was satisfied of the fact, and then went on thore and sent wife quantity of plantains and banances. The ingenoity and the impudence of fraud are not folely the productions of polished society.

Captain Cook, son the twenty third, had an in. 23 Augusterview with Waheatoua, the result of which was, that our mavigators obtained this day, as much pork as fornished a meal so the crews of both the vessels. In the Captain's last woyage, Waheatoue, who was other dittle more than a boy, was called Tearee, but having succeeded to his father's sauthority, he had assumed his father's name of the control of the

The fruits which were procured at Walti-piha Bay contributed greatly to the recovery of the fick people belonging to the Adventure. Many of them, who had been fo ill as to be incapable of moving without affiliance, were, in the compais of a few days, so far redovered that they were able to walk about of themselves. When the Resolution entered the bay, she had but she scorburic man on board. A marine, who had lengtheen fick, and who died, the second day after her armival, of a complication of disorders, had not the least mixture of the scurve.

On the twenty fourth, the ships put to densiand arrived the next evening in Matawai Baying Before they could come to an anohor, the decks were crowded with the hatives, many of whom Gapfain Cook knew, and by most of subom he was well and house to a very continuous seed.

ling

..

CHAP, remembered. Among a large multitude of people, who were collected together upon the shore, was Otoo the king of the island. Our Commander paid him a vifit on the following day, at Oparree, the place of his refidence; and found him to be a fine, personable, well-made man, fix feet high, and about thirty years of age. The qualities of his mind were not correspondent to his external appearance: for when Captain Gook endeavoured to obtain from him the promife of a visit on board, he acknowledged that he was afraid of the guns, and, indeed, manifested in all his actions that he was a prince of a timorous dispotervier with Wabaroug, the refuie of which noith

Upon the Captain's return from Oparree, he found the tents, and the aftronomer's observatories; fet up, on the fame foot from which the tranfit of Venus had been observed in 1769. The fick, being twenty in number from the Adventure, and one from the Resolution, all of whom were ill of the scurvy, he ordered to be landed; and he appointed a guard of marines on shore, under the command of Lieutenant Edgeumbe.

27 August. On the twenty-seventh, Otoo was prevailed upon, with some degree of reluctance, to pay our Commander a vifit. He came attended with a numerous train, and brought with him fruits, a hog, two large fish, and a quantity of cloth; for which he and all his retinue were gratified with fuitable prefents. When Captain Cook conveyed his guests to land, he was met by a venerable lady, the mother of the late Toutaha, who feized him by both hands, and burst into a flood of tears, faying Toutaba Tiyo no Toutce matty Toutaba; that is, "Toutaha, your friend, or the " friend of Cook, is dead." He was fo much affected with her behaviour, that it would have been impossible for him to have refrained from ming-

ling his tears with her's, had not Otoo, who was CHAP. displeased with the interview, taken him from her. It was with difficulty that the Captain could obtain permission to see her again, when he gave her an axe and fome other articles. Captain Furneaux, at this time, prefented the king with two fine goats, which, if no accident befel them, might be expected to multiply.

1773.

Several days had paffed in a friendly intercourse with the natives, and in the procuring of provifions, when, in the evening of the thirtieth, the 30 August. gentlemen on board the Resolution were alarmed with the cry of murder, and with a great noise on shore, near the bottom of the bay, and at a distance from the English encampment. Upon this, Captain Cook, who suspected that some of his own men were concerned in the affair, immediately dispatched an armed boat, to know the cause of the disturbance, and to bring off such of his people as should be found in the place. He fent, also, to the Adventure, and to the post on shore, to learn who were missing; for none but those who were upon duty were absent from the Resolution. The boats speedily returned with three marines and a feaman. Some others, likewife, were taken, belonging to the Adventure; and all of them being put under confinement, our Commander, the next morning, ordered them to be punished according to their deserts. He did not find that any mischief had been done, and the men would confess nothing. Some liberties which they had taken with the women had probably given occasion to the disturbance, To whatever cause it was owing, the natives were so much alarmed, that they fled from their habitations in the dead of night, and the alarm was spread many miles along the coast. In the morning, when Captain

: Sept.

2.

3.

CHAP, Captain Cook went to vifit Ordo, by appointment, he found that he had removed, or rather fled, to a great distance from the usual place of his abode, After arriving where he was, it was some hours before the Captain could be admitted to the fight of him; and then he complained of the riot of the preceding evening spices on it dollar stage

The fick being nearly recovered, the water completed, and the necessary repairs of the ships finished, Captain Cook determined to put to fea without delay. Accordingly, on the first of September, he ordered every thing to be removed from the shore, and the vessels to be unmoored, in which employment his people were engaged the greater part of the day. In the afternoon of the same day, Lieutenant Pickerfgill returned from Attahourou, to which place he had been fent by the Captain, for the purpose of procuring some hogs that had been promifed. In this expedition, the Lieutenant had feen the celebrated Oberea, who has been so much the object of poetical fancy. Her fituation was very humble, compared with what it had formerly been. She was not only altered much for the worfe in her person, but appeared to be poor, and of little or no confequence or authority in the island. In the evening a favourable wind having fprung up, our Commander put to fea; on which occasion he was obliged to dismiss his Otaheite friends sooner than they wished to depart; but well fatisfied with his kind and-liberal treatment *. Milton 2 thoo bloom 1500

From Matavai Bay Captain Cook directed his course for the island of Huaheine, where he intended to touch. This island he reached the next day, and, early in the morning of the third of September, made fail for the harbour of

* Cook, ubi fupra, p. 144-159.

Owharre,

Owharre, in which he foon came to an anchor CHAP. The Adventure, not happening to turn into the harbour with equal facility, got ashore on the north fide of the channel; but, by the timely affiftance which Captain Cook had previously provided, in case such an accident should occur, she was gotten off again, without receiving any damage. As foon as both the thips were in fafety, our Commander, together with Captain Furneaux, landed upon the illand, and was received by the natives with the utmost cordiality. A trade immediately commenced; fo that our navigators had a fair prospect of being plentifully supplied with fresh pork and fowls, which, to people in their fituation, was a very defirable circumstance. On the fourth, Lieutenant Pickersgill sailed with the cutter, on a trading party, toward the fouth end of the ifle. Another trading party was also sent on shore near the thips, which party Captain Cook attended himfelf, to fee that the bufiness was properly conducted at the first setting out, this being a point of no small importance. Every thing being settled to his mind, he went, accompanied by Captain Furneaux and Mr. Forster, to pay a visit to his old friend Oree, the Chief of the island. This visit was preceded by many preparatory ceremonies. Among other things, the Chief fent to our Commander the inscription engraved on a small piece of pewter, which he had left with him in July 1760. It was in the bag that Captain Cook had made for it, together with a piece of counterfeit English coin, and a few beads, which had been put in at the same time; whence it was evident what particular care had been taken of the whole. After the previous ceremonies had been discharged, the Captain wanted to go to the king, but he was informed that the king would come

CHAP. to him. Accordingly, Oree went up to our Commander, and fell on his neck, and embraced him; nor was it a ceremonious embrace, for the tears which trickled down the venerable old man's cheeks, fufficiently bespoke the language of his heart. The presents which Captain Cook made to the Chief on this occasion, confisted of the most valuable articles he had; for he regarded him as a father. Oree, in return, gave the Captain a hog, and a quantity of cloth, promifing that all the wants of the English should be supplied; and it was a promife to which he faithfully adhered. Indeed, he carried his kindness to Captain Cook fo far, as not to fail fending him every day, for his table, a plentiful supply of the very best of ready-dressed fruit and roots.

Hitherto all things had gone on in the most agreeable manner; but on Monday the fixth, feveral circumstances occurred, which rendered it an unpleasant and troublesome day. When our Commander went to the trading-place, he was informed that one of the inhabitants had behaved with remarkable infolence. The man was completely equipped in the war habit, had a club in each hand, and seemed bent upon mischief. Captain Cook took, therefore, the clubs from him, broke them before his eyes, and, with fome difficulty, compelled him to retire. About the fame time, Mr. Sparrman, who had imprudently gone out alone to botanize, was affaulted by two men, who stripped him of every thing which he had about him, excepting his trowfers, and struck him again and again with his own hanger, though happily without doing him any harm. When they had accomplished their purpose, they made off; after which another of the natives brought a piece of cloth to cover him, and conducted him to the trading.

trading-place, where the inhabitants, in a large CHAP. number, were assembled. The instant that Mr. Sparrman appeared in the condition now described, they all flew with the utmost precipitation. Captain Cook, having recalled a few of the Indians, and convinced them that he should take no step to injure those who were innocent, went to Oree to complain of the outrage. When the Chief had heard the whole affair related, he wept aloud, and many other of the inhabitants did the same. After the first transports of his grief had subsided, he began to exposulate with his people, telling them (for fo his language was understood by the English) how well Captain Cook had treated them, both in this and his former voyage, and how base it was in them to commit fuch actions. He then took a minute account of the things of which Mr. Sparrman had been robbed, and, after having promised to use his utmost endeavours for the recovery of them, defired to go into the Captain's boat. At this, the natives, apprehensive doubtless for the safety of their prince, expressed the utmost alarm, and used every argument to diffuade him from so rath a measure. All their remonstrances, however, were in vain. He hastened into the boat; and as foon as they faw that their beloved Chief was wholly in our Commander's power, they fet up a great outcry. Indeed, their grief was inexpressible: they prayed, entreated, nay, attempted to pull him out of the boat; and every face was bedewed with tears. Even Captain Cook himself was fo moved by their diffress, that he united his entreaties with theirs, but all to no purpose, Oree infisted upon the Captain's coming into the boat, which was no fooner done than he ordered it to be put off. His fifter was the only person among the Indians who behaved with a becoming m.igna-

CHAP. magnanimity on this occasion; for, with a spirit equal to that of her royal brother, the alone did not oppose his going. It was his defign, in coming into the boat of the English, to proceed with them in fearch of the robbers. Accordingly, he went with Captain Cook, as far as it was convenient, by water, when they landed, entered the country, and travelled some miles inland; in doing which the Chief led the way, and enquired after the criminals of every person whom he saw. In this fearch he would have gone to the very extremity of the island, if our Commander, who did not think the object worthy of so laborious a purfuit, had not refused to proceed any farther. Befides, as he intended to fail the next morning, and all manner of trade was stopped in consequence of the alarm of the natives, it became the more necellary for him to return, that he might restore things to their former state. It was with great reluctance that Oree was prevailed upon to discontinue the fearch, and to content himself with fending, at Captain Cook's request, some of his people for the things which had been carried off. When he and the Captain had gotten back to the boat, they found there the Chief's fifter, and feveral other persons, who had travelled by land to the place. The English gentlemen immediately stepped into their boat, in order to return on board, without fo much as asking Oree to accompany them; notwithstanding which, he infisted upon doing it; nor could the opposition and entreaties of those who were about him induce him to defift from his purpose. His fifter followed his example, uninfluenced, on this occasion, by the supplications and tears of her daughter. Captain Cook amply rewarded the Chief and his fifter for the confidence they had placed in him; and, after dinner, conveyed

veyed them both on thore, where fome hundreds C.H.A.P. of people waited to receive them, many of whom embraced Oree with tears of joy. All was now peace and gladness: the inhabitants crowded in from every part, with fuch a plentiful fupply of hogs, fouls, and vegetable productions, that the English presently filled two boats; and the Chief himself presented the Captain with a large hog and a quantity of fruit. Mr. Sparrman's hanger, the only thing of value which he had loft, was brought back, together with part of his coat; and our navigators were told, that the remaining articles should be restored the next day. Some things which had been stolen from a party of officers, who had gone out a shooting, were returned in like manner.

The transactions of this day have been the more particularly related, as they thew the high opinion which the Chief had formed of our Commander. and the unreserved confidence that he placed in his integrity and bonour. Oree had entered into a folemn friendship with Captain Cook, according to all the forms which were customary in the country; and he feemed to think that this friendthip could not be broken by the act of any other persons. It is justly observed by the Captain, that another Chief may never be found, who, under similar eircumstances, will act in the same manner. Orce, indeed, had nothing to fear: for it was not our Commander's intention to hurt a hair of his head, or to detain him a moment longer than was agreeable to his own defire. But of this how could be and his people be affured? They were not ignorant, that when he was once in Captain Cook's power, the whole force of the island would not be sufficient to recover him, and that they must have complied with any demands,

7 Sept.

therefore, of the inhabitants, for their Chief's and their own fafety, had a reasonable foundation.

Early on the feventh, while the fhips were unmooring, the Captain went to pay his farewel vifit to Oree, and took with him fuch prefents as had not only a fancied value, but a real utility. He left, also, with the Chief the inscription plate that had before been in his possession, and another small copper plate, on which were engraved these words: "Anchored here, his Britannic Majesty's ships, Resolution and Adventure, September, 1773." These plates, together with some medals, were put up in a bag; of which Oree promised to take care, and to produce them to the first ship or ships that should arrive at the island. Having, in return, given a hog to Captain Cook, and loaded his boat with fruit, they took leave of each other, when the good old Chief embraced our Commander with tears in his eyes. Nothing was mentioned, at this interview, concerning the remainder of Mr. Sparrman's property. As it was early in the morning, the Captain judged that it had not been brought in, and he was not willing to speak of it to Oree, lest he should give him pain about things which there had not been time to recover. The robbers having foon afterwards been taken, Oree came on board again, to request that our Commander would go on shore, either to punish them, or to be present at their punishment; but this not being convenient to him, he left them to the correction of their own Chief. It was from the Island of Huaheine that Captain Furneaux received into his ship a young man named Omai, a native of Ulietea, of whom fo much hath fince been known and written. This choice Captain Cook at first disapproved, as thinking that the youth was not a proper fample of the

the inhabitants of the Society Islands; being infe CHAP. rior to many of them in birth and acquired rank, and not having any peculiar advantage in point of shape, figure, or complexion. The Captain afterwards found reason to be better satisfied with Omai's having accompanied our navigators to Challar ile determined, therefore, il ochnalgna

During the short stay of the vessels at Huaheine, our people were very successful in obtaining supplies of provisions. No less than three hundred hogs, befides fowls and fruit, were procured; and had the ships continued longer at the place, the quantity might have been greatly increased. Such was the fertility of this small island, that none of these articles of refreshment were seemingly diminished, but appeared to be as plentiful as of the English boats, and interined that the rays

From Huaheine our navigators failed for Ulietea, where trade was carried on in the usual manner, and a most friendly intercourse renewed between Captain Cook and Oreo, the Chief of the island. Here Tupia was enquired after with particular eagerness, and the enquirers were perfectly fatisfied with the account which was given of the occasion of that Indian's decease.

On the morning of the fifteenth, the English 15 Sept. were furprized at finding that none of the inhabitants of Ulietea came off to the ships, as had hithertobben customary. 5. As two men belonging to the Adventure had flayed on shore all night, contrary to orders, Captain Cook's first conjectures were, that the natives had stripped them, and were afraid of the revenge which would be taken of the infult. This, however, was not the cafe. The men had been treated with great civility, and

segree of comfort and advantage *. * Cook, ubi fupra, p. 161-171.

£773.

CHAP. could alligh no cause for the precipitate shight of the Indians. All that the Captain could learn was, that leveral were kalled, and others wounded, by the guns of the English. This information alarmied him for the lafety of some of our people, who had been fent out in two boats to the Island of Otaha. He determined, therefore, if possible, to fee the Chief himfelf. When he came up to him, Oreo threw his aims around our Commander's meck, and burft into tears; in which he was accompanied by all the women, and forme of the meng fo that the lamentation became general. Aftonishment alone kebt Captain Cook from joining in their grief. At dast, the whole which the could collect from his tempuries was, that the natives had been alarmed on account of the absence of the English boats, and imagined that the Captain, upon the supposition of the defertion of this men, would use violent means for the recovery of his loss on When the matter was explained, it was acknowledged that another single inhabitant, or a fingle Englishman, ihadebeen hurt. This grounds less confernation displayed in a faring light the timorous disposition of the people of the Society Islands. the occasion of that ledian's deceale.

Our navigators were as faceelsful in procuring provisions in Ulietea as they had been at Huaheine. Captain Cookinged, that the number of hogs obtained amounted to four hundreds or upwards: many of them, indeed, were only roalters, while others exceeded a hundred pounds in weight; but the general itum was from forty to fixty: A larger quantity was offered than the thips could contain; forthat our countrymen were enabled to proceed on their voyage with motimall degree of comfort and advantage *. ook, whi furen, p e

Cook, ubi fupra, p. 171-180.

Our Commander, by his fecond visit to the So-CHAP. ciety Islands, gained a farther knowledge of their IV. general state, and of the customs of the inhabitants: It appeared that a Spanish ship had been lately at Otaheite, and the natives complained that a disease had been communicated to them by the people of this vessel, which, according to their account, affected the head, the throat, and the flomach, and at length ended in death. With regard to a certain diforder, the effects of which have fo fatally been felt in the later ages of the world, Captain Cook's enquiries could not abfolutely determine whether it was known to the islanders before they were visited by the Europeanso If it was of recent origin, the introduction of it was, without a diffentient voice, ascribed to the voyage of M. de Bougainville.

One thing which our Commander was folicitous to afcertain, was, whether human facrifices constituted a part of the religious customs of these people. The man of whom he made his enquiries, and feveral other natives, took fome pains to explain the matter; but, from our people's ignorance of the language of the country, their explication could not be understood. Captain Cook afterwards learned from Omai, that the inhabirants of the Society Islands offer human facrifices to the Supreme Being. What relates to funeral ceremonies excepted, all the knowledge he could obtain concerning their religion was very imperfect and defective. men and to findement

The Captain had an opportunity, in this voyage, of rectifying the great injustice which had been done to the women of Otaheite and the neighbouring isles. They had been represented as ready, without exception, to grant the last favour to any man who would come up to their price:

IV. 1773.

CHAP, price: but our Commander found that this was by no means the cafe. The favours both of the married women and of the unmarried, of the better fort, were as difficult to be obtained in the Society Islands as in any other country whatever. Even with respect to the unmarried semales of the lower class, the charge was not indiscriminately. true. There were many of those who would not admit of indecent familiarities. The fetting this subject in a proper light, a subject upon which Dr. Hawkefworth had enlarged more than wifdom feemed to require, must be considered as one of the agreeable effects of Captain Cook's fecond voyage. Every enlightened mind will rejoice at what conduces to the honour of human nature in general, and of the female fex in particular. Chaftity is so eminently the glory of that fex, and, indeed, is fo effentially connected with the good order of society, that it must be a satisfaction to reflect, that there is no country, however ignorant or barbarous, in which this virtue is not regarded as an object of moral obligation. but well

This voyage enabled our Commander to gain fome farther knowledge concerning the geography of the Society Isles; and he found it highly probable, that Otaheite is of greater extent than he had computed it in his former estimation *. The astronomers did not neglect to set up their observatories, and to make observations suited to their ain concerning their religion was vert alorque

17 S. pt.

On the seventeenth of September, Captain Cook

101 qu sues bluow of w nem vec

^{*} The latitude of Oaiti-piha Bay, in Otaheite, was found to be 17° 46' 28" fouth, and the longitude 0° 21' 25" h. east from Point Venus; or 1490 13 24" weft from Greenwich.

⁺ Cook, ubi supra, p. 181-188.

1 Oa.

failed from Ulietea, directing his course to the CHAP. west, with an inclination to the fouth. Land was discovered on the twenty-third of the month, to which he gave the name of Harvey's Island *. On 23 Sept. the first of October, he reached the island of Middleburg. While he was looking about for a landing-place, two canoes, each of them conducted by two or three men, came boldly along-fide the ship, and some of the people entered without helicommander with so good an opinion of the inha-This mark of confidence inspired our bitants, that he determined, if possible, to pay them a visit, which he did the next day. Scarcethem a vilit, which he did the next day. Scarcely had the veffels gotten to an anchor before they
were furrounded by a great number of canoes,
full of the natives, who brought with them cloth,
and various curiofities, which they exchanged for
nails, and fuch other articles as were adapted to
their fancy. Among those who came on board,
was a Chief, named Tioony, whose friendship
Captain Cook immediately gained by proper prefents, consisting principally of a hatchet and some
spike nails. A party of our payigators with the fpike-nails. A party of our navigators, with the Captain at the head of them, having embarked in two boats, proceeded to fliore, where they found an immense croud of people, who welcomed them to the island with loud acclamations. There was not so much as a stick, or any other weapon, in the hands of a fingle native, fo pacific were their dispositions and intentions. They seemed to be more defirous of giving than receiving; and many of them, who could not approach near the boats, threw into them, over the heads of others, whole bales of cloth, and then retired, without either asking or waiting for any thing in return. The

^{*} It is fituated in the latitude of 190 18' fouth, and 1580 54' west. slodwing method of an Ring on trade being fettle

CHAP. whole day was spent by our navigators in the most agreeable manner. When they returned on board in the evening, every one expressed how much he was delighted with the country, and the very obliging behaviour of the inhabitants, who feemed to vie with each other in their endeavours to give pleasure to our people. All this conduct appeared to be the refult of the most pure good-nature, perhaps without being accompanied with much fentiment or feeling; for when Captain Cook fignified to the Chief his intention of quitting the island, he did not feem to be in the least moved. Among other articles presented by the Captain to Tioony, he left him an affortment of garden-feeds, which, if properly used, might be

of great future benefit to the country.

From Middleburg the ships sailed down to Amsterdam, the natives of which island were equally ready with those of the former place to maintain a friendly intercourse with the English. Like the people of Middleburg, they brought nothing with them but cloth, matting, and fuch other articles as could be of little fervice; and for these our seamen were fo simple as to barter away their clothes. To put a stop, therefore, to so injurious a traffic, and to obtain the necessary refreshments, the Captain gave orders that no fort of curiofities should be purchased by any person whatever. This injunction produced the defired effect. When the inhabitants faw that the English would deal with them for nothing but eatables, they brought off bananoes and cocoa-nuts in abundance, together with some fowls and pigs; all of which they exchanged for small nails and pieces of cloth. a few old rags were sufficient for the purchase of a pig or a fowl.

The method of carrying on trade being fettled, and

1773-

and proper officers having been appointed to pre- CHAP. vent disputes, our Commander's next object was to obtain as complete a knowledge as possible of the island of Amsterdam. In this he was much facilitated by a friendship which he had formed with Attago, one of the Chiefs of the country. Captain Cook was struck with admiration, when he furveyed the beauty and cultivation of the island. He thought himself transported into the most fertile plains of Europe. There was not an inch of waste ground. The roads occupied no larger a space than was absolutely necessary, and the fences did not take up above four inches each. Even fuch a small portion of ground was not wholly loft; for many of the fences themselves contained useful trees or plants. The scene was every where the same; and nature, assisted by a little art, no where affirmes a more splendid appearance than in this ifland too side no smooth

Friendly as were the natives of Amsterdam, they were not entirely free from the thievish disposition which hath to often been remarked in the islanders of the Southern Ocean. The instances, however, of this kind, which occurred, were not of such a nature as to produce any extraordinary degree of trouble, sor to involve dur people in a quarrel of them are mere poistnatidadnicart this

Captain Cook's introduction to the king of the island afforded a scene somewhat remarkable. His majesty was seated with so much sullen and stupid gravity, that the Captain took him for an idiot, whom the Indians, from some superstitious reafons, were ready to worship. When our Commander faluted and spoke to him, he neither anfwered, nor took the least notice of him; nor did he alter a fingle feature of his countenance. Even the presents which were made to him could not induce R 2

CHAP. induce him to religion a bit of his gravity, or to fpeak one word, or to turn his head either to the right hand or to the left. As he was in the prime of life, it is possible that a falle fense of dignity might engage him to affume fo folemn a stupidity of appearance. In the history of mankind, instances might probably be found which would conhe furveyed the beauty arthoritionqui and

For a general description of the two islands of Middleburg and Amsterdam, and an account of the cultivation, customs, and manners of the inhabitants, recourse must be had to Captain Gook's Voyage. In flightly touching upon a few particulars, I shall hope to obtain the forgiveness of

Tome of my readered to vuem not shot vitoda

It is observable, that these two islands are guarded from the fea by a reef of coral rocks, which extend out from the shore about a hundred fathoms. On this reef the force of the fea is frent before it reaches the land. The fame, indeed, is, in a great measure, the fituation of all the tropical ifles which our Commander had feen in that part of the globe; and hence arifes an evidence of the wisdom and goodness of Providence; as by fuch a provision, nature has effectually fecured them from the encroachments of the fea, though many of them are mere points, when compared with the vast ocean by which they are surrounded +.

In Amsterdam, Mr. Forster not only found the fame plants that are at Otaheite and the neighbouring islands, but several others which are not to be met with in those places. Captain Cook took care,

mouce

ions, were ready to worfnip.

^{*} Cook, ubi supra, p. 189-210.

† The islands of Middleburg and Amsterdam are situated between the latitude of 210 29 and 210 3 south, and between the longitude of 1740 40 and 1950 15 west, deduced from observations. prefents which were made a topp at no span and

by a proper affortment of garden-feeds and pulle, CHAP. to increase the vegetable flock of the inhabitants.

Hogs and fowls were the only domestic animals that were seen in these islands. The former are of the same sort with those which had been met with in other parts of the Southern Ocean; but the latter are far superior, being as large as any in Europe, and equal, if not preserable, with

respect to the goodness of their flesh,

Both the men and women are of a common fize with Europeans. Their colour is that of a lightish copper, and with a greater uniformity than occurs among the natives of Otaheite and the Society Isles. Some of the English gentlemen were of opinion, that the inhabitants of Middleburg and Amsterdam were a much handsomer race; while others, with whom Captain Cook concurred, maintained a contrary fentiment. However this may be, their shape is good, their features regular, and they are active, brifk, and lively. The women, in particular, are the merriest creatures our Commander had ever met with; and, provided any person seemed pleased with them, they would keep chattering by his fide, without the least invitation, or considering whether they were understood. They appeared in general to be modest, though there were several amongst them of a different character. As there were yet on board fome complaints of a certain disorder, the Captain took all possible care to prevent its communication. Our navigators were frequently entertained by the women with fongs, and this in a manner which was by no means disagreeable. They had a method of keeping time, by fnapping their fingers: Their music was harmonious as well as their voices, and there was a confiderable degree of compass in their notes.

A fingular

CHAP. A fingular custom was found to prevail in these islands. The greater part of the people were obferved to have loft one or both of their little fingers; and this was not peculiar to rank, age, or fex; nor was the amputation restricted to any specific period of life. Our navigators endeavoured in vain to discover the reason of so extraordinary a practice.

A very extensive knowledge of the language of Middleburg and Amsterdam could not be obtained during the short stay which was made there by the English. However, the more they enquired into it, the more they found that it was, in general, the same with that which is spoken at Otaheite and the Society Isles. The difference is not greater than what frequently occurs betwist the most northern and western parts of England *.

7 Oct.

On the feventh of October, Captain Cook proceeded on his voyage. His intention was to fail directly to Queen Charlotte's Sound in New Zealand, for the purpose of taking in wood and water, after which he was to pursue his discoveries to the fouth and the east. The day after he quitted Amsterdam, he passed the island of Pilstart; an island which had been discovered by Tasman +.

21.

On the twenty-first, he made the land of New Zealand, at the distance of eight or ten leagues from Table Cape. As our Commander was very desirous of leaving in the country such an affortment of animals and vegetables as might greatly contribute to the future benefit of the inhabitants, one of the first things which he did was to give

Cook, ubi supra, p. 212, 213, 214, 217, 218, 222, 2250 De Pilstart is situated in the latitude of 22° 26' south, and in the longitude of 175° 59' west. It is distant thirty-two leagues from the fouth end of Middleburg. ir notes.

to a Chief, who had come off in a canoe, two CHAP. boars, two fows, four hens, and two cocks, to- IV. gether with a quantity of feeds. The feeds were of the most useful kind; such as wheat, french and kidney beans, peafe, cabbage, turnips, onions, carrots, parfnips, and yams. to whom these several articles were presented, though he was much more enraptured with a fpike-nail half the length of his arm, promifed, however, to take care of them, and, in particular, not to kill any of the animals. If he adhered to his promise, they would be sufficient, in a due course of time, to stock the whole island.

It was the third of November before Captain 3 Nov. Cook brought the Resolution into Ship Cove, in Queen Charlotte's Sound. He had been beating about the island from the twenty-first of October, during which time his vessel was exposed to a variety of tempestuous weather. In one instance he had been driven off the land by a furious storm. which lasted two days, and which would have been dangerous in the highest degree, had it not fortunately happened that it was fair overhead, and that there was no reason to be apprehensive of a lee-shore. In the course of the bad weather which fucceeded this ftorm, the Adventure was separated from the Resolution, and was never seen or heard of through the whole remainder of the voyage.

The first object of our Commander's attention. after his arrival in Queen Charlotte's Sound, was to provide for the repair of his ship, which had fuffered in various respects, and especially in her fails and rigging. Another matter which called for his notice, was the state of the bread belonging to the veffel; and he had the mortification of finding that a large quantity of it was damaged.

CHAP. To repair this loss in the best manner he was able. he ordered all the casks to be opened, the bread to be picked, and fuch parcels of it to be baked, in the copper oven, as could by that means be recovered. Notwithstanding this care, four thousand two hundred and ninety-two pounds were found totally unfit for use; and about three thousand pounds more could only be eaten by people in the

fituation of our navigators,

Captain Cook was early in his enquiries concerning the animals which had been left at New Zealand, in the former part of his voyage. He faw the youngest of the two sows that Captain Furneaux had put on shore in Cannibal Cove. She was in good condition, and very tame. The boar and other fow, if our Commander was rightly informed, were taken away and separated, but not killed. He was told that the two goats, which he had landed up the Sound, had been destroyed by a rascally native, of the name of Goubiah; so that the Captain had the grief of discovering that all his benevolent endeavours to stock the country with useful animals were likely to be frustrated by the very people whom he was The gardens had met with a anxious to serve. better fate. Every thing in them, excepting potatoes, the inhabitants had left entirely to nature, who had so well performed her part, that most of the articles were in a flourishing condition.

Notwithstanding the inattention and folly of the New Zealanders, Captain Cook still continued his zeal for their benefit. To the inhabitants who refided at the Cove, he gave a boar, a young fow, two cocks, and two hens, which had been brought from the Society Islands. At the bottom of the West Bay, he ordered to be landed, without the knowledge of the Indians, four hogs, being three

fows and one boar, together with two cocks and CHAP. They were carried a little way into the 1V. woods, and as much food was left them as would ferve them for ten or twelve days; which was done to prevent their coming down to the shore in fearch of fustenance, and by that means being discovered by the natives. The Captain was defirous of replacing the two goats which Goubiah was understoood to have killed, by leaving behind him the only two that yet remained in his possession. But he had the misfortune, foon after his arrival at Queen Charlotte's Sound, to lose the ram; and this in a manner for which it was not easy to assign the cause. Whether it was owing to any thing he had eaten, or to his being stung with nettles, which were very plentiful in the place, he was feized with fits that bordered upon madness. In one of these fits, he was supposed to have run into the fea, and to have been drowned: and thus every method, which our Commander had taken to stock the country with sheep and goats, proved ineffectual. He hoped to be more successful with respect to the boars and sows, and the cocks and hens, which he left in the island.

While the boatswain, one day, and a party of men were employed in cutting broom, fome of them stole several things from a private hut of the natives, in which was deposited most of the treafure they had received from the English, as well as property of their own. Complaint being made by the Indians to Captain Cook, and a particular man of the boatswain's party having been pointed out to the Captain as the person who had committed the theft, he ordered him to be punished in their presence. With this they went away feemingly fatisfied, although they did not recover any of the articles which they had loft.

CHAP. It was always a maxim with our Commander, to punish the least crimes which any of his people were guilty of with regard to uncivilized nations. Their robbing us with impunity he by no means confidered as a reason for our treating them in the fame manner. Addicted as the New Zealanders were, in a certain degree, to stealing, a disposition which must have been very much encreased by the novelty and allurement of the objects presented to their view; they had, nevertheless, when injured themselves, such a sense of justice, as to apply to Captain Cook for redress. The best method, in his opinion, of preserving a good understanding with the inhabitants of countries in this state of fociety, is, first, to convince them of the superiority we have over them in consequence of our fire-arms, and then to be always upon our guard. Such a conduct, united with strict honesty and gentle treatment, will convince them that it is their interest not to disturb us, and prevent them from forming any general plan of attack.

In this fecond visit of our navigators to New Zealand, they met with indubitable evidence that the natives were eaters of human flesh. The proofs of this fact had a most powerful influence on the mind of Oedidee, a youth of Bolabola, whom Captain Cook had brought in the Resolution from Ulietea. He was so affected that he became perfectly motionless, and exhibited such a picture of horror, that it would have been impossible for art to describe that passion with half the force with which it appeared in his countenance. When he was rouzed from this state by some of the English, he burst into tears; continued to weep and fcold by turns; told the New Zealanders that they were vile men; and affured them that he

would

would not be any longer their friend. He would C H A P. not fo much as permit them to come near him; and he refused to accept, or even to touch the knife by which some human flesh had been cut off. Such was Oedidee's indignation against the abominable custom; and our Commander has justly remarked, that it was an indignation worthy to be imitated by every rational being. The conduct of this young man upon the prefent occasion, strongly points out the difference which had taken place. in the progress of civilization, between the inhabitants of the Society Islands and those of New Zealand. It was our Commander's firm opinion, that the only human flesh which was eaten by these people was that of their enemies who had been flain in battle.

During the flay of our voyagers in Queen Charlotte's Sound, they were plentifully supplied with fish, procured from the natives at a very easy rate; and, besides the vegetables afforded by their own gardens, they every where found plenty of fcurvy-grafs and celery. These Captain Cook ordered to be dreffed every day for all his hands. By the attention which he paid to his men in the article of provisions, they had for three months lived principally on a fresh diet, and, at this time, there was not a fick or fcorbutic person December 1, fa.brood no.

The morning before the Captain failed, he wrote a memorandum, containing fuch information as he thought necessary for Captain Furneaux, in case he should put into the Sound. This memorandum was buried in a bottle under the root of a tree in the garden; and in fuch a manner that it could not avoid being discovered, if either Captain Furneaux or any other European should chance to arrive at the Cove.

Our

CHAP. Our Commander did not leave New Zealand without making fuch remarks on the coast between Cape Teerawhitte and Cape Pallifer as may be of fervice to future navigators. It being now the unanimous opinion, that the Adventure was no where upon the island, Captain Cook gave up all expectations of feeing her any more during the voyage. This circumstance, however, did not discourage him from fully exploring the southern parts of the Pacific Ocean, in the doing of which he intended to employ the whole of the enfuing feafon. When he quitted the coast, he had the fatisfaction to find that not a man of the crew was dejected, or thought that the dangers they had yet to go through, were in the least augmented by their being alone. Such was the confidence they placed in their Commander, that they were as ready to proceed chearfully to the fouth, or wherever he might lead them, as if the Adventure, or even a larger number of ships had been in company *. . On the twenty-fixth of November, Captain

26 Nov.

Cook failed from New Zealand in fearch of a continent, and steered to the fouth, inclining to the east. Some days after this, our navigators reckoned themselves to be antipodes to their friends in London, and confequently were at as great a distance from them as possible. The first ice island was 12 Dec. seen on the twelfth of December +, farther south than the first ice which had been met with after -leaving the Cape of Good Hope in the preceding In the progress of the voyage, ice islands continually occurred, and the navigation became more and more difficult and dangerous. When

of a tree in the garden; and in fach a meaner

40

^{*} Cook, ubi supra, p. 225—250.

* This was in the latitude of 62° 10' south, and longitude 172 weft. rootsee to arrive at the Co-

our people were in the latitude of 67° 5 fouth, CHAP. they all at once got within such a cluster of these. IV. islands, together with a large quantity of loose pieces, that to keep clear of them was a matter of the utmost difficulty. On the twenty-second of 22 Dec. the month, the Resolution was in the highest latitude she had yet reached * : and circumstances now became fo unfavourable, that our Commander thought of returning more to the north. Here there was no probability of finding any land, or a possibility of getting farther fouth. To have proceeded, therefore, to the east in this latitude, must have been improper, not only on account of the ice, but because a vast space of sea to the north must have been left unexplored in which there might lie a large tract of country. It was only by visiting those parts that it could be determined whether fuch a supposition was well founded. As our navigators had advanced to the north-east on the twenty-fourth, the ice illands encreased so fast upon them, that, at noon, they could fee nearly a hundred around them, besides an immense number of small pieces. In this fituation they spent Christmas-day, much in the same manner as they had done in the former year. Happily our people had continual day-light, and clear weather; for had it been as foggy as it was on some preceding days, nothing less than a miracle could have faved them from being dashed to pieces.

While the Resolution was in the high latitudes, many of her company were attacked with a slight fever, occasioned by colds. The disorder, however, yielded to the simplest remedies, and was generally removed in a few days. On the fifth of January, 1774, the ship not being then in much

1774. 5 Jan.

This was 67° 31'. The longitude was 1420 54' west.

more

CHAP more than fifty degrees of latitude, there were only one or two persons on the fick lift. He walt

1774.

After Captain Cook, agreeably to his late refolution, had traverfed a large extent of ocean without discovering land, he again directed his course 30 Jan. to the fouthward. By the thirtieth of the month, through obstructions and difficulties, which, from their fimilar nature to those already mentioned, it would be tedious to repeat, he reached to the feventy-first degree of latitude . Thus far had he gone; but to have proceeded farther would have been the height of folly and madness. It would have been exposing himself, his men, and his ship to the utmost danger, and perhaps to destruction, without the least prospect of advantage. The Captain was of opinion, as indeed were most of the gentlemen on board, that the ice now in fight extended quite towthe pole, or might join to fome land, to which it might be fixed from the earliest time. If however, there be fuch land, it can afford no better retreat for birds, or any other animals, than the ice itself, with which it must be wholly covered Though our Commander had not only the ambition of going farther than any one had done before, but of proceeding as far as it was possible for man to go, he was the less disfatisfied with the interruption he now met with, as it shortened the dangers and hardships inseparable from the navigation of the fouthern polar regions. In fact, he was impelled by inevitable necessity to tack, and stand back to the north,

The determination which Captain Cook now formed was to spend the ensuing winter within the cenerally semoved in a few days. On the filth

^{*} The exact latitude at this time was 71° 10' fouth; and the longitude 1060 54 west.

tropic, if he met with no employment before he CHAP. came there. He was well fatisfied that no continent was to be found in this ocean but what must lie fo far to the fouth as to be wholly inaccessible on account of ice. If there existed a continent in the Southern Atlantic Ocean, he was fensible that he could not explore it without having the whole fummer before him. Upon a supposition, on the other hand, that there is no land there, he might undoubtedly have reached the Cape of Good Hope by April. In that case, he would have put an end to the finding of a continent; which was indeed the first object of the voyage. But this could not fatisfy the extensive and magnanimous mind of our Commander. He had a good ship, expressly fent out on discoveries, a healthy crew, and was not in want either of stores or of provisions. In fuch circumstances, to have quitted this Southern Pacific Ocean, would, he thought, have been betraying not only a want of perfeverance, but of judgment, in supposing it to have been so well explored, that nothing farther could be done. Although he had proved that there was no continent but what must lie far to the fouth, there remained, nevertheless, room for very large islands in places wholly unexamined. Many, likewife, of those which had formerly been discovered had been but imperfectly explored, and their fituations were as imperfectly known. He was also perfuaded, that his continuing some time longer in this fea would be productive of improvements in navigation and geography, as well as in other fciences.

In consequence of these views, it was Captain Cook's intention first to go in search of the land faid to have been discovered by Juan Fernandez,

CHAP, in the last century *. If he should fail in finding this land, he proposed to direct his course in quest of Easter Island or Davis's Land, the situation of which was known with fo little certainty, that none of the attempts lately made for its discovery had been successful. He next intended to get within the tropic, and then to proceed to the west, touching at, and fettling the fituations of fuch islands as he might meet with till he arrived at Otaheite. where it was necessary for him to stop, to look for the Adventure. It was also in his contemplation to run as far west as the Tierra Austral del Espiritu Santo, which was discovered by Quiros, and to which M. de Bougainville has given the name of the Great Cyclades. From this land it was the Captain's plan to steer to the fouth, and so back to the east, between the latitudes of fifty and fixty. In the execution of this plan, it was his purpole, if possible, to attain the length of Cape Horn in the ensuing November, when he should have the best part of the summer before him, to explore the fouthern part of the Atlantic Ocean, Great as was this defign, our Commander thought it capable of being carried into execution; and when he communicated it to his officers, he had the fatisfaction of finding that it received their zealous and chearful concurrence. They displayed the utmost readiness for executing, in the most effectual manner, every measure he thought proper to adopt. With fuch good examples to direct them, the feamen were always obedient and alert; and on the prefent occasion, so far were they from wishing the voyage to be concluded, that they rejoiced at the prospect of its being prolonged another year, and of foon enjoying the benefits of a milder climate +.

^{*} In about the latitude of 380, mood ovad of big

⁺ Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 250-271.

In purfuing his course to the north, Captain CHAPO Cook became well affured that the discovery of Juan Fernandez, if any fuch was ever made, could be nothing more than a small island. At this time. the Captain was attacked by a bilious colic, the violence of which confined him to his bed. The management of the ship, upon this occasion, was left to Mr. Cooper, the fitst officer, who conducted hermentirely to his Commander's fatisfaction It was feveral days before the most dangerous fymptoms of Captain Cook's diforder were removed; during which time, Mr. Patter the furgeon, in attending upon him, manifested not only the skilfulness of a physician, but the tenderness of a nurse when the Captain began to recover, a fayourite dog, belonging to Mr. Forfer, fell a facrifice to his tender stomach. There was no other fresh meat whatever on board, and he could eat not only of the broth which was made of its but of the field itself, when there was nothing elfe that he was capable of thiting on Thus did he derive nourishment and strength from food which to most people in Europe would have been in the highest degree disgusting, and productive of ficknels. The necessity of the case overcame every to his having exposed and fail skillish to gnilest

S

n

.

,

h

n

e

e

d

+.

In

On the eleventh of March, our navigators came 11 March. within fight of Easter Island, or Davis's Land : their transactions at which place were of too little moment to deferve a particular recital. The inhabitants are, in general, à slender race. In colour, features, and language, they bear fuch an affinity to the people of the more western isles, that there can be no doubt of their having been de-

e, or Kefohnion E. . In the Bland of * It is fituated in the latitude of 27° 5' 30" fouth, and the longitude of 109° 46' 20" west. S fcended

CHAP. scended from one common original. It is indeed extraordinary that the fame nation should have foread themselves to so wide an extent, as to take in almost a fourth part of the circumference of the globe. With regard to the disposition of the natives of Easter Island, it is friendly and hospitable; but they are as much addicted to ftealing as any of their neighbours. They island itself hath fo little to recommend it, that no nation need to contend for the honour of its discovery. So sparing has nature been of her favours to this spot, that there is in it no fafe anchorage, no wood for fuel, no fresh water worth taking on board. The most remarkable objects in the country are fome furprizing gigantic statues, which were first feen by Roggewein, and of which Captain Cook has given a particular description of report sid of earliest

It was with pleasure that our Commander quitted a place which could afford fuch flender accommodations to voyagers, and directed his course for the Marquelas Islands: He had not been long at fea, before he was again attacked by his bilious diforder. The attack, however, was not fo violent as the former one had been. He had reason to believe, that the return of his difease was owing to his having exposed and fatigued himself too On the eleventh of Marchball raffal tarbum

6, 7 April. On the fixth and feventh of April, our navigators came within fight of four illands, which they knew to be the Marquelas. To one of them. which was a new discovery, Captain Cook gave the name of Hood's Island, after that of the young gentleman by whom it was first feen. As foon as the ship was brought to an anchor in Madre de Dios, or Resolution Bay, in the Island of

^{*} Cook's Voyages, ubi supra, p. 274, 275 284. 288. 290. 294-296.

St. Christina, a traffic commenced, in the course CHAP. of which the natives would frequently keep our goods without making any return. At last the Captain was obliged to fire a musquet ball over one man who had feveral times treated the English in this manner. This produced only a temporary effect. Too many of the Indians having come on board, our Commander, who was going in a boat, to find a convenient place for mooring the ship faid to the officers, "You must look well " after these people, or they will certainly barry " off fomething or other." Scarcely had he gotten into the boat, when he was informed that they had stolen an iron stanchion from the opposite gangway, and were carrying it off. Upon this he ordered his men to fire over the canoe till he could get round in the boat, but not to kill any one. Such however, was the noise made by the natives. that the order was not heard; and the unhappy thief was killed at the first shot Allithe Indians having retired with precipitation, in confequence of this unfortunate accident, Captain Cook followed them into the bay, prevailed upon some of them to come alongfide his boat, and, by fuitable prefents; fo far conciliated their minds, that their fears feemed to be in a great measure allayed. The death of their countryman did not cure them of their thievish disposition; but, at length, it was fomewhat reltrained by their conviction that no distance secured them from the reach of our musquets. Several smaller instances of their talent at stealing, the Captain thought proper to overlook.

The provisions obtained at St. Christina were yams, plantains, bread-fruit, a few cocoa nuts, fowls, and fmall pigs. For a time, the trade was carried on upon reasonable terms; but the market was at last ruined by the indiscretion of some

goung Cooks Vorage and 1202 p. serrors.

CHAP young gentlemen, who gave away in exchange various articles which the inhabitants had not feen before; and which captivated their fancy above nails, brimore useful iron tools. One of the gentlementhad given for a plg a very large quantity. of ned feathers, which he had gotten at AmsterdamanoTheneffectnof this iwas particularly fatal. It was not possible to support the trade, in the manner in which it was now begun, even for a fingle day. When, therefore, our Commander found that he was not likely to be supplied, on any conditions, with stifficient refreshments, and that the illand was neither very convenient for taking in wood and water, nor for affording the necellary gepairs of the hip, he determined to proceed immediately to fome other place, where the wants be his people could be effectually relieweden After having boom nineteen weeks at fea, and shaving lived all that time upon falt diet, a change indtheir food doubt not avoid being peculiarly definable: and yet, on their arrival at St. Choistinagail could forcely be afferted that a fingle in an ewas fack; and there were but a few which had the dealt complaint of any kindrolf a This," faysiCaptain Cook, in the narrative of his royage, "Lawas and oubtedly sowing no the many antifeor-" butic articles we had on board, and to the great stender of the surgeon, who was remarkably "careful to apply them in time # ... It may justly be addeth that this was likewife owing to the fingular cape of the Captain himfelf, and to the exertions of his authority, in enforcing the excellent regulations which his wisdom and humanity vames plantains, bread-fruit, a few .bstqobathsd

The chiefreason of our Commander's touching at the Marquelas Islands, was to fix their fituation:

was at last ruined by the indiference of fome

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 297-305.

that being the only circumstance in which the CHAR? nautical account of them, given in Mri Dalrym. IV. ple's collection, is deficient. It was farther defirable to fettle this point, as it would lead to a more accurate knowledge of Mendana's other difcoveries. Accordingly, Captain Cook has marked the fituation of the Marquelas with his nfual correctness . He has also taken care to describe the particular cove in Refolution Bay, in the illand of St. Christina, which is most convenient for obthining wood and water of erew west and bowlede.

It is remarkable, with respect to the inhabitants of the Marquefas Islands, that; collectively taken, they are without exception the finest race of people in this fea. Perhaps they furpals all other nations in fymmetry of form, and regularity of features. It is plain, however, from the affinity of their language to that of Otaheite and the Society Isles; that they are of the fame origin. Of this affinity the English were fully sensible, though they could not converse with them; but Oedidee was capable of doing it tolerably well +:

From the Marquelas Captain Cook steered for Otaheite, with a view of falling in with fome of the islands discovered by former navigators, and especially by the Dutch, the situation of which had not been accurately determined. In the course of the voyage, he paffed a number of low iflots, connected together by reefs of coral rocks. One of

y

g

60 W

at

^{*} The Marquelas Islands, four of which were first discovered by Mendana, a Spaniard, are five in number, viz. La Magdalena, St. Pedro, La Dominica, Santa Christina, and Hood's Island, which is the nonthernmost La Dominica is the largest of them, being about fifteen or fixteen leagues in circuit. These islands occupy one degree of latitude, and nearly half a degree in longitude. Their latitude is from 9 to 10, and their longitude from 138° 47' to 139° 13' west. + Cook's Voyages, ubi supra, p. 306—308.

1774-

CHAP. the islands, on which Lieutenant Cooper went ashore, with two boats well armed, was called by the natives Tiookea *. It had been discovered and visited by Captain Byron. The inhabitants of Tiookea are of a much darker colour than those of the higher islands, and appeared to be more fierce in their dispositions. This may be owing to their manner of gaining their subfiftence, which is chiefly from the fea, and to their being much exposed to the fun and the weather. Our voyagers observed that they were stout, well made men, and that they had marked on their bodies the figure of a fish, which was a good emblem of their profession.

Befides passing by St. George's Islands, which had been fo named by Captain Byron, our Commander made the discovery of four others +. These he called Palliser's Isles, in honour of his particular friend, Sir Hugh Pallifer. The inhabitants feemed to be the fame fort of people as those of Tiookea, and, like them, were armed with long pikes. Captain Cook could not determine, with any degree of certainty, whether the group of isles he had lately feen were, or were not, any of those that had been discovered by the Dutch navigators. This was owing to the neglect of recording, with fufficient accuracy, the fituation of their discoveries. Our Commander hath. in general, observed, with regard to this part of the ocean, that, from the latitude of twenty down to fourteen or twelve, and from the meridian of a hundred and thirty-eight to a hundred and forty-eight or a hundred and fifty

* Tiookea is fituated in the latitude of 140 27' 30" fouth, and

the longitude of 144° 56' west.

+ The situation of one of them was in latitude 15° 36' fouth, and in longitude 146' 20' west. Another was in latitude 15° 27 and longitude 1450 3'.

west, it is so strewed with low isles, that a naviga-C HAP. tor cannot proceed with too much caution.

On the twenty-fecond of April, Captain Cook reached the Island of Otaheite, and anchored in 22 April. Matavai Bay. As his chief reason for putting in at this place was to give Mr. Wales an opportunity of ascertaining the error of the watch by the known longitude, and to determine anew her rate of going, the first object was to land the instruments, and to erect tents for the reception of a guard, and fuch other people as it was necessary to have on shore. Sick there were none; for the refreshments which had been obtained at the Marquefas had removed every complaint of that kind.

From the quantity of provisions, which, contrary to expectation, our Commander now found at Otaheite, he determined to make a longer stay in the island than he had at first intended. Accordingly, he took measures for the repairs of the thip, which the high fouthern latitudes had ren-

dered indispensably necessary.

a

be

h,

50 ft,

During Captain Cook's stay at Otaheite, he maintained a most friendly connection with the inhabitants; and a continual interchange of vifits was preserved between him and Otoo, Towha, and other chiefs of the country. His traffic with them was greatly facilitated by his having fortunately brought with him some red parrot feathers from the Island of Amsterdam. These were jewels of high value in the eyes of the Otaheitans. The Captain's stock in trade was by this time greatly exhausted; so that, if it had not been for the feathers, he would have found it difficult to have supplied the ship with the necessary refreshrence against Otoo'

Among other entertainments which our Comdrownand Careda Weers

CHAP mander and the rest of the English gentlemen met with at Otaheite, one was a grand naval review. The vessels of war consisted of a hundred and fixty large double canoes, well equipped, manned, and armed. They were decorated with flags and streamers; and the chiefs, together with all those who were on the fighting stages, were dressed in their war habits. The whole fleet made a noble appearance; fuch as our voyagers had never feen before in this fea, or could ever have expected. Besides the vessels of war, there were a hundred and feventy fail of smaller double canoes, which feemed to be defigned for transports and victuallers. Upon each of them was a little house; and they were rigged with mast and fail, which was not the case with the war canoes. Captain Cook guessed that there were no less than seven thousand seven hundred and fixty men in the whole fleet. He was not able to obtain full information concerning the defign of this armament.

Notwithstanding the agreeable intercourse that was, in general, maintained between our Commander and the people of Otaheite, circumstances occasionally happened, which called for peculiar exertions of his prudence and resolution. One of the natives who had attempted to steal a watercask from the watering-place, was caught in the fact, fent on board, and put in irons. In this fituation, he was feen by king Otoo, and other chiefs. Captain Cook having made known to them the crime of their countryman, Otoo entreated that he might be fet at liberty. This the Captain however refused, alleging, that fince he punished his own people, when they committed the least offence against Otoo's, it was but just that this man should also be punished. As Captain Cook knew that Otoo would not

punish

punish him, he resolved to do it himself. Accord CHAP. ingly, he directed the criminal to be carried on shore to the tents, and having himself followed, with the Chiefs and other Otaheitans, he ordered the guard out, under arms, and commanded the man to be tied up to a post. Otoo again solicited the culprit's release, and in this he was seconded by his fifter, but in vain. The Captain expostulated with him on the conduct of the man, and of the Indians in general; telling him, that neither he, nor any of the ship's company, took the fmallest matter of property from them without first paying for it; enumerating the articles which the English had given in exchange for such and fuch things; and urging that it was wrong in them to steal from those who were their friends. He added, that the punishing of the guilty person would be the means of faving the lives of feveral of Otoo's people, by deterring them from committing crimes of the like nature, and thus preventing them from the danger of being shot to death, which would certainly happen, at one time or other, if they perfifted in their robberies. With these arguments the king appeared to be satisfied, and only defired that the man might not be killed. Captain Cook then directed that the croud, which was very great, should be kept at a proper distance, and, in the presence of them all, ordered the fellow two dozen of lashes with a cat-of-nine-tails. This punishment the man sustained with great firmness, after which he was set at liberty. When the natives were going away, Towha called them back, and, with much gracefulness of action, addreffed them in a speech of nearly half an hour in length, the defign of which was to condemn their present conduct, and to recommend a different one for the future. To make a farther VIZZENDEZ

OHAP. ther impression upon the minds of the inhabitants, our Commander ordered his marines to go through their exercises, and to load and fire in vollies with ball. As they were very quick in their manœuvres, it is more easy to conceive than to describe the amazement which possessed the Indians during the whole time, and especially those of them who had not seen any thing of the kind before.

The judicious will discern, with regard to this narrative, that it throws peculiar light on Captain Cook's character. Nor is it an uncurious circumstance in the history of human society, that a stranger should thus exercise jurisdiction over the natives of a country, in the presence of the prince of that country, without his authority, and even

contrary to his folicitations.

Another difagreeable altercation with the inhabitants of Otaheite, arose from the negligence of one of the English centinels on shore. Having either flept or quitted his post, an Indian seized the opportunity of carrying off his musquet. When any extraordinary theft was committed, it immediately excited fuch an alarm among the natives in general, from their fear of Captain Cook's refentment, that they fled from their habitations, and a stop was put to the traffic for provisions. On the present occasion, the Captain had no small degree of trouble; but, by his prudent conduct, the musquet was recovered, peace restored, and commerce again opened. In the differences which happened with the feveral people he met with in his voyages, it was a rule with him, never to touch the least article of their property, any farther than to detain their canoes for a while, when it became absolutely necessary. He always chose the most mild and equitable methods of bringing them to reason; and in this he not only succeeded, but frequently

1774-

frequently put things upon a better footing than if CHAP. no contention had taken place.

During this visit to Otaheite, fruit and other refreshments were obtained in great plenty. The relief arising from them was the more agreeable. and falutary, as the bread of the ship was in a bad condition. Though the biscuit had been aired and picked at New Zealand, it was now in fuch a state of decay, that it was necessary for it to undergo another airing and cleaning, in which much of it was found wholly rotten, and unfit to be eaten. This decay was judged to le owing to the ice our navigators had frequently taken in when to the fouthward, which made the hold of the veffel cold and damp, and to the great heat that succeeded when they came to the north. Whatever was the cause, the loss was so considerable, that the men were put to a scanty allowance in this article, with the additional mortification of the bread's being bad that could be used.

Two goats, that had been given by Captain Furneaux to Otoo, in the former part of the voyage, feemed to promife fair for answering the purposes for which they were left upon the island. The ewe, foon after, had two female kids, which were now fo far grown as to be almost ready to propagate. At the same time, the old ewe was again with kid. The people were very fond of them, and they were in excellent condition. From these circumstances, Captain Cook entertained a hope that, in a course of years, they would multiply fo much as to be extended over all the ifles of the Southern Ocean. The like fuccess did not attend the sheep which had been left in the country. These speedily died, one excepted, which was faid to be yet alive. Our navigators allo furnished the natives with cats, having given

away

CHAP. away no less than twenty at Otaheite, besides some IV. which had been made presents of at Ulietea and Huaheine.

With regard to the number of the inhabitants of Otaheite, our Commander collected, from comparing feveral facts together, that, including women and children, there could not be lefs, in the whole island, than two hundred and four thousand. This number, at first fight, exceeded his belief. But when he came to reflect on the vast swarms of people that appeared wherever he went, he was convinced that the estimate was agreeable to truth.

Such was the friendly treatment which our voyagers met with at Otaheite, that one of the gunner's mates was induced to form a plan for remaining in the country. As he knew that he could not execute his scheme with success while the Resolution continued in Matavai Bay, he took the opportunity, when she was ready to quit it, and the sails were set for that purpose, to slip overboard. Being a good fwimmer, he had no doubt of getting fafe to a canoe, which was at fome distance ready to receive him; for his defign was concerted with the natives, and had even been encouraged by Otoo. However, he was discovered before he had gotten clear of the ship, and a boat being presently hoisted out, he was taken up, and brought back to the veffel. When our Commander reflected on this man's fituation, he did not think him very culpable, or his defire of staying in the island so extraordinary as might at first view be imagined. He was a native of Ireland, and had failed in the Dutch service. Captain Cook, on his return from his former voyage, had picked him up at Batavia, and had kept him in his employment ever fince. It did not appear that he had either friends

or connections which could bind him to any par-CHAP ticular part of the world. All nations being alike to him, where could he be more happy than at Otaheite? Here, in one of the finest climates of the globe, he could enjoy not only the necessaries, but the luxuries of life, in ease and plenty. The Captain seems to think, that if the man had applied to him in time, he might have given his confent to his remaining in the country.

On the fifteenth of May, Captain Cook and 15 May. chored in O'Wharre Harbour, in the island of Habeine. He was immediately visited by his friend Oree, and the same agreeable intercourse sublisted between the Captain and this good old Chief which had formerly taken place. Red feathers were not here in such estimation as they had been at Otaheite; the natives of Huaheine having the good fense to give a preference to the more useful articles of nails and axes. During the stay of our voyagers in the island, some alarms were occasioned by the thievish disposition of feveral of the inhabitants; but matters fubfided without any material confequences. A folemn march, which our Commander made through part of the country, at the head of forty-eight men, tended to impress the Indians with a sense of his power and authority. In fact, their attempts at flealing had been too much invited by the indifcretion of fome of the English, who unquardedly separated themselves in the woods, for the purpose of killing birds , and who managed their mufquets fo unskilfully, as to render them less formidable in the eyes of the natives

I cannot perfuade myfelf to omit a dramatic entertainment, at which feveral of the gentlemen belonging to the Resolution attended one evening.

The

CHAP. The piece represented a girl as running away with our navigators from Otaheite; and the story was partly founded in truth; for a young woman had taken a passage in the ship, down to Ulietea. She happened to be present at the representation of her own adventures; which had fuch an effect upon her, that it was with great difficulty that she could be prevailed upon by the English gentlemen to fee the play out, or to refrain from tears while it was acting. The piece concluded with the reception which she was supposed to meet with from her friends at her return; and it was a reception that was by no means favourable. As these people, when they fee occasion, can add little extempore pieces to their entertainments, it is realonable to imagine that the representation now described was intended as a fatire against the girl, and to difcourage others from following her steps. Such is the fense which they entertain of the propriety the flay of our voyagers of female decorum.

During Captain Cook's stay at Huaheine, breadfruit, cocoa-nuts, and other vegetable productions were procured in abundance, but not a fufficiency of hogs to supply the daily expence of the ship. This was partly owing to a want of proper articles for traffic. The Captain was obliged, therefore, to fet the smiths at work, to make different forts of nails, iron tools, and instruments, in order to enable him to obtain refreshments at the islands he was yet to visit, and to support his credit and influence among the natives and multiple to shop

When our Commander was ready to fail from Huaheine, Oree was the last man that went out of the veffel. At parting, Captain Cook told him that they should meet each other no

more:

more; at which he wept, and faid, " Let your CHAP.

"fons come, we will treat them well."

"At Ulietea, to which the Captain next directed 1774.

At Ulietea, to which the Captain next directed his courfe, the events that occurred were nearly fimilar to those which have already been related. He had always been received by the people of this island in the most hospitable manner, and they were justly entitled to every thing which it-was in his power to grant. They expressed the deepest concern at his departure, and were continually importuning him to return. Oreo the Chief, and his wife and daughter, but especially the two latter, scarcely ever ceased weeping. Their grief was fo excessive that it might perhaps be doubted whether it was entirely fincere and unaffected; but our Commander was of opinion that it was real. At length, when he was ready to fail, they took a most affectionate leave. Oreo's last request to Captain Cook was that he would return; and when he could not obtain a promise to that effect, he asked the name of his burying-place. To this strange question the Captain answered, without hesitation, that it was Stepney; that being the parish in which he lived when in London. Mr. Forster, to whom the same question was proposed, replied; with greater wisdom and recollection, that no many who used the seas could say where he should be buried to be busing the house

As our Commander could not promife, or even then suppose, that more English ships would be sent to the southern isles, Oedidee, who for so many months had been the faithful companion of our navigators, chose to remain in his native country. But he left them with a regret fully demonstrative of his esteem and affection, nor could any thing have torn him from them, but the fear of never returning. When Oreo pressed

CHAP. fo ardently Captain Cook's return, he fometimes gave fuch answers as left room for hope. At these answers Ochidee would eagerly catch, take him on one fide, and alk him over against The Captain declares, that he had not words to describe the anguish which appeared in this young man's breaft, when he went away. "He looked up at the ship, burst into tears, and then funk down into the canoe." Oedidee was a youth of good parts, and of a docile, gentle, and humane disposition; but as he was almost wholly ignorant of the religion, government, manners, customs and traditions of his countrymen, and the neighbouring iflands, no material knowledge could have been collected from him, had our Come mander brought him away. He would, how ever, in every respect, have been a better specimen of the nation than Omai, it alts flom a foot

> When Captain Cook first came to these islanded he had fome thoughts of vifiting Ilupia's famous Bolabola. But having obtained a plentiful fund ply of refreshments, and the route he hadein view allowing him no time to fpare the laid this defign afide, and directed his course to the west, Thus did he take his leave, as he then thought for ever, of these happy isles, on which benevolent nature has spread her duxuniant sweets with a lavish hand; and in which the natives! copying the bounty of Providence, are equally liberal; being ready to contribute plentifully and cherfully to the wants of navigators of at the

When Orec prefled

many months had been the faith

^{*} Cook, ubi fupra, p. 312-378.

From Mr. Wales's observations it appeared, that, during five months, in which the watch had passed through the extremes of heat and cold, it went better in the cold than in the hot elfcould any thing have tour him from them.

On the fixth of June, the day after our voyagers CHAP. left Ulietea, they faw land, which they found to . be a low reef island, about four leagues in compass, and of a circular form. This was Howe island, which had been discovered by Captain Wallis *. Nothing remarkable occurred from this day to the fixteenth, when land was again feen. It was another reef island; and being a new discovery, Captain Cook gave it the name of PALMERSTON ISLAND, in honour of Lord Palmerston t. On the twentieth, fresh land appeared. which was perceived to be inhabited. This induced our Commander to go on shore with a party of gentlemen; but the natives were found to be fierce and untractable. All endeavours to bring them to a parley were to no purpose; for they came on with the ferocity of wild boars, and in-flantly threw their darts. Two or three musquets discharged in the air, did not prevent one of them from advancing still farther, and throwing another dart, or rather a spear, which passed close over Captain Cook's shoulder. The courage of this man had nearly cost him his life. When he threw his spear, he was not five paces from the Captain; who had resolved to shoot him for his own preservation. It happened, however, that his musquet missed fire: a circumstance on which he afterwards reflected with pleasure. When he joined his party, and tried his musquet in the air, it went off perfectly well. This island, from the disposition and behaviour of the natives, with whom no intercourse could be established, and from whom no benefit could be received, was called by our Commander

IV. 1774. 6 Junes

* Its latitude is 16º 46' fouth, and its longitude 154° 8' west. It is fituated in latitude 189 4' fouth, and in longitude 163".

CHAP mander SAVAGE ISLAND *. It is about eleven leagues in circuit; is of a round form, and good height; and has deep waters close to its shores. Among its other disadvantages, it is not furnished with a harbour.

In pursuing his course to the west-fouth-west, Captain Cook passed by a number of small islands, a6th June and, on the twenty-fixth, anchored on the north fide of Anamocka, or Rotterdam. A traffic immediately commenced with the natives, who brought what provisions they had, being chiefly yams and shaddocks, which they exchanged for nails, beads, and other small articles. as in many former cases, the Captain was put to fome trouble on account of the thievish disposition of the inhabitants. As they had gotten poffession of an adze and two musquets, he found it necessary to exert himself with peculiar vigour, in order to oblige them to make restitution. For this purpose he commanded all the marines to be armed, and fent on shore; and the result of this measure was, that the things which had been stolen were restored. In the contest, Captain Cook was under a necessity of firing some small shot at a native who had distinguished himself by his re-His countrymen afterwards reported that he was dead; but he was only wounded, and that not in a dangerous manner. Though his fufferings were the effects of his own misbehaviour, the Captain endeavoured to foften them, by making him a prefent, and directing his wounds to be dreffed by the furgeon of the ship.

The first time that our Commander landed at Anamocka, an old lady presented him with a girl, and gave him to understand that she was at his

fervice.

Its fituation is in latitude 199 1' fouth, and in longitude 169° 37 west.

fervice. Miss, who had previously been instruct-CHAP. ed, wanted a spike-nail, or a shirt, neither of which he had to give her; and he flattered himfelf that, by making the two women fensible of his poverty, he should easily get clear of their importunities. In this, however, he was mistaken. The favours of the young lady were offered upon credit; and on his declining the propofal, the old woman began to argue with him, and then to abuse him. As far as he could collect from her countenance and her actions, the defign of her speech was both to ridicule and reproach him, for refusing to entertain so fine a young woman. Indeed, the girl was by no means destitute of beauty; but Captain Cook found it more easy to withstand her allurements than the abuses of the ancient matron, and therefore hastened into his boat.

While the Captain was on shore at Anamocka, he got the names of twenty islands, which lie between the north-west and the north-east. Some of them were in sight; and two of them, which are most to the west, are remarkable on account of their great height. These are Amattasoa and Oghao. From a continual column of smoke which was seen daily ascending from the middle of Amattasoa, it was judged that there was a volcano in that island.

1

t

Anamocka was first discovered by Tasman, and by him was named Rotterdam *. It is of a triangular form, and each side extends about three and a half or four miles. From the north-west to the south of the island, round by the east and north, it is encompassed by a number of small isles, sand-banks, and breakers. An end could T 2

It is fituated in the latitude of 20° 15' fouth, and the longitude of 174° 31' west.

\$774.

CHAP. not be feen to their extent to the north, and they may possibly reach as far to the fouth as Amsterdam, or Tongataboo. Together with Middleburg, or Eaoowe, and Pilstart, these form a group, containing about three degrees of latitude, and two of longitude. To this group Captain Cook had given the name of the Friendly Isles, or Archipelago, from the firm alliance and friendship which feemed to subfift among their inhabitants, and from their courteous behaviour to strangers. The fame group may perhaps be extended much farther, even down to Boscawen and Keppel's Isles, which were discovered by Captain Wallis, and lie nearly in the same meridian *.

Whilst our Commander was at Anamocka, he was particularly assiduous to prevent the introduction of a certain disorder. As some of his people brought with them the remains of this disease from the Society Isles, he prohibited them from having any female intercourse; and he had reason to be-

lieve that his endeavours were fuccefsful.

The productions of Rotterdam, and the persons, manners, and customs of its inhabitants, are similar to those of Amsterdam. It is not, however, equally plentiful in its fruits, nor is every part of it in so high a state of cultivation. Neither hath it arisen to the same degree of wealth, with regard to cloth, matting, ornaments, and other articles, which constitute the chief riches of the islanders of the Southern Ocean +.

Pursuing their course to the west, our navigators discovered land on the first of July; and, upon a nearer approach, found it to be a small isl-

and.

In the latitude of 15° 53.

⁺ Captain Cook's Voyage towards the South Pole, and round the World, Vol. II. p. 8-20.

and, to which, on account of the number of tur-CHAP. tle that were seen upon the coast, Captain Cook gave the name of TURTLE ISLE*. On the fixteenth, high land was feen bearing fouth-west, which no one doubted to be the Australis del Espiritu Santo of Quiros, and which is called by M. de Bougainville the Great Cyclades. After exploring the coast for some days, the Captain came to an anchor, in a harbour in the illand of Mallicollo. One of his first objects was to commence a friendly intercourse with the natives; but, while he was thus employed, an accident occurred which threw all into confusion, though in the end it was rather advantageous than hurtful to the English. A fellow in a canoe, having been refufed admittance into one of our boats, bent his bow to shoot a poisoned arrow at the boat-keeper. Some of his countrymen having prevented his doing it at that instant, time was given to acquaint our Commander with the transaction, who immediately ran upon deck. At this minute, the Indian had directed his bow to the boat-keeper; but upon being called to by Captain Cook, he pointed it at him. Happily, the Captain had a musquet in his hand loaded with small shot, and gave him the contents. By this, however, he was only staggered for a moment; for he still held his bow in the attitude of shooting. A second discharge of the same nature made him drop it, and obliged him, together with the other natives who were in the canoe, to paddle off with all possible celerity. At this time, some of the inhabitants began to shoot arrows from another quarter. A musquet discharged in the air had no effect upon them;

[•] It is fituated in latitude 19° 48' fouth, and in longitude 1782 2' west.

OHAP them; but no fooner was a four-pound ball fhot over their heads than they fled in the utmost confusion.

A few hours after these transactions, the English put off in two boats, and landed in the face of four or five hundred people, who were affembled on the shore; and who, though they were all armed with bows and arrows, clubs and spears, made not the least opposition. On the contrary, when they faw Captain Cook advance with nothing but a green branch in his hand, one of them, who appeared to be a chief, giving his bow and arrows to another, met the Captain in the water, bearing also a green branch. These being mutually exchanged in token of friendship, the Chief led our Commander to the crowd, to whom he immediately distributed presents. The marines, in the mean time, were drawn up on the beach. Captain Cook then acquainted the Indians, by figns, that he wanted wood; and in the fame manner permission was granted him to cut down the trees.

Much traffic could not be carried on with these people, because they set no value on nails, or iron tools, or, indeed, on any of the articles which our navigators could furnish. In such exchanges as they did make, and which were principally of arrows for pieces of cloth, they distinguished themselves by their honesty. When the ship had begun to fail from the island, and they might eafily, in confequence of their canoes dropping aftern, have avoided delivering the things they had been paid for, they used their utmost efforts to get up with her, that they might discharge their obligations. One man, in particular, followed the Resolution a considerable time, and did not reach her till the object which brought him was forgotten. As foon as he came alongfide the veffel,

fel, he held up the thing which had been purcha- CHAP. fed; and though several of the crew offered to buy it, he insisted upon delivering it to the person to whom it had been sold. That person, not knowing him again, would have given something in return; but this he refused, and shewed him what he had before received. There was only a single instance in which the natives took, or even attempted to take, any thing from our voyagers, by any means whatever; and in that case restitution was immediately made, without trouble and without altercation.

The inhabitants of Mallicollo, in general, are the most ugly and ill-proportioned people that Captain Cook had ever feen, and are in every respect different from all the nations which had been met with in the Southern Ocean. They are a very dark-coloured, and rather a diminutive race, with long heads, flat faces, and countenances which have some resemblance to that of the monkey. Their hair, which is mostly black or brown, is short and curly; but not altogether fo foft and woolly as that of a negro. The difference of this people from any whom our Commander had yet vifited, appeared not only in their persons but their language. Of about eighty words which were collected by Mr. Forster, scarcely one was found to bear any affinity to the language spoken in any country or island hitherto described. It was observed by Captain Cook, that the natives could pronounce most of the English words with great ease. They had not so much as a name for a dog, and knew nothing of that animal; for which reason the Captain left them a dog and a bitch; and as they were very fond of them, it was highly probable that the breed would be fostered and encreased.

C H A P. IV.

To the harbour, in which our Commander anchored, while he lay at Mallicollo, he gave the name of PORT SANDWICH*. It has many advantages, with regard to depth of water, shelter from winds, and lying so near the shore as to be a cover to those of a ship's company who may be carrying on necessary operations at land †.

23 July.

Soon after our navigators had gotten to fea, which was on the twenty-third of July, they difcovered three or four small islands, that before had appeared to be connected. At this time the Resolution was not far from the Isle of Ambrym. the Isle of Pacom, and the Isle of Apee. On the next morning, feveral more islands were difcovered, lying off the fouth-east point of Apee, and constituting a group which Captain Cook called SHEFHERD'S ISLES, in honour of his learned and valuable friend, Dr. Shepherd, Plumian Professor of Astronomy at Cambridge. The ship was this day in some danger. It suddenly fell calm, and our voyagers were left to the mercy of the current, close by the isles, where no foundings could be found with a line of a hundred and eighty fathoms. The lands or islands, which lay around the vessel in every direction, were so numerous that they could not be counted. At this crisis a breeze sprung up, which happily relieved the Captain and his company from the anxiety the calm had occasioned.

Amidst the number of islands, that were continually seen by our navigators, there was only

[•] It is fituated on the north-east side of Mallicollo, not far from the south-east end, in latitude 16° 25' 20" south, and longitude 167° 57' 23" east.

[†] Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 23-37.

one on which no inhabitants were discerned. CHAP. This confifted chiefly of a remarkable peaked rock, ____. which was only accessible to birds, and which ob- 1774. tained the name of the MONUMENT.

In the farther course of the ship to the southward, our navigators drew near to certain lands, which they found to confift of one large island, the fouthern and western extremities of which extended beyond their fight. Three or four fmaller ones lay off its north fide. To the two principal of these Captain Cook gave the name of MONTAGU and HINCHINBROOK; and the large island he named SANDWICH, in honour of his noble patron the Earl of Sandwich. This island, which was spotted with woods and lawns, agreeably diversified over the whole surface, and which had a gentle flope from the hills down to the feacoast, exhibited a most beautiful and delightful prospect. The examination of it was not, however, fo much an object with our Commander, as to proceed to the fouth, in order to find the fouthern extremity of the Archipelago.

Pursuing his discoveries, Captain Cook came in fight of an island, which was afterwards known to be called by the natives Erromango. After coasting it for three days, he brought his vessel to, anchor in a bay there, on the third of August. August. The next day, he went with two boats to examine the coast, and to look for a proper landing-place, that he might obtain a supply of wood and water. At this time, the inhabitants began to affemble on the shore, and by signs to invite our people to land. Their behaviour was apparently fo friendly, that the Captain was charmed with it; and the only thing which could give him the least fufpicion was, that most of them were armed with clubs, spears, darts, and bows and arrows. He did not, therefore, remit his vigilance; but kept

CHAP. his eye continually upon the Chief, watching his looks, as well as his actions. It foon was evident that the intentions of the Indians were totally hof-They made a violent attempt to feize upon one of the boats; and though, on our Commander's pointing a musquet at them, they in some measure desisted, yet they returned in an instant, feemingly determined to carry their defign into execution. At the head of the party was the Chief; while others, who could not come at the boat, stood behind with darts, stones, and bows and arrows in hand, ready to support their countrymen. As figns and threats had no effect, the fafety of Captain Cook and his people became the only object of confideration; and yet he was unwilling to fire on the multitude. He resolved, therefore, to make the Chief alone the victim of his own treachery, and accordingly, aimed his musquet at him; but at this critical moment it missed fire. This circumstance encouraged the natives to despise our weapons, and to shew the fuperiority of their own, by throwing stones and darts, and by shooting arrows. Hence it became absolutely necessary for the Captain to give orders to his men to fire upon the affailants. The first discharge threw them into confusion; but a fecond was scarcely sufficient to drive them off the beach. In consequence of this skirmish, four of the Indians lay, to all appearance, dead on the shore. However, two of them were afterwards perceived to crawl into the bushes; and it was happy for these people that not half of the musquets of the English would go off, since otherwise many more must have fallen. The inhabitants were, at length, fo terrified as to make no farther appearance; and two oars, which had been lost in the conflict, were left standing up against the bushes.

It was observed of these islanders, that they feemed feemed of a different race from those of Mallicollo, CHAP. and that they spoke a different language. They are of a middle size, with a good shape, and tolerable features. Their colour is very dark; and their aspect is not mended by a custom they have of painting their faces, some with a black, and others with a red pigment. As to their hair, it is curly and crisp, and somewhat woolly. The few women who were seen, and who appeared to be ugly, wore a kind of petticoat, made either of palm leaves or of a plant similar in its nature; but the men, like those of Mallicollo, were almost entirely naked. On account of the treacherous behaviour of the inhabitants of Erromango, Captain Cook called a promontory, or peninsula, near which the skirmish happened, Traitor's Head*.

From this place the Captain failed for an island which had been discovered before, at a distance, and at which, on account of his wanting a large quantity of wood and water, he was resolved to make some stay. At first the natives were disposed to be very hostile; but our Commander, with equal wisdom and humanity, contrived to terrify them, without danger to their lives. This was principally effected by firing a few great guns, at which they were so much alarmed, as afterwards to be brought to tolerable order. Among these islanders, many were inclined to be on friendly terms with our navigators, and especially the old people; whilst most of the younger were daring and infolent, and obliged the English to keep to their arms. It was natural enough that age should be prudent and cautious, and youth bold and impetuous; and yet this distinction, with regard to the behaviour of the various nations which

[•] It is the north-east point of the island, and is situated in the latitude of 18° 43' south, and the longitude of 169° 28' east.

CHAP. which had been visited by Captain Cook, had not occurred before.

1774.

The island where the Captain now stayed, was found, upon enquiry, to be called, by the inhabitants, Tanna; and three others in its neighbourhood, and which could be seen from it, were distinguished by the names of Immer, Erronan

or Footoona, and Annatom.

From fuch information of the natives as our Commander could see no reason to doubt, it appeared that circumcifion was practifed among them, and that they were eaters of human flesh. Concerning the latter subject, he should never have thought of asking them a single question, if they had not introduced it themselves, by enquiring whether the English had the same custom. It hath been argued, that necessity alone could be the origin of this horrid practice. But as the people of Tanna are possessed of fine pork and fowls. together with an abundance of roots and fruits. the plea of necessity cannot be urged in their be-In fact, no instance was seen of their eating human flesh; and, therefore, there might, perhaps, be some reason to hesitate, in pronouncing them to be cannibals.

By degrees the inhabitants grew so courteous and civil, as to permit the English gentlemen to ramble about in the skirts of the woods, and to shoot in them, without affording them the least molestation, or shewing any dislike. One day, some boys of the island having gotten behind thickets, and thrown two or three stones at our people who were cutting wood, they were fired at by the petty officers on duty. Captain Cook, who was then on shore, was alarmed at the report of the musquets; and, when he was informed of the cause, was much displeased that so wanton an

ufe

n

n

le

use should be made of our fire-arms. Proper CHAP. measures were taken by him to prevent such conduct for the future.

In the island of Tanna was a volcano, which fometimes made a dreadful noise, and, at each explosion, which happened every three or four minutes, threw up fire and fmoke in prodigious At one time, great stones were seen high in the air. At the foot of the hill were feveral hot springs; and on the side of it Mr. Forster found fome places whence fmoke of a fulphureous fmell iffued, through cracks or fiffures of the earth. A thermometer, that was placed in a little hole made in one of them, and which in the open air stood only at eighty, rose to a hundred and seventy. In another instance, the mercury rose to a hundred and ninety-one. Our Commander being defirous of getting a near and good view of the volcano, fet out with a party for that purpose. But the gentlemen met with fo many obstructions from the inhabitants, who were jealous of their penetrating far into the country, that they thought proper to return. For this jealoufy of the islanders Captain Cook, in his narrative, has made a very judicious and candid apology.

It is observable, with respect to the volcano of Tanna, that it is not on the ridge of the hill to which it belongs, but on its side. Nor is that hill the highest in the country; for there are others near it of more than double its height. It was in moist and wet weather that the volcano was most violent.

When our Commander was ready to fail from Tanna, an event happened, which gave him much concern. Just as our people were getting some logs into the boat, four or five of the natives

3774.

CHAP. stepped forward to see what they were doing. In consequence of the Indians not being allowed to come within certain limits, the centinel ordered them back, upon which they readily complied. At this time, Captain Cook, who had his eyes fixed upon them, observed the centry present his piece to the men. The Captain was going to reprove him for this action, when, to his inexpressible astonishment, the centry fired. An attack so causeless and extraordinary naturally threw the natives into great confusion. Most of them fled, and it was with difficulty that our Commander could prevail upon a few of them to remain. As they ran off, he perceived one of them to fall, who was immediately lifted up by two others, who took him into the water, washed his wound, and then led him off. The wounded person not being carried far, Captain Cook fent for the furgeon of the ship, and accompanied him to the man, whom they found expiring. The rascal that had fired pretended that an Indian had laid an arrow across his bow, and was going to shoot at him; fo that he apprehended himself to be in danger. This, however, was no more than what the islanders had always done, to shew that they were armed as well as our voyagers. What rendered the present incident the more unfortunate was, that it was not the man who bent the bow, but one who stood near him, that was shot by the centry.

The harbour where the Captain anchored, during his stay at Tanna, was called by him PORT RESOLUTION, after the name of the ship, she being the first vessel by which it was ever entered. It is no more than a little creek, three quarters of a mile in length, and about half that space in

breadth.

breadth. No place can exceed it in its conve-CHAP. nience for taking in wood and water, which are both close to the shore. The inhabitants of the island, with whom our Commander had the most frequent and friendly connections, was named Paowang.

Very little trade could be carried on with the people of Tanna. They had not the least knowledge of iron; and consequently nails, tools, and other articles made of that metal, and which are so greedily sought for in the most eastern isles, were here of no consideration. Cloth could be of

no fervice to persons who go naked.

In

to

red

ied.

yes his

re-

effi-

fo

the

ed,

der

As

all,

ers,

nd,

not

ur-

he

aid

ot

in

nat

ey

n-

ite

w,

he

IT-

T

e-

d. of in h.

Among the productions of the island, there is reason to believe that the nutmeg-tree might be mentioned. This is collected from the circumstance of Mr. Forster's having shot a pigeon, in the craw of which a wild nutmeg was discovered. However, though he took some pains to find the tree, his endeavours were not attended with success.

It was at first thought by our navigators, that the inhabitants of Tanna were a race between the natives of the Friendly Islands, and those of Mallicollo; but by a short acquaintance with them they were convinced that they had little or no affinity to either, excepting in their hair. Some few men, women, and children were seen, whose hair resembled that of the English. With regard, however, to these persons it was obvious, that they were of another nation; and it was understood that they came from Erronan. Two languages were sound to be spoken in Tanna. One of them, which appeared to have been introdu-

[•] It is fituated on the north fide of the most eastern point of the island, in the latitude of 19° 32' 25" \(\frac{1}{2} \) fouth, and in the longitude of 169° 44' 35" east.

other, which is judged to be peculiar to Tanna, Erromango, and Annatom, is different from any that had hitherto been met with by our voy-

agers.

The people of Tanna are of the middle fize, and for the most part slender. There are few tall or flout men among them. In general, they have good features and agreeable countenances. Like all the tropical race, they are active and nimble; and feem to excel in the use of arms, but not to be fond of labour. With respect to the management of their weapons, Mr. Wales hath made an observation so honourable to Homer, that were I to omit it, I should not be forgiven by my classical readers. "I must confess," says Mr. Wales, "I have often been led to think the feats which " Homer represents his heroes as performing with " their spears, a little too much of the marvellous " to be admitted into an heroic poem; I mean " when confined within the strait stays of Ari-" stotle. Nay, even so great an advocate for him as Mr. Pope, acknowledges them to be furpri-" zing. But fince I have feen what these people er can do with their wooden spears, and them " badly pointed, and not of a hard nature, I have of not the least exception to any one passage in that " great poet on this account. But if I fee fewer " exceptions, I can find infinitely more beauties " in him; as he has, I think, scarcely an action, " circumstance, or description of any kind what-" ever, relating to a spear, which I have not seen." and recognized among these people; as, their " whirling motion, and whiftling noise, as they " fly; their quivering motion, as they stick in "the ground when they fall; their meditat" ing their aim, when they are going to throw; CHAP.
" and their shaking them in their hand as they go
" along *."

On the twentieth of August Captain Cook sailed 20 August from Tanna, and employed all the remainder of the month in a farther examination of the islands around him. He had now finished his survey of the whole Archipelago, and had gained a knowledge of it infinitely superior to what had ever been attained before. The northern islands of this Archipelago were first discovered in 1606. by that eminent navigator Quiros, who confidered them as part of the fouthern continent, which, at that time, and till very lately, was supposed to exist. M. de Bougainville was the next person by whom they were visited, in 1768. This gentleman, however, besides landing in the Isle of Lepers, only made the discovery that the country was not connected, but composed of islands, which he called the Great Cyclades. Captain Cook, besides ascertaining the situation and extent of these islands, added to them several new ones which had hitherto been unknown, and explored the whole. He thought, therefore, that he had obtained a right to name them; and accordingly he bestowed upon them the appellation of the New Hebrides +. His title to this honour will not be disputed in any part of Europe, and cer-

4 Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 38-84.

[†] They are fituated between the latitude of 14° 29' and 20° 4' fouth, and between 166° 41' and 170° 21' east longitude, and extend a hundred and twenty-five leagues, in the direction of north-north-west ½ west, and south-south-east ½ east. The principal islands of the New Hebrides, for an account of which the reader is referred to Captain Cook's voyage, are, the Peak of the Etoile, Tierra del Espiritu Santo, Mallicollo, St. Bartholomew, the Isle of Lepers, Aurora, Whitsuntide Isle, Ambrym, Paoom, Apee, Three Hills, Sandwich, Etromango, Tanna, Immer, and Annatom.

CHAP tainly not by fo enlightened and liberal a people as the French nation.

1774.

The feafon of the year now rendered it necesfary for our Commander to return to the fouth, while he had yet fome time to explore any land he might meet with between the New Hebrides and New Zealand; at which last place he intended to touch, that he might refresh his people, and renew his flock of wood and water for another fouthern course. With this view, he failed on 1 & 4 Sept. the first of September, and on the fourth land was discovered; in a harbour belonging to which the Resolution came to an anchor the next day. The defign of Captain Cook was not only to vifit the country, but to have an opportunity of obferving an elipse of the fun, which was soon to happen. An intercourse immediately commenced with the inhabitants, who, during the whole of the Captain's stay, behaved in a very civil and friendly manner. In return, he was folicitous to render them every fervice in his power. To Teabooma the Chief, he fent, among other articles, a

> dog and a bitch, both young, but nearly full grown. It was some time before Teabooma could believe that the two animals were intended for him; but when he was convinced of it, he was lost in an excess of joy. Another, and still more valuable present, was that of a young boar and fow; which, on account of the absence of the Chief when they were brought to land, were re-

> ceived with great hefitation and ceremony. The last time that our Commander went on shore at this place, he ordered an inscription to be cut on a large tree, fetting forth the name of the ship, the date of the year, and other circumstances, which testified that the English were the first discoverers of the country. This he had

had before done, wherever fuch a ceremony CHAP. feemed necessary. How the island was called by the natives, our voyagers could never learn; and, therefore, Captain Cook gave it the name of NEW CALEDONIA. The inhabitants are strong, robust, active, and well made. With regard to the origin of the nation, the Captain judged them to be a race between the people of Tanna and the Friendly Isles; or between those of Tanna and the New Zealanders; or all three. Their language is in some respects a mixture of them all *. In their disposition they are courteous and obliging; and they are not in the least addicted to pilfering. which is more than can be afferted concerning any other nation in this fea.

The women of New Caledonia, and those likewife of Tanna, were found to be much chafter than the females of the more eastern islands. Our Commander never heard that the least favour was obtained from them by any one of his company. Sometimes, indeed, the women would exercise a little coquetry, but they went no farther.

The botanists of the ship did not here complain for want of employment. They were diligent in their researches, and their labours were amply rewarded. Every day brought fome accession to botanical knowledge, or that of other branches of natural history +.

Every thing being ready to put to fea, Captain Cook weighed anchor on the thirteenth of Sep- 13 Sept. tember, with the purpose of examining the coast of New Caledonia. In pursuing this object, by which he was enabled to add greatly to nautical

† Cook, ubi fupra, p. 87-127.

[.] Mr. Forster is of opinion that the language of the New Caledonians is totally different from that of any other nation which had yet been feen in the voyage.

1774. 18 Sept.

CHAP and geographical knowledge, the Resolution was more than once in danger of being loft; and particularly, in the night of the twenty-eighth of the month, she had a narrow escape. Our navigators, on this occasion, were much alarmed; and daylight shewed that their fears had not been ill founded. Indeed, breakers had been continually under their lee, and at a small distance from them; so that they were in the most imminent danger. "We " owed our fafety," fays the Captain, " to the " interpolition of Providence, a good look-out, " and the very brisk manner in which the ship

" was managed."

Our Commander now began to be tired of a coast which he could no longer explore but at the risque of losing the vessel, and ruining the whole voyage. He determined, however, not to leave it, till he knew of what kind some groves of trees were, which, by their uncommon appearance, had occasioned much speculation, and had been mistaken, by several of the gentlemen, for bifaltes. Captain Cook was the more folicitous to ascertain the point, as these trees appeared to be of a fort which might be useful to shipping, and had not been feen any where but in the fouthern parts of New Caledonia. They proved to be a species of spruce pine, very proper for spars, which were then wanted. The discovery was valuable, as, excepting New Zealand, there was not an island known, in the South Pacific Ocean, where a ship could supply herself with a mast or yard, to whatever diffress she might be reduced. It was the opinion of the carpenter of the Resolution, who was a mast-maker as well as a shipwright, that very good masts might be made from the trees in question. The wood of them, which is white, close-grained, tough, and light, is well adapted to that purpose. One of the small islands

islands where the trees were found, was called by CHAP. the Captain the ISLE OF PINES. To another, on account of its affording fufficient employment to the botanists, during the little time they stayed upon it, he gave the name of BOTANY ISLE.

1774-

Captain Cook now took into ferious confideration what was farther to be done. He had pretty well determined the extent of the fouth-west coast of New Caledonia, and would gladly have proceeded to a more accurate survey of the whole, had he had not been deterred, not only by the dangers he must encounter, but by the time required for the undertaking, and which he could not possibly spare. Indeed, when he considered the vast ocean he had to explore to the south; the state and condition of the ship; the near approach of fummer; and that any material accident might detain him in this sea even for another year, he did not think it adviseable to make New Caledonia any longer the object of his attention. But though he was thus obliged, by necessity, for the first time, to leave a coast which he had discovered, before it was fully furveyed, he did not quit it till he had ascertained the extent of the country, and proved, that, excepting New Zealand, it is perhaps the largest island in the South Pacific Ocean to

As the Resolution pursued her course from New Caledonia, land was discovered, which, on a nearer approach, was found to be an island of good height, and five leagues in circuit. Captain Cook named it NORFOLK ISLE, in honour of

[†] New Caledonia extends from the latitude 19° 37' to 22° 30' fouth, and from the longitude of 163° 37' to 167° 14' east. It lies nearly north-west ½ west, and south-east ½ east, and is about eightyfeven leagues long in that direction. Its breadth does not any where exceed ten leagues.

fish.

CHAP. the noble family of Howard +. It was uninhabited; and the first persons that ever set foot on it were unquestionably our English navigators. Va-\$774. rious trees and plants were observed that are common at New Zealand; and, in particular, the flax plant, which is rather more luxuriant here than in any part of that country. The chief produce of the island is a kind of spruce pine, exceedingly ' straight and tall, which grows in great abundance. Such is the fize of many of the trees, that, breaft high, they are as thick as two men can fathom. Among the vegetables of the place, the palmcabbage afforded both a wholesome and palatable refreshment; and, indeed, proved the most agreeable repast that our people had for a considerable time enjoyed. In addition to this gratification, they had the pleasure of procuring some excellent

From Norfolk Isle, our Commander steered for New Zealand, it being his intention to touch at Queen Charlotte's Sound, that he might refresh his crew, and put the ship in a condition to encounter the fouthern latitudes. On the eighteenth of October, he anchored before Ship Cove in that sound; and the first thing he did, after landing, was to look for the bottle he had left on the shore, in which was a memorandum. It was taken away; and it soon appeared, from indubitable circumstances, that the Adventure had been in the cove after it was quitted by the Resolution.

Upon visiting the gardens which had been formed at Motuara, they were found almost in a state of

nature,

⁺ It is fituated in the latitude of 29° 2' 30" fouth, and in the longitude of 168° 16' east.

1774.

nature, having been wholly neglected by the in-CHAP. habitants. Many, however, of the articles were in a flourishing condition, and shewed how well they liked the foil in which they were planted. It was feveral days before any of the natives made their appearance; but when they did fo, and recognised Captain Cook and his friends, joy fucceeded to fear. They hurried in numbers out of the woods, and embraced the English over and over again, leaping and skipping about like madmen. Amidst all this extravagance of joy, they were careful to preserve the honour of their females; for they would not permit some women, who were feen at a distance, to come near our people. The Captain's whole intercourse with the New Zealanders, during this his third visit to Queen Charlotte's Sound, was peaceable and friendly; and one of them, a man apparently of consequence, whose names was Pedero, presented him with a staff of honour, such as the Chiefs generally carry. In return, our Commander dreffed Pedero, who had a fine person, and a good prefence, in a fuit of old clothes, of which he was not a little proud.

Captain Cook still continued his folicitude to flock the island with useful animals; and accordingly, in addition to what he had formerly done, he ordered two pigs, a boar and a fow, to be put on shore. There was reason to believe that some of the cocks and hens which had formerly been left here still existed. None of them, indeed, were feen; but an hen's egg was found, which

had not long been laid.

Mr. Wales had now an opportunity of completing his observations with regard to Queen Charlotte's Sound, fo as to ascertain its latitude and longitude with the utmost accuracy.

to Nov.

37.

CHAP. In the Captain's former voyage there had been IV. an error in this respect. Such were Mr. Wales's abilities and affiduity, that the fame correctness 3774. was maintained by him, in determining the fituations of all the other places which were vifited by

our navigators †.

On the 10th of November, Captain Cook took his departure from New Zealand, in farther purfuit of his great object, the determination of the question concerning the existence of a southern Having failed till the twenty-feventh, continent. in different degrees of latitude, extending from 43 to 55° 48' fouth, he gave up all hopes of finding any more land in this ocean &. He came, therefore, to the resolution of steering directly for the west entrance of the Straits of Magalhaens, with a view of coasting the fouth side of Terra del Fuego, round Cape Horn, to the Strait Le Maire. As the world had hitherto obtained but a very imperfect knowledge of this shore, the Captain thought that the full furvey of it would be more advantageous, both to navigation and geography, than any thing he could expect to find in a higher latitude.

In the profecution of his voyage, our Commander, on the feventeenth of December, reached the west coast of Terra del Fuego; and having continued to range it till the twentieth, he came to an anchor in a place to which he afterwards gave the name of CHRISTMAS SOUND. Through the whole course of his various navigations, he had never feen fo defolate a coast. It feems to be entirely

17 Dec.

20.

west.

The longitude of Queen Charlotte's Sound, at the bottom of Ship Cove, is 174° 25' 7" ½ east, and its latitude 41° 5' 56" ½ south.

† Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p 128—162.

§ The ship, on the twenty-seventh, was in longitude 138° 56'

entirely composed of rocky mountains, without CHAP.
the least appearance of vegetation. These mountains terminate in horrible precipices, the craggy summits of which spire up to a vast height; so that scarcely any thing in nature can appear with a more barren and savage aspect, than the whole of the country.

The run which Captain Cook had made directly across this ocean, in a high fouthern latitude, was believed by him to be the first of the kind that had ever been carried into execution +. He was, therefore, fomewhat particular in remarking every circumstance which seemed to be in the least material. However, he could not but observe. that he had never made a passage any where, of fuch length, or even of a much shorter extent, in which fo few things occurred that were of an interesting nature. Excepting the variation of the compass, he knew of nothing else that was worthy of notice. The Captain had now done with the Southern Pacific Ocean; and he had explored it in fuch a manner, that it would be impossible for any one to think that more could be performed, in a fingle voyage, towards obtaining that end, than had actually been accomplished ¶.

Barren and dreary as the land is about Christmas Sound, it was not wholly destitute of some accommodations, which could not fail of being agreeable to our navigators. Near every harbour they sound fresh water, and wood for suel. The country abounds likewise with wild sowl, and particularly with geese; which afforded a refreshment to the whole crew, that was the more acceptable

[†] He could not possibly know, at this time, that the Adventure had made the passage before him.

[¶] Cook, ubi fupra, p. 163-176.

to celebrate Christmas as chearfully, as perhaps

Providence thus happily provided for them, their Christmas cheer must have been salt beef and pork. Some Madeira wine, the only article of provision that was mended by keeping, was still lest. This, in conjunction with the geese, which were cooked in every variety of method, enabled our people

was done by their friends in England.

The inhabitants of Terra del Fuego, Captain Cook found to be of the nation that he had formerly feen in Success Bay; and the same whom M. de Bougainville has distinguished by the name of Pecharas. They are a little, ugly, half-starved, beardless race, and go almost naked. It is their own fault that they are not better clothed, nature having furnished them with ample materials for that purpose. By lining their feal-skin cloaks with the skins and feathers of aquatic birds; by making the cloaks themselves larger; and by applying the same materials to different parts of clothing, they might render their dress much more warm and comfortable. But while they are doomed to exist in one of the most inhospitable climates in the globe, they have not fagacity enough to avail themselves of those means of adding to the conveniences of life, which Providence has put into their power. In short, the Captain, after having been a witness to so many varieties of the human race, hath pronounced, that of all the nations he had feen, the Pecharas are the most wretched ¶.

Notwithstanding the barrenness of the country, it abounds with a variety of unknown plants, and

gave

gave sufficient employment to the botanists of the CHAP. Resolution. " Almost every plant," says Mr. Forster, " which we gathered" on the rocks, " was new to us, and some species were remark-" able for the beauty of their flowers, or their 56 fmell *."

On the twenty-eighth of December, our Com- 28 Dec. mander failed from Christmas Sound, and proceeded on his voyage, round Cape Horn, through Strait le Maire, to Staten Land. This famous Cape was passed by him on the next day, when he entered the Southern Atlantic Ocean. In some charts, Cape Horn is laid down as belonging to a small island; but this was neither confirmed, nor could it be contradicted by our navigators: for several breakers appeared in the coast, both to the east and west of it, and the hazy weather rendered every object indistinct. Though the summits of some of the hills were rocky, the sides and valleys feemed covered with a green turf, and wooded in tufts t.

In ranging Staten Island a good port was found fituated three leagues to the westward of St. John, and in a northern direction. Upon account of the day on which the discovery of this port was. made, (being the first of January) Captain Cook I January. gave it the name of New YEAR'S HARBOUR. The knowledge of it may be of service to future navigators. Indeed, it would be more convenient for ships bound to the west, or round Cape Horn, if its fituation would permit them to put to fea with an easterly and northerly wind. But this incon-

venience

† The latitude of Cape Horn is 55° 58' fouth, and its longitude was now afcertained to be 67° 46' west.

Forster's Voyage round the World, Vol. II. p. 488.

The Captain, however, has declared, that if he were on a voyage round Cape Horn to the west, and not in want of wood or water, or any other thing which might make it necessary to put into port, he would not approach the land at all. By keeping out at sea the currents would be avoided, which, he was satisfied, would lose their force at ten or twelve leagues from land, and be totally

without influence at a greater distance.

The extent of Terra del Fuego, and confequently that of the Straits of Magalhaens, our Commander afcertained to be less than has been laid down by the generality of navigators. Nor was the coast, upon the whole, found to be so dangerous as has often been represented. The weather, at the same time, was remarkably tem-

perate.

In one of the little isles near Staten Land, and which had been called by Captain Cook New Year's Isles, there was observed a harmony between the different animals of the place, which is too curious to be omitted. It feemed as if they had entered into a league not to diffurb each other's tranquillity. The greater part of the sea-coast is occupied by the fea-lions; the fea-bears take up their abode in the isle; the shags are posted in the highest cliffs: the penguins fix their quarters where there is the most easy communication to and from the fea; and the rest of the birds chuse more retired places. All these animals were occasionally seen to mix together, like domestic cattle and poultry in a farm-yard, without one attempting to molest the other. Nay, the Captain had often observed the eagles and vultures fitting on the hills among the shags, while none of the latter, whether old or young, appeared to be in the least disturbed at

their presence. It may be asked, then, how do CHAP. these birds of prey live? This question our Commander hath answered, by supposing that they strong feed on the carcases of seals and birds which die by various causes. It is probable, from the immense quantity of animals with which the isle abounds, that such carcases exist in great numbers *.

From Staten Island Captain Cook failed, on & January. the fourth of January, with a view, in the first place, of discovering that extensive coast, laid down by Mr. Dalrymple in his chart, in which is the gulph of St. Sebastian. In order to have all other parts before him, the Captain defigned to make the western point of that gulph. As he had fome doubt of the existence of such a coast, this appeared to him the best route for determining the matter, and for exploring the fouthern part of this ocean. When he came to the fituations assigned to the different points of the gulph of St. Sebastian, neither land nor any unequivocal figns of land were discovered. On the contrary, it was evident that there could not be any extensive tract of country in the direction which had been supposed.

Proceeding in his voyage, land was feen on the fourteenth, which was at first mistaken for an island of ice. It was in a manner wholly covered with snow. From the person by whom it was first discovered, it obtained the name of Willis's Island. It is a high rock, of no great extent, near to which are some rocky islots. Another island, of a larger compass, on account of the vast number of birds which were upon it, was called

BIRD

Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 187-206. + It is fituated in the latitude of 54° south, and the longitude of 38° 23' west.

CHAP. BIRD ISLE. A more extensive range of country had been feen for fome time, which Captain Cook reached on the seventeenth, and where he landed, 1775. on the same day, in three different places. The head of the bay, in which he came to shore, was terminated by particular ice-cliffs, of confiderable height. Pieces were continually breaking off, and floating out to fea; and while our navigators were in the bay, a great fall happened, which made a noise like a cannon. No less savage and horrible were the inner parts of the country. "The wild rocks raifed their fummits, till they " were lost in the clouds, and the valleys lay co-" vered with everlasting fnow." There was not a tree to be feen, or a shrub found that was even big enough to make a tooth-pick. The only ve-

> When our Commander landed in the bay, he displayed the English colours; and, under a discharge of small arms, took possession of the country in his Majesty's name. It was not, however, a discovery which was ever likely to be productive of any confiderable benefit. In his return to the ship, Captain Cook brought with him a quantity of feals and penguins, which were an acceptable present to the crew; not from the want of provifions, which were plentiful in every kind, but from a change of diet. Any fort of fresh meat was preferred by most on board to falt. The Captain himself was now, for the first time, tired of the falted meats of the ship; and though the flesh of the penguins could scarcely vie with bullock's liver, its freshness was sufficient to render it com-

> getation that was met with, was a coarse strongbladed grass, growing in tusts, wild burnet, and a plant like moss, which sprang from the rocks.

> > paratively

which he had been, he gave the name of Possession BAY *.

The land in which this bay lies, was at first judged by our navigators to be part of a great continent. But, upon coasting round the whole country, it was proved to a demonstration that it was only an island of seventy leagues in circuit. In honour of his Majesty, Captain Cook called it the ISLE OF GEORGIA +. It could scarcely have been thought that an island of no greater extent than this, fituated between the latitude of fiftyfour and fifty-five, should, in a manner, be wholly covered, many fathoms deep, with frozen fnow, in the height of fummer. The fides and fummits of the lofty mountains were cased with snow and ice; and an incredible quantity lay in the valleys. So immense was the quantity, that our Commander did not think it could be the produce of the island. Some land, therefore, which he had feen at a distance, induced him to believe that it might belong to an extensive tract; and gave him hopes of discovering a continent. In this respect, however, he was disappointed; but the disappointment did not fit heavy upon him; fince to judge of the bulk by the apprehended fample, it would not have been worth the discovery. It was remarkable that our voyagers did not fee a river, or a stream of fresh water, on the whole coast of the Isle of Georgia. Captain Cook judged it to be highly probable that there are no perennial springs in the country; and that the inte-

t

S

h

[•] It is fituated in the latitude of 54° 5' fouth, and the longitude of 37° 18' west.

[†]It is fituated between the latitudes of 53° 57' and 54° 57' fouth; and between 38° 13' and 35° 34' west longitude.

25 Jan. 27.

31.

c HAP rior parts, in consequence of their being much elevated, never enjoy heat enough to melt the snow in sufficient quantities to produce a river of stream of water. In sailing round the island, our navigators were almost continually involved in a thick mist; so that, for any thing they knew to the contrary, they might be surrounded with dan-

gerous rocks.

The Captain, on the twenty-fifth of the month, steered from the Isle of Georgia, and, on the twenty-feventh, computed that he was in latitude fixty, fouth. Farther than this he did not intend to go, unless some certain signs of soon meeting with land should be discovered. There was now a long hollow swell from the west, which was a strong indication that no land was to be met with in that direction; and hence arose an additional proof of what has already been remarked, that the extensive coast, laid down in Mr. Dalrymple's chart of the ocean between Africa and America. and the Gulph of St. Sebastian, doth not exist. Not to mention the various islands which were feen in the profecution of the voyage, and the names that were given to them, I shall only advert to a few of the more material circumstances. On an elevated coast, which appeared in fight upon the thirty-first, our Commander bestowed the appellation of the Southern Thule. The reason of his giving it this name was, that it is the most fouthern land that had ever yet been discovered *. It is every where covered with fnow, and displays a surface of vast height. On this day, our voyagers were in no small danger from a great westerly swell, which fet right upon the shore, and threatened to carry them on the most horrible coast in the world. Happily, the discovery of a point to the north,

[.] Its latitude is 59° 13' 30" fouth, and its longitude 27° 45' west.

beyond which no land could be feen, relieved CHAP. them from their apprehensions. To the more distinguished tracts of country, which were discovered from the thirty-first of January to the 31 Jan. fixth of February, Captain Cook gave the names 6 Feb. of Cape Bristol, Cape Montagu, Saunders's ISLE, CANDLEMAS ISLES, and SANDWICH'S LAND. The last is either a group of islands, or else a point of the continent. For that there is a tract of land near the pole, which is the fource of most of the ice that is spread over this vast Southern Ocean, was the Captain's firm opinion. He also thought it probable, that this land must extend farthest to the north where it is opposite to the Southern Atlantic and Indian Oceans. Ice had always been found by him farther to the north in these oceans than any where else, and this he judged could not be the cafe, if there were not land of confiderable extent to the fouth. ever, the greatest part of this fouthern continent, if it actually exists, must lie within the polar circle, where the fea is fo encumbered with ice, that the land is rendered inaccessible. So great is the rifque which is run, in examining a coast in these unknown and icy seas, that our Commander, with a modest and well-grounded boldness, could affert, that no man would ever venture farther than he had done; and that the lands which may lie to the fouth will never be explored. Thick fogs, fnow storms, intense cold, and every thing belide that can render navigation dangerous, must be encountered; all which difficulties are greatly heightened by the inexpressible horrid afpect of the country. It is a country doomed by nature never once to feel the warmth of the fun's rays, but to lie buried in everlafting fnow and ice. Whatever ports there may be on the coaft, they are almost entirely covered with frozen snow of a vast thick.

25 Jan.

27.

31.

CHAP rior parts, in consequence of their being much elevated, never enjoy heat enough to melt the 1775. Inow in sufficient quantities to produce a river of stream of water. In failing round the island, our havigators were almost continually involved in a thick mist; so that, for any thing they knew to the contrary, they might be furrounded with dan-

gerous rocks.

The Captain, on the twenty-fifth of the month, steered from the Isle of Georgia, and, on the twenty-feventh, computed that he was in latitude fixty, fouth. Farther than this he did not intend to go, unless some certain signs of soon meeting with land should be discovered. There was now a long hollow swell from the west, which was a ftrong indication that no land was to be met with in that direction; and hence arose an additional proof of what has already been remarked, that the extensive coast, laid down in Mr. Dalrymple's chart of the ocean between Africa and America. and the Gulph of St. Sebastian, doth not exist. Not to mention the various islands which were feen in the profecution of the voyage, and the names that were given to them, I shall only advert to a few of the more material circumstances. On an elevated coast, which appeared in fight upon the thirty-first, our Commander bestowed the appellation of the Southern Thule. The reason of his giving it this name was, that it is the most fouthern land that had ever yet been discovered *. It is every where covered with fnow, and displays a furface of vast height. On this day, our voyagers were in no small danger from a great westerly swell, which fet right upon the shore, and threatened to carry them on the most horrible coast in the world. Happily, the discovery of a point to the north,

[•] Its latitude is 59° 13' 30" fouth, and its longitude 27° 45' west.

1771.

31 Jan.

beyond which no land could be feen, relieved CHAP. them from their apprehensions. To the more distinguished tracts of country, which were discovered from the thirty-first of January to the fixth of February, Captain Cook gave the names of Cape Bristol, Cape Montagu, Saunders's ISLE, CANDLEMAS ISLES, and SANDWICH'S LAND. The last is either a group of islands, or else a point of the continent. For that there is a tract of land near the pole, which is the fource of most of the ice that is spread over this vast Southern Ocean, was the Captain's firm opinion. He also thought it probable, that this land must extend farthest to the north where it is opposite to the Southern Atlantic and Indian Oceans. Ice had always been found by him farther to the north in these oceans than any where else, and this he judged could not be the cafe, if there were not land of confiderable extent to the fouth. ever, the greatest part of this southern continent, if it actually exists, must lie within the polar circle, where the fea is fo encumbered with ice, that the land is rendered inaccessible. So great is the rifque which is run, in examining a coast in these unknown and icy seas, that our Commander, with a modest and well-grounded boldness, could affert, that no man would ever venture farther than he had done; and that the lands which may lie to the fouth will never be explored. Thick fogs, fnow florms, intense cold, and every thing beside that can render navigation dangerous, must be encountered; all which difficulties are greatly heightened by the inexpressible horrid afpect of the country. It is a country doomed by nature never once to feel the warmth of the fun's rays, but to lie buried in everlafting fnow and ice. Whatever ports there may be on the coast, they are almost entirely covered with frozen fnow of a vast thick. X

be fo far open as to invite a ship into it, she would run the risque of being fixed there for ever, or of coming out in an ice island. To this it may

be added, that the islands and floats on the coast, the great falls from the ice cliffs in the port, or a heavy snow storm, attended with a sharp frost,

might be equally fatal.

Nothing could exceed the inclination of Captain Cook, if it had been practicable, to penetrate farther to the fouth: but difficulties like these were not to be furmounted. If he had rifqued all that had been done during the voyage, for the fake of discovering and exploring a coast, which, when discovered and explored, would have answered no end whatever, or have been of the least use either to navigation or geography, or indeed to any other science, he would justly have been charged with inexcufable temerity. He determined, therefore, to alter his course to the east, and to fail in quest of Bouvet's Land, the existence of which was yet to be fettled. Accordingly, this was the principal object of his pursuit, from the fixth to the twenty-fecond of the month. By that day he had run down thirteen degrees of longitude, in the very latitude affigned for Bouvet's Land. No fuch land, however, was difcovered; nor did any proofs occur of the existence of Cape Circumcifion. Our Commander was at this time no more than two degrees of longitude from the route he had taken to the fouth, when he left the Cape of Good Hope. It would, therefore, have been to no purpose to proceed any farther to the east in this parallel. But being defirous of determining the question concerning fome land that was supposed to have been seen more to the fouth, he directed his course for the situation in which the discovery

6 Jan. to by him in this pursuit, to no effectual purpose.

After having run over the place where the land was imagined to lie, without meeting with the least signs of any, it became certain that the ice islands had deceived our navigators as well as Mr. Bouvet*.

Captain Cook had now made the circuit of the fouthern ocean in a high latitude, and traverfed it in fuch a manner as to leave not the least room for the possibility of there being a continent, unless near the pole, and out of the reach of navigation. By twice visiting the tropical sea, he had not only fettled the fituation of fome old discoveries, but made many new ones; and, indeed, even in that part, had left little more to be accomplished. The intention of the voyage had, in every respect, been fully answered, and the fouthern hemisphere sufficiently explored. A final end was hereby put to the fearthing after a fouthern continent, which, for nearly two centuries past, had occasionally engrossed the attention of fome of the maritime powers, and had been urged with great ardour by philosophers and geographers in different ages.

The great purpose of his navigation round the globe being thus completed, the Captain began to direct his views towards England. He had, indeed, some thoughts of protracting his course a little longer, for the sake of revisiting the place where the French discovery is said to be situated. But, upon mature deliberation, he determined to lay aside his intention. He considered that, if this discovery had really been made, the end would be as fully answered as if it had been done

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 207-238.

CHAP by himself. It could only be an island; and if a judgment might be formed from the degree of cold which our voyagers had experienced in that latitude, it could not be a fertile one. Besides, our Commander would hereby have been kept two months longer at fea, and that in a tempestuous latitude, with which the ship was not in a condition to struggle. Her fails and rigging were fo much worn, that fomething was giving way every hour; and there was nothing left, either to repair or to replace them. The provisions of the vessel were in such a state of decay, that they afforded little nourishment, and the company had been long without refreshments. Indeed, the crew were yet healthy, and would chearfully have gone wherever the Captain judged it proper to lead them; but he was fearful lest the scurvy should lay hold of them, at a time when none of the remedies were left by which it could be removed. He thought, likewife, that it would have been cruel in him to have continued the fatigues and hardships they were perpetually exposed to, longer than was absolutely necessary. Throughout the whole voyage, they had merited by their behaviour every indulgence which it was in his power to bestow. Animated by the conduct of the officers, they had shewn that no difficulties or dangers which came in their way were incapable of being furmounted; nor had their activity, courage, and chearfulness been in the least abated by the separation from them of their confort the Adventure.

From all these considerations, which were evidently the dictates of wisdom and humanity, Captain Cook was induced to fpend no longer time in fearching for the French discoveries, and to steer for the Cape of Good Hope. He determined, however, to direct his course in such a manner

£

t

,

t

a

C

y

r

f

y

1

e

e

C

y

f

1

as to look for the Isles of Denia and Marseveen, CHAP. which are laid down in Dr. Halley's variation chart*. After failing in the proper latitudes, from the twenty-fifth of February to the thires of March, no such islands were discovered. Nothing, indeed, had been seen that could encourage our voyagers to persevere in a search after them; and much time could not now be spared, either for the purpose of sinding them, or of proving their non-existence. Every one on board was for good reasons impatient to get into port. The Captain, therefore, could no longer avoid yielding to the general wishes, and resolving to proceed to the Cape, without farther delay.

Soon after our Commander had come to this determination, he demanded of the officers and petty officers, in pursuance of his instruction, the log-books and journals they had kept; which were delivered to him accordingly, and sealed up for the inspection of the Admiralty. He enjoined them also, and the whole crew, not to divulge where they had been, till they were permitted to do so by their lordships; an injunction, a compliance with which might probably be rendered somewhat dissicult, from the natural tendency there is in men to relate the extraordinary enterprises and adventures wherein they have been concerned.

As the Resolution approached towards the Cape of Good Hope, she fell in first with a Dutch East Indiaman from Bengal, commanded by Captain Bosch, and next with an English Indiaman, being the True Briton, from China, of which Cap-

^{*} They are laid down in the latitude of 41° 1 fouth, and about 4° of longitude to the east of the meridian of the Cape of Good Hope.

[†] He was at this time in the latitude of 388 38' fouth, and the longitude of 23° 37' east.

very obligingly offered to our navigators fugar, arrack, and whatever he had to spare; and Captain Broadly, with the most ready generosity, sent them fresh provisions, tea, and various articles which could not fail of being peculiarly acceptable to people in their situation. Even a parcel of old news-papers furnished no slight gratification to persons who had so long been deprived of obtaining any intelligence concerning their country and the state of Europe. From these vessels Captain Cook received some information with regard to what had happened to the Adventure, after her separation from the Resolution.

he anchored in Table Bay; where he found feveral Dutch ships, some French, and the Ceres, an English East Indiaman, bound directly for England, under the command of Captain Newte. By this gentleman he sent a copy of the preceding part of his journal, some charts, and other

drawings, to the Admiralty +. ad bad your on

During the circum-navigation of the globe, from the period of our Commander's leaving the Cape of Good Hope to his return to it again, he had failed no less than twenty thousand leagues. This was an extent of voyage nearly equal to three times the equatorial circumference of the earth, and which had never been accomplished before, by any ship, in the same compass of duration. In such a case, it could not be a matter of surprise, that the rigging and sails of the Resolution should be essentially damaged, and even

+ Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 239-250.

^{*} With our mavigators, who had failed round the world, it was Wednesday the twenty-second of March; but at the Cape of Good Hope it was Tuesday the twenty-first.

ch

ur,

P-

y,

ti-

C-

r-

i-

d

ir

h

,

1775.

31.

worn out: and yet, in all this great run, which CHAP had been made in every latitude between nine and feventy-one, the did not fpring either lowmast, top-mast, lower or top-sail yard; nor did fhe fo much as break a lower or top-mast shroud. These happy circumstances were owing to the good properties of the veffel, and the fingular care and abilities of her officers*.

On the remainder of the voyage it is not neceffary to enlarge. Though it was conducted with the fame attention to navigation and geography, and with the fame fagacity in marking whatever was worthy of observation, nevertheless, as it was not employed in traverling unknown feas, or in discovering countries that had not been heard of before, it may be fufficient briefly to mention the places at which Captain Cook touched, before his arrival in England. The repairs of the ship having been completed, and the necessary stores gotten on board, together with a fresh supply of provisions and water, he left the Cape of Good Hope on the twenty-seventh of April, and reached the Island of St. Helena on 27 April. the fifteenth of May. Here he staid till the twen-15 May. ty-first, when he failed for the Island of Ascenfion, where he anchored on the twenty-eighth. From this place he directed his course, on the thirty-first, for the Island of Fernando de Noronha, at which he arrived on the ninth of June.

In the progress of the voyage, our Commander made an experiment upon the still for procuring fresh water; and the result of the trial was, that the invention is useful upon the whole, but that to trust entirely to it would by no means be Indeed, provided there is not a fcaradvisable.

* Voyage, ubi supra, p. 265, 266.

30.

water may be obtained as will support life; but no efforts will be able to procure a quantity sufficient for the preservation of health, especially in hot climates. Captain Cook was convinced, by experience, that nothing contributes more to the health of seamen, than having plenty of water.

On the fourteenth of July, the Captain came 14 July. to an anchor in the Bay of Fayal, one of the Azores islands. His sole design in stopping here, was to give Mr. Wales an opportunity of finding the rate of the watch, that hereby he might be enabled to fix the longitude of these islands with the greater degree of certainty. No fooner, therefore, had our Commander anchored, than he fent an officer to wait on the English conful, and to acquaint the governor with the arrival of our navigators, requesting his permission for Mr. Wales to make observations on shore, for the purpose now mentioned. Mr. Dent, who then acted as conful, not only obtained this permission, but accommodated Mr. Wales with a convenient place in his garden, to fet up his instruments.

This object being accomplished, Captain Cook proceeded, on the nineteenth, with all expedition for England. On the thirtieth of the same month, he anchored at Spit-head, and landed at Portsmouth, having been absent from Great Britain three years and eighteen days, in which time, and under all changes of climate, he had lost but four men, and only one of them by sickness*.

* Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 268-289.

ovided there is a

CHAPTER

sol kiranis blissinged beargabulg a van broks 3 53 Assemble of smooth ago, the second

to street edited Kelegoriti edeller line CHAPTER THE FIFTH,

The History of Captain Cook's Life, from the Con- CHAP. clusion of his second Voyage round the World, to the Commencement of his Voyage to the Pacific Ocean.

THE able manner in which Captain Cook had conducted the preceding voyage, the discoveries he had made, and his complete determination of the grand point he had been fent to afcertain, justly and powerfully recommended him to the protection and encouragement of all those who had patronized the undertaking. No alteration had occurred, during his absence, in the Prefidency of the Admiralty department. The noble Lord, whose extensive views had taken such a lead in the plans of navigation and discovery, still continued at the head of that board; and it could not be otherwise than a high satisfaction to him that so extraordinary a degree of success had attended his defigns for the enlargement of science. His lordship lost no time in representing Captain Cook's merits to the King: nor did his Majesty stand in need of folicitations to shew favour to a man who had so eminently fulfilled his royal and munificent intentions. Accordingly, our navigator, on the ninth of August, was raised to the rank of a Post Captain. Three days afterwards, he received a more diftinguished and sub- 9 August. stantial mark of the approbation of Government: for he was then appointed a Captain in Greenwich Hospital; a situation which was intended to afford

CHAP. afford him a pleasing and honourable reward for his illustrious labours and fervices*.

1775.

It will eafily be supposed that the lovers of science would, in general, be peculiarly attentive to the effects refulting from Captain Cook's discoveries. The additions he had made to the knowledge of geography, navigation, and aftronomy, and the new views he had opened of the diversified ftate of human life and manners, could not avoid commanding their efteem, and exciting their admiration. With many persons of philofophic literature he was in the habits of intimacy and friendship; and he was particularly acquainted with Sir John Pringle, at that time Prefident of the Royal Society. It was natural, therefore, that his scientific friends should wish him to become a member of this learned body; the confequence of which was, that, in the latter end of the year 1775, he was proposed as a candidate for election. On the twenty-ninth of February, 1776, he was unanimously chosen; and he was admitted 29 Feb. on the feventh of March+. That same evening, a paper was read, which he had addressed to Sir John Pringle, containing an account of the method he had taken to preserve the health of the crew of his majesty's ship the Resolution, during her voyage round the worldt. Another paper, at the request of the President, was communi-18 April. cated by him, on the eighteenth of April, relative to the tides in the South Seas. The tides particularly confidered were those in the Endeayour River, on the east coast of New Hollands.

1776.

§ Ibid. p. 447-449.

From the books of the Admiralty.

⁺ From the register of the Royal Society, and the information of Mr. Planta.

¹ Philosophical Transactions, vol. lxvi. p. 402-406.

for

ci-

ve

0-

V-

ot

g

)-

yat

A still greater honour was in referve for Cap-CHAP. tain Cook than the election of him to be a common member of the Royal Society. It was refolved by Sir John Pringle, and the Council of the Society, to bestow upon him the estimable prize of the gold medal, for the best experimental paper of the year; and no determination could be founded in greater wisdom and justice. If Captain Cook had made no important discoveries, if he had not determined the question concerning a fouthern continent, his name would have been entitled to immortality, on account of his humane attention to, and his unparalleled fuccess in preserving the lives and health of his seamen. He had good reason, upon this head, to assume the pleafurable, but modest language, with which he has concluded his narrative of his fecond navigation round the globe: "Whatever," fays he, " may be the publick judgment about other mat-"ters, it is with real fatisfaction, and without " claiming any merit but that of attention to my "duty, that I can conclude this account with an " observation, which facts enable me to make, " that our having discovered the possibility of pre-" ferving health among a numerous ship's compa-" ny, for fuch a length of time, in fuch varieties " of climate, and amidst such continued hard-" fhips and fatigues, will make this voyage re-" markable, in the opinion of every benevolent " person, when the disputes about the Southern " Continent shall have ceased to engage the atten-"tion, and to divide the judgment of philoso-" phers *."

It was the custom of Sir John Pringle, at the delivery of Sir Godfrey Copley's annual medal,

tó

^{*} Cooke's fecond voyage, vol. ii. p. 293.

CHAP. to give an elaborate discourse, containing the history of that part of science for the improvement of which the medal was conferred. Upon the present occasion, the President had a subject to enlarge upon, which was perfectly congenial to his disposition and studies. His own life had been much employed in pointing out the means which tended not only to cure, but to prevent, the difeafes of mankind; and, therefore, it was with peculiar pleasure and affection that he celebrated the conduct of his friend, who, by precautions equally wife and fimple, had rendered the circum-navigation of the globe, fo far as health is concerned, quite a harmless undertaking *. Towards the beginning of his discourse, Sir John justly asks, "What enquiry can be so useful as "that, which hath for its object the faving of the " lives of men? and when shall we find one more " fuccefsful than that before us? Here," adds the President, " are no vain boastings of the empiric, " nor ingenious and delusive theories of the dog-" matist; but a concise and artless, and an incon-" tested relation of the means, by which, under "Divine favour, Captain Cook, with a company " of a hundred and eighteen men, performed a "voyage of three years and eighteen days," throughout all the climates, from fifty-two de-" grees north to seventy-one degrees south, with " the loss of only one man by fickness + .- I would "now enquire," proceeds Sir John Pringle, " of the most conversant in the study of bills of mortality, whether, in the most healthful " climate, and in the best condition of life, they 66 have

^{*}Life of Sir John Pringle, prefixed to his Six Discourses, p. xlii.

⁺ Mr. Patten, furgeon to the Resolution, informed Sir John Pringle, that this one man, who died of a confumption terminating in a dropfy, began so early to complain of a cough and other consumptive fymptoms, which had never left him, that his lungs must have been affected before he came on board.

" have ever found fo small a number of deaths, CHAP. " within that space of time? How great and " agreeable then must our surprize be, after pe-" rufing the histories of long navigations in for-" mer days, when so many perished by marine diseases, to find the air of the sea acquitted of " all malignity, and, in fine, that a voyage " round the world may be undertaken with " less danger, perhaps, to health, than a com-

" mon tour in Europe!"

iif-

nt

he

to

is en

h

£

h

d

i-

e

In the progress of his discourse, the President recounted the dreadful calamities and destruction the scurvy had heretofore brought upon mariners in voyages of great length; after which he pointed out at large, and illustrated with his own observations, the method pursued by Captain Cook for preferving the health of his men. In conclusion, Sir John remarked, that the Royal Society never more cordially or more meritoriously bestowed the gold medal, that: faithful fymbol of their esteem and affection, " For if," fays he, " Rome decreed the civic " crown to him who faved the life of a fingle ci-" tizen, what wreaths are due to that man, " who having himfelf faved many, perpetuates " in your Transactions the means by which " Britain may now, on the most distant voy-" ages, preserve numbers of her intrepid sons, " her mariners; who, braving every danger, " have fo liberally contributed to the fame, to " the opulence, and to the maritime empire, of " their country * !"

One

^{*} Sir John Pringle's Six Discourses, p. 145-147, 199 .- It cannot but be acceptable to insert here, from the conclusion of Captain Cook's second voyage, his enumeration of the several causes, to which, under the care of Providence, the uncommon good state of health, experienced by his people, was owing. " In the Introduction," fays he, mention has been made of the extraordinary attention

CHAP. One circumstance alone was wanting to comv. plete the pleasure and celebrity arising from the aflignment

"paid by the Admiralty, in causing such articles to be put on board, as either from experience or suggestion it was judged would tend to preserve the health of the seamen. I shall not trespass upon the reader's time in mentioning them all, but confine myself to such

" as were found the most useful.

"We were furnished with a quantity of malt, of which was made Saveet Wort. To such of the men as shewed the least symptoms of the scurvy; and also to such as were thought to be threatened with that disorder, this was given, from one to two or three pints a day each man; or such proportion as the surgeon found necessary, which sometimes amounted to three quarts. This is, without doubt, one of the best antiscorbutic sea-medicines yet discovered; and, if used in time, will, with proper attention to other things, I am persuaded, prevent the scurvy from making any great progress for a considerable while. But I am not altogether of opinion

"that it will cure it at sea.
"Sour Krout, of which we had a large quantity, is not only a
"wholesome vegetable food, but, in my judgment, highly antiscorbutic; and it spoils not by keeping. A pound of this was
ferved to each man, when at sea, twice a week, or oftener, as

" was thought necessary.

"Portable Broth was another great article, of which we had a large supply. An ounce of this to each man, or such other proportion as circumstances pointed out, was boiled in their pease, three days in the week; and when we were in places where vege-tables were to be got, it was boiled with them, and wheat or oatmeal, every morning for breakfast; and also with pease and vege-tables for dinner. It enabled us to make several nourishing and wholesome messes, and was the means of making the people eat a greater quantity of vegetables than they would otherwise have done.

"Rob of Lemon and Orange, is an antiscorbutic we were not without. The surgeon made use of it in many cases, with great

" fuccefs.

"Amongst the articles of visualling, we were supplied with Sugar in the room of Oil, and with Wheat for a part of our Oatmeal; and were certainly gainers by the exchange. Sugar, I apprehend, is a very good antiscorbutic; whereas oil (such as the navy is usually supplied with), I am of opinion has the contrary effect.

"But the introduction of the most falutary articles, either as pro"visions or medicines, will generally prove unsuccessful, unless
"fupported by certain regulations. On this principle, many years
"experience, together with some hints I had from Sir Hugh Pallifer,
"A Captains

affignment of Sir Godfrey Copley's medal. CHAP. Captain Cook was not himself present, to hear the discourse of the President, and to receive

" Captains Campbell, Wallis, and other intelligent officers, en-" abled me to lay a plan whereby all was to be governed.

"The crew were at three watches, except upon some extraordi-" nary occasions. By this means they were not so much exposed to " the weather as if they had been at watch and watch; and had ge-" nerally dry cloaths to shift themselves, when they happened to " get wet. Care was also taken to expose them as little to wet wea-

" ther as possible.

"Proper methods were used to keep their persons, hammocks, " bedding, cloaths, &c. constantly clean and dry. Equal care was " taken to keep the ship clean and dry betwixt decks. Once or "twice a week she was aired with fires; and when this could not " be done, she was smoaked with gunpowder, mixed with vinegar "or water. I had also, frequently, a fire made in an iron pot, at the bottom of the well, which was of great use in purifying the air in the lower parts of the ship. To this, and to cleanliness, as "well in the ship as amongst the people, too great attention cannot be paid: the least neglect occasions a putrid and disagreeable smell " below, which nothing but fires will remove.

"Proper attention was paid to the ship's coppers, so that they

" were kept constantly clean.

"The fat, which boiled out of the falt beef and pork, I never " fuffered to be given to the people; being of opinion that it pro-

" motes the fcurvy.

"I was careful to take in water wherever it was to be got, even " though we had not want of it. Because I look upon fresh water " from the shore, to be more wholesome than that which has been "kept some time on board a ship. Of this essential article we were never at an allowance, but had always plenty for every necessary purpose. Navigators in general cannot, indeed, expect, nor " would they wish-to meet with such advantages in this respect, as "fell to my lot. The nature of our voyage carried us into very high latitudes. But the hardships and dangers inseparable from " that fituation, were in some degree compensated by the fingular " felicity we enjoyed, of extracting inexhaustible supplies of fresh " water from an ocean strewed with ice.

"We came to few places, where either the art of man, or the " bounty of nature, had not provided some fort of refreshment or " other, either in the animal or vegetable way. It was my first care " to procure whatever of any kind could be met with, by every " means in my power; and to oblige our people to make use thereof,

CHAP. the honour conferred upon him. Some months , before the anniversary of St. Andrew's day, he had failed on his last expedition. The medal, therefore, was delivered into the hands of Mrs. Cook, whose satisfaction at being entrusted with fo valuable a pledge of her husband's reputation cannot be questioned. Neither can it be doubted, but that the Captain, before his departure from England, was fully apprized of the mark of diffinction which was intended for him by the Royal Society.

Captain Cook, after the conclusion of his fecond voyage, was called upon to appear in the world in the character of an author. In the account that was published, by authority, of his former circum-navigation of the globe, as well as of those which had been performed by the Captains Byron, Carteret, and Wallis, it was thought requifite to procure the affiftance of a professed literary man, whose business it should be to draw up a narrative from the feveral journals of these Commanders. Accordingly, Dr. Hawkesworth, as is univerfally known, was employed for the purpose.

both by my example and authority; but the benefits arising from " refreshments of any kind soon became so obvious, that I had little

" occasion to recommend the one, or to exert the other "."

In a letter which Captain Cook wrote to Sir John Pringle, just before he embarked on his last voyage, dated Plymouth Sound, July 7, 1776, he expressed himself as follows: "I entirely agree with you, that the dearness of the rob of lemons and of oranges " will hinder them from being furnished in large quantities. But "I do not think this so necessary; for, though they may assist other "things, I have no great opinion of them alone. Nor have I a " higher cpinionof vinegar. My people had it very sparingly dur-"ing the late voyage, and, towards the latter part, none at all; " and yet we experienced no ill effect from the want of it. The " custom of washing the inside of the ship with vinegar, I seldom "observed; thinking that fire and smoke answered the purpose " much bettert."

^{*} Vol. ii. p. 289-292. + Sir John Pringle's Six Discourses, p. 200.

13

le

1,

h

n

e

e - - f

1776.

In the present case, it was not esteemed necessary C H A P. to have recourse to such an expedient. Captain Cook was justly regarded as fufficiently qualified to relate his own ftory. His journal only required to be divided into chapters, and perhaps to be amended by a few verbal corrections. It is not fpeaking extravagantly to fay, that, in point of composition, his history of his voyage reflects upon him no small degree of credit. His stile is natural, clear, and manly; being well adapted to the fubject and to his own character: and it is possible that a pen of more studied elegance would not have given any additional advantage to the narration. It was not till fome time after Captain's Cook's leaving England that the work was published; but, in the mean while, the superintendence of it was undertaken by his learned and valuable friend, Dr. Douglas, whose late promotion to the mitre hath afforded pleasure to every literary man, and of every denomination. the Voyage appeared, it came recommended by the accuracy and excellence of its charts, and by a great variety of engravings, from the curious and beautiful drawings of Mr. Hodges. This work was followed by the publication of the original aftronomical observations, which had been made by Mr. Wales in the Resolution, and by Mr. Bayley in the Adventure. It was at the expence of the Commissioners of Longitude that these observations were made, and it was by their order that they were printed. The book of Mr. Wales and Mr. Bayley displays, in the strongest light, the scientific use and value of Captain Cook's voyage*. Some

^{*} Besides the works which came from authority, Mr. George Forster published, in two volumes quarto, " A voyage round the

CHAP. V. 1776.

Some of the circumstances which have now been mentioned, have designedly been brought forward more early in point of time than should otherwise have been done, in order to prevent any interruption in the course of the subsequent narrative.

Though Captain Cook was expected to fit down in repose, after his toils and labours, the design of farther discoveries was not laid aside. The illusion, indeed, of a terra Australis incognita, to any purpose of commerce, colonization, and utility, had been dispelled: but there was another grand question which remained to be determined; and that was the practicability of a northern passage to the Pacific Ocean.

It had long been a favourite object with navigators, and particularly with the English, to discover a shorter, a more commodious, and a more profitable course of sailing to Japan and China, and, indeed, to the East Indies in general, than by making the tedious circuit of the Cape of Good Hope. To find a western passage round North America, had been attempted by several bold adventurers, from Frobisher's sirst voyage, in 1576, to those of James and of Fox, in 1631. By these expeditions a large addition was made to the knowledge of the northern extent of America, and Hudson's and Bassin's Bays were discovered.

[&]quot;World, in his Britannic Majesty's sloop, Resolution." This appeared in 1777. The next year, Dr. John Reinhold Forster communicated to the public, in one volume, quarto, "Observations "made during a Voyage round the World, on Physical Geography, "Natural History, and Ethic Philosophy." It need not be said, that these works contain much curious and useful information. Mr. George Forster having been thought to be guilty of some misrepresentations with regard to certain facts, Mr. Wales wrote remarks upon his book, to which Mr. Forster replied. As to one or two hasty and premature attempts to gratify the public curiosity, they are not worthy to be noticed.

But the wished-for passage, on that side, into the CHAP. Pacific Ocean, was still unattained. Nor were the various attempts of our countrymen, and of the Dutch, to find fuch a paffage, by failing round the north of Asia, in an eastern direction, attended with better fuccess. Wood's failure, in 1676, appears to have concluded the long lift of unfortunate expeditions in that century. The discovery, if not absolutely despaired of, had been unfuccessful in such a number of instances, that it ceased, for many years, to be an object of pura fuit *.

The question was again revived in the present century. Mr. Dobbs, a warm advocate for the probability of a north-west passage through Hudfon's Bay, once more recalled the attention of this country to that undertaking. In confequence of the spirit by him excited, Captain Middleson was fent out by Government in 1741, and Captain Smith and Moore in 1746. But, though an act of Parliament had been passed, which secured a reward of twenty thousand pounds to the discovery of a paffage, the accomplishment of this favourite object continued at as great a distance as ever +.

To ascertain a matter of such importance and magnitude in navigation, was referved to be another glory of his present majesty's reign. The idea was peculiarly fuited to the enlightened mind of the noble lord at the head of the Admiralty, and he adopted it with ardour. Preparatory to the execution of the defign, Lord Mulgrave failed with two ships, to determine how far navigation was practicable towards the north pole. In this

expedition,

d

n

0

1

e

1

Introduction to Captain Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, p. xxix.

⁺ Ibid.

perable difficulties which had been experienced by former voyagers. Nevertheless, the expectation of opening a communication between the Pacific and Atlantic Oceans, by a northerly course, was not abandoned; and it was resolved that a voyage should be undertaken for that purpose *.

For the conduct of an enterprize, the operations of which were intended to be fo new, fo extensive, and so various, it was evident that great ability, skill, and experience were indispensably That Captain Cook was of all men necessary +. the best qualified for carrying it into execution, was a matter that could not be called in question. But, however ardently it might be wished that he would take upon him the command of the fervice, no one (not even his friend and patron, Lord Sandwich himself) presumed to solicit him upon the fubject. The benefits he had already conferred on science and navigation, and the labours and dangers he had gone through, were fo many and great, that it was not deemed reasonable to ask him to engage in fresh perils. At the fame time, nothing could be more natural than to confult him upon every thing relative to the business; and his advice was particularly requested with regard to the properest person for conducting the voyage. To determine this point, the Captain, Sir Hugh Pallifer, and Mr. Stephens were invited to Lord Sandwich's to dinner. Here, besides taking into consideration what officer should be recommended to his Majesty for accomplishing the purposes in view, many things were faid concerning the nature of the defign. Its grandeur

^{*} Introduction, ubi fupra, p. xxx.

⁺ Ibid.

and dignity, the consequences of it to naviga-CHAP. tion and science, and the completion it would give to the whole system of discoveries, were enlarges upon in the course of the conversation. Captain Cook was fo fired with the contemplation and representation of the object, that he started up, and declared, that he himself would undertake the direction of the enterprize. It is easy to fuppose, with what pleasure the noble lord, and the other gentlemen, received a propofal which was fo agreeable to their fecret wishes, and which they thought of the highest importance towards attaining the ends of the voyage *. No time was loft by the Earl of Sandwich, in laying the matter before the King; and Captain Cook was appointed to the command of the expedition, on the tenth of February, 1776 +. At the same time, it was agreed, that, on his return to England, he should be restored to his situation at Greenwich; and, if no vacancy occurred during the interval, the officer who fucceeded him was to refign in his favour t.

The command and the direction of the enterprize being thus happily fettled, it became an object of great importance to determine what might be the best course that could be given to the voyage. All former navigators round the globe had returned to Europe by the Cape of Good Hope. But to Captain Cook the arduous talk was now affigned of attempting it by reaching the high northern latitudes between Asia and America; and the adoption of this resolution was, I believe, the refult of his own reflections upon the fubject. The usual plan, therefore, of discovery was reverfed; fo that instead of a passage from

⁺ From the information of the Right Hon. the Earl of Sandwich,

⁺ From the boks of the Admiralty. I From Lord Sandwich's information.

CHAP the Atlantic to the Pacific, one from the latter into the former was to be tried. Whatever openinp or inlets there might be on the east fide of America, that lie in a direction which could afford any hopes of a paffage, it was wifely foreseen that the ultimate fuccess of the expedition would depend upon their being an open fea between the west side of that continent and the extremities of Afia. Accordingly Captain Cook was ordered to proceed into the Pacific Ocean, through the chain of the new islands which had been visited by him in the fouthern tropic. After having croffed the equator into the northern parts of that ocean, he was then to hold fuch a course as might probably fix many interesting points in geography, and produce intermediate discoveries, in his progress northward to the principal scene of his operations*. With regard to his grand object, it was determined, for the wifest reasons, and after the most mature deliberation and enquiry, that upon his arrival on the coast of New Albian, be should proceed northward as far as the latitude of 659. and not lose any time in exploring rivers or inlets, or upon any account, until he had gotten into that latitude; to dot; shutitat into that

To give every possible encouragement to the profecution of the great design in view, the motives of interest were added to the obligations of duty. In the act of Parliament which paffed in 1745; the reward of twenty thousand pounds had been only held out to the ships belonging to any of

* Introduction, ubi fupra, p. xxxi xxxi. In adl

amoifieffer

⁺ See these reasons represented at large in the admirable Introduction to Captain Cooke's last voyage; together with a curious and interesting account, never before published, of the methods which have been taken by the Hudson's Bay Company, to explore the western parts of North America, extending from that bay, p. xl .- li.

his Majesty's subjects, while his Majesty's own CHAP. ships were excluded. Another, and more capital defect of this act act, was, that it confined the reward to fuch ships alone as should discover a pasfage through Hudson's Bay. By a new law, which passed in 1776, both these deficiencies were effectually remedied. It was now enacted, "That " if any ship belonging to any of his Majesty's sub-" jects, or to his Majesty, shall find out, and fail "through, any passage by sea, between the At-" lantic and Pacific Oceans, in any direction, or " parallel of the northern hemisphere, to the " northward of the 52° of northern latitude, the " owners of fuch flaips, if belonging to any of his " Majesty's subjects, or the commander, officers, and " feamen of Such Soip belonging to his Majefty, shall " receive, as a reward for such a discovery, the " fun of twenty thousand pounds*.".

That every thing might be done which could facilitate the fuccess of the grand expedition, Lieutenant Pickerfgill was fent out, in 1776, with directions to explore the coafts of Baffin's Bay; and, in the next year, Lieutenant Young was commissioned not only to examine the western parts of that bay, but to endeavour to find a paffage, on that fide, from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean. Nothing was performed by either of these gentlemen that promoted the purposes of

Captain Cook's voyage to love and any and halve

Two vessels were fixed upon by Government for the intended service; the Resolution, and the Discovery. The command of the former was given to Captain Cook, and of the other to Captain Clerke. To the Resolution was affigned the many articles before we

delivered in our Commander, which

+ Ibid. p. xl.

^{*} Introduction, ubi fupra, p. xxix.

had during her preceding voyage; and the only difference in the establishment of the Discovery from that of the Adventure, was in the single instance of her having no marine officer on board.

From the time of the two ships being put into commission, the greatest degree of attention and zeal was exerted by the Earl of Sandwich, and the rest of the Board of Admiralty, to have them equipped in the most complete manner. Both the veffels were fupplied with as much of every neceffary article as could conveniently be stowed, and with the best of each kind that could be procured. Whatever, likewise, the experience of the former voyage had shewn to be of any utility in preserving the health of seamen, was provided in a large abundance. That some permanent benefit might be conveyed to the inhabitants of Otaheite, and of the other islands of the Pacific Ocean, whom our navigators might happen to visit, it was graciously commanded by his Majesty that an affortment of ufeful animals should be carried out to those countries. Accordingly, a bull, two cows with their calves, and feveral sheep, with hay and corn for their fubfistence, were taken on board; and it was intended to add other ferviceable animals to these, when Captain Cook should arrive at the Cape of Good Hope. With the fame benevolent purposes, the Captain was furnished with a fufficient quantity of fuch of our European garden feeds, as could not fail of being a valuable present to the newly-discovered illands, by adding fresh supplies of food to their own vegetable productions. By order of the Board of Admiralty, many articles befides were delivered to our Commander, which were calculated, in various ways, to improve the condition

tion of the natives of the other hemisphere. CHAP. Still farther to promote a friendly intercourse with them, and to carry on a traffic that might be profitable on both fides, an ample affortment was provided of iron tools and trinkets. An attention no less humane was extended to the wants of our own people. Some additional clothing, adapted to a cold climate, was ordered for the crews of the two ships; and nothing was denied to our navigators that could be supposed to be in the least conducive to their health, or even to their convenience.

It was not to these things only that the extraordinary care of Lord Sandwich, and of the other gentlemen at the head of the naval department, was confined. They were equally folicitous to afford every affiftance that was calculated to render the expedition of public utility. Several astronomical and nautical instruments were intrusted, by the Board of Longitude, to Captain Cook, and Mr. King his second lieutenant: who had undertaken to make the necessary observations, during the voyage, for the improvement of astronomy and navigation. It was originally intended that a professed observator should be fent out in the Resolution; but the scientific abilities of the Captain and his lieutenant rendered the appointment of fuch a person abfolutely unnecessary. The case was somewhat different with regard to the Discovery. William Bayley, who had already given fatisfactory proofs of his skill and diligence as an observator, while he was employed in Captain Furneaux's ship, during the late voyage, was engaged a second time, in that capacity, and appointed to fail on board Captain Clerke's veffel. The department of natural history was affigned to Mr. Anderson, the surgeon of the Resolution, who was as willing as he was well qualified, to describe

1776.

V. 1776,

CHAP. describe every thing in that branch of science which should occur worthy of notice. From the remarks of this gentleman, Captain Cook had derived confiderable affiftance in his last navigation; especially with regard to the very copious vocabulary of the language of Otaheite, and the comparative specimen of the languages of the other islands which had been then visited. There were feveral young men among our Commander's sea officers, who, under his direction, could be usefully employed in constructing charts, in taking views of the coasts and headlands near which our voyagers might pass, and in drawing plans of the bays and harbours in which they thould anchor. Without a constant attention to this object, the Captain was fensible that his discoveries could not be rendered profitable to future navigators. That he might go out with every help which could ferve to make the refult of the voyage entertaining to the generality of readers, as well as instructive to the failor and the scholar, Mr. Webber was fixed upon, and engaged to embark in the Refolution, for the express pupose of supplying the unavoidable imperfections of written accounts, by enabling our people to preferve, and to bring home, fuch drawings of the most memorable scenes of their transactions, as could only be executed by a professed and skilful artist.

As the last mark of the extraordinary attention which the Earl of Sandwich, Sir Hugh Pallifer, and others of the Board of Admiralty had uniformly shewn to the preparations for the expedition, they went down to Long Reach, and paid a visit to the ships, on the eighth of June, to examine whether every thing was completed conformably to their intentions and orders, and to the fatisfaction of all who were to embark in the voyage. His lordship and the

8 June.

1776,

rest of the Admiralty Board, together with several C H A P. noblemen and gentlemen of their acquaintance, honoured Captain Cook, on that day, with their company at dinner. Both upon their coming on board and their going ashore, they were faluted with feventeen guns, and with three cheers.

As the ships were to touch at Otaheite and the Society Islands, it had been determined not to omit the only opportunity which might ever offer of carrying Omai back to his native country. Accordingly, he left London, on the twenty- 24 June. fourth of June, in company with Captain Cook; and it was with a mixture of regret and fatisfaction that he took his departure. When England, and those who, during his stay, had honoured him with their protection or friendship were fpoken of, his fpirits were fenfibly affected, and it was with difficulty that he could refrain from tears. But his eyes began to fparkle with joy, as foon as ever the conversation was turned to his own islands. The good treatment he received in England had made a deep impression upon his mind; and he entertained the highest ideas of the country and of the people. Nevertheless, the pleafing profpect he now had before him of returning home, loaded with what, he well knew, would there be efteemed invaluable treafures, and the flattering hope which the possession of these afforded him of attaining to a distinguished superiority among his countrymen, were confiderations which operated, by degrees, to fuppress every uneasy sensation. By the time he had gotten on board the ship, he appeared to be quite happy.

His Majesty had furnished Omai with an ample provision of every article which our English navi-

gators,

Otaheite and the Society Islands, had observed to be in any estimation there, either as useful or ornamental. Many presents, likewise, of the same nature, had been made him by Lord Sandwich, Sir Joseph Banks, and several other gentlemen and ladies of his acquaintance. In short, both during his residence in England, and at his departure from it, no method had been neglected, which could be calculated to render him the instrument of conveying to the inhabitants of the islands of the Pacific Ocean, the most exalted ideas of the greatness and generosity of the British nation*.

had difficultance or akes to be all tall alonger

his counciliansis, the good treates to be received in the cauth bail mades deep in at discontinuous tenteral deep in at discontinuous tenteral deep in at the connection of the people. Developed in a pleasing quadre of the new had before him actually the made the self-energy when the well-fine, which where he effectively increase in a developed the received of the connection of the connec

chanderations which coeract, by correct to

of on bone or a rail with with heart an accordance

CHAPTER

^{*} Captain Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, Vol. I. p. 2-7.

th to orne h.

en th

d,

e

CHAPTER THE SIXTH.

The History of Captain Cook's Life, from the Commencement of his Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, to his Death.

VERY preparation for the voyage being CHAP. completed, Captain Cook received an order to proceed to Plymouth, and to take the Discovery under his command. Having, accordingly, given the proper directions to Captain Clerke, he failed from the Nore to the Downs, on the twenty-fifth of June. On the thirtieth of the 25 June. fame month, he anchored in Plymouth Sound, where the Discovery was already arrived. It was & July. the eighth of July before our Commander received his inftructions for the voyage; and, at the fame time, he was ordered to proceed, with the Resolution to the Cape of Good Hope. Captain Clerke, who was detained in London by fome unavoidable circumstances, was to follow, as foon as he should join his ship.

In the evening of the twelfth, Captain Cook flood out of Plymouth Sound, and purfued his course down the channel. It was very early that he began his judicious operations for preserving the health of this crew; for, on the seventeenth, the ship was smoked between the decks with gunpowder, and the spare sails were well aired. On the thirtieth, the moon being totally eclipsed, the Captain observed it with a night telescope.

e.

13.

17.

30.

VI. making many observations. The reason was, that the moon was hidden behind the clouds the greater part of the time; and this was particularly the case, when the beginning and the end of total darkness, and the end of the eclipse,

happened.

It being found that there was not hay and corn fufficient for the subsistence of the stock of animals on board, till the arrival of our people at the Cape of Good Hope, Captain Cook determined to touch at Tenerisse. This island he thought better adapted to the purposes of procuring these articles, and other refreshments,

August than Madeira. On the sirst of August, he animals are the subside the su

than Madeira. On the first of August, he anchored in the road of Santa Cruz, and immediately dispatched an officer to the Governor, who, with the utmost politeness, granted every thing

which our Commander requested.

Were a judgment to be formed from the appearance of the country in the neighbourhood of Santa Cruz, it might be concluded that Teneriffe is fo barren a fpot, as to be infufficient for the maintenance even of its own inhabitants. It was proved, however, by the ample fupplies which our navigators received, that the islanders had enough to spare for visitors. The necessary articles of refreshment were procured at fuch moderate prices, as to confirm Captain Cook in his opinion, that Teneriffe is a more eligible place than Madeira, for ships to touch at which are bound on long voyages. Indeed, the wine of the latter island is far superior to that of the former; but then it can only be purchased by a sum of money proportionally larger.

During the short stay which the Captain made at Tenerisse, he continued with great affiduity his astronomical observations; and Mr. Anderson has not a little contributed to the farther knowledge of the country, by his remarks on its general CHAP. state, its natural appearances, its productions, and its inhabitants. He learned from a fenfible and well informed gentleman, who refided in the island, that a shrub is common there, which agrees exactly with the description given by Tournefort and Linnæus, of the tea shrub, as growing in China and Japan. It is reckoned a weed, and every year is rooted out in large quantities from the vineyards. The Spaniards, however, fometimes use it as tea, and ascribe to it all the qualities of that which is imported from China. They give it also the name of tea, and fay that it was found in the country when the islands were first discovered. Another botanical curiofity is called the impregnated lemon; which is a perfect and diffinct lemon, enclosed within another, and differing from the outer one only in being a little more globular.

The air and climate of Teneriffe are, in general, remarkably healthful, and particularly adapted to give relief in pulmonary complaints. This the gentleman before-mentioned endeavoured to account for from its being always in a person's power to procure a different temperature of the air, by residing at different heights in the island. He expressed, therefore, his surprize that the physicians of England should never have thought of fending their confumptive patients to Teneriffe,

instead of Nice or Lisbon.

Although it is not understood that there is any great fimilarity between the manners of the English and those of the Spaniards, it was observable, that the difference between them was very little perceived by Omai. He only faid, that the Spaniards did not appear to be fo friendly as the English; and that, in their persons, they approached

CHAP. proached to some resemblance of his own coun-

VI. trymen*.

On the fourth, Captain Cook failed from Te-1776. *August. neriffe, and proceeded on his voyage. Such was his attention, both to the discipline and the health of his company, that twice in the space of five days, he exercised them at great guns and small arms, and cleared and fmoaked the ship below decks. On the evening of the tenth, when the Resolution was at a small distance from the island of Bonavista, she ran so close upon a number of funken rocks, that she did but just weather the breakers. The fituation of our voyagers, for a few minutes, was very alarming. In this fituation the Captain, with the intrepid coolness which diftinguishes his character, did not choose to found, as that, without any possibility of lessen-

ing, might have heightened the danger.

While our Commander was near the Cape de Verde Islands, he had an opportunity of correcting an affertion of Mr. Nichelson's, with regard to the manner of failing by those islands, which, if implicitly trusted to, might prove of dangerous consequence. On the thirteenth, our navigators arrived before Port Praya, in the island of St. Jago; but as the Discovery was not there, and little water had been expended in the passage from Tenerisse, Captain Cook did not think proper to

go in; but stood to the fouthward.

In the course of the voyage, between the latitudes of 12° and 7° north, the weather was generally dark and gloomy. The rains were frequent, and accompanied with that close and fultry weather which too often brings on sickness, in this

this paffage. At fuch a time the worst conse-CHAP. quences are to be apprehended; and the commanders of ships cannot be too much upon their guard. It is necessary for them to purify the air between decks with fires and fmoke, and to oblige their people to dry their clothes at every opportunity. The conftant observance of these precautions on board the Refolution, was attended with fuch fuccess, that the Captain had nowfewer fick men than on either of his former voyages. This was the more remarkable, as, in confequence of the feams of the veffel having opened fo wide as to admit the rain when it fell, there was fcarcely a man who could lie dry in his bed; and the officers in the gun-room were all driven out of their cabbins by the water that came through the fides. When fettled weather returned, the caulkers were employed in repairing these defects, by caulking the decks and infide weather-works of the ship; for the humanity of our Commander would not trust the workmen over the sides. while the Resolution was at sea.

On the first of September, our navigators croffed the equator +. While on the eighth, Captain Cook was near the eastern coast of Brazil, he was at confiderable pains to fettle its longitude, which, till some better astronomical observations are made on shore in that country, he concluded to be thirty-five degrees and a half, or thirty-fix degrees west, at most.

1

As our people proceeded on their voyage, they frequently faw, in the night, those luminous marine animals which have formerly been mentioned and described. Some of them appeared to be confiderably larger than any which the Captain had

+ This was in the longitude of 27° 38' west.

18 Oct.

31.

10.

CHAP met with before; and fometimes they were fo VI. numerous, that hundreds of them were visible at the fame moment.

1776.

On the eighteenth of October, the Resolution came to an anchor in Table Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope; and the usual compliments having been paid to Baron Plettenberg the Governor, Captain Cook immediately applied himself to his customary operations. Nothing remarkable occurred till the evening of the thirty-first, when a tempest arose from the south-east, which lasted three days, and which was fo violent, that the Resolution was the only ship in the bay that rode out the gale without dragging her anchors. The effects of the ftorm were fenfibly felt by our people on shore; for their tents and observatory were torn to pieces, and their aftronomical quadrant narrowly escaped irreparable damage. On the third of November, the tempest ceased, and the next day the English were enabled to resume their different employments.

It was not till the tenth of the month that Captain Cook had the fatisfaction of feeing the Discovery arrive in the bay, and effect her junction with the Refolution. She had failed from England on the first of August, and would have reached the Cape of Good Hope a week fooner, if she had not been driven from the coast by the late storm. Every affistance was immediately given to put her into a proper condition for proceed-

ing on the voyage.

While the necessary preparations for the future navigation were completing, a difaster happened with regard to the cattle which had been carried out in the Refolution. They had been conveyed on shore for the purpose of grazing. The bull, and two cows, with their calves, had been fent to graze along with fome other cattle; but Cap-

tain

tain Cook was advised to keep the sheep, which CHAP. were fixteen in number, close to the tents, where they were penned up every evening. During the 1776. night preceding the fourteenth, fome dogs having 14 Nov. gotten in among them, forced them out of the pen, killed four, and dispersed the rest. Six of them were recovered the next day; but the two rams, and two of the finest ewes in the whole flock, were amongst those which were missing. Baron Plettenberg being at this time in the country, our commander applied to Mr. Hemmy, the lieutenant governor, and to the fiscal, for redress; and both these gentlemen promised to use their endeavours for the recovery of the loft sheep. It is the boast of the Dutch, that the police at the Cape is fo carefully executed, that it is fcarcely possible for a flave, with all his cunning and knowledge of the country, to effectuate his efcape. Nevertheless, Captain Cook's sheep evaded all the vigilance of the fifcal's officers and people. At length, after much trouble and expence, by employing some of the meanest and lowest fcoundrels in the place, he recovered all but the two ewes, of which he never could hear the leaft tidings. The character given of the fellows to whom the Captain was obliged to have recourse, by the person who recommended their being applied to, was, that for a ducatoon they would cut their master's throat, burn the house over his head, and bury him and the whole family in the ashes.

During the stay of our voyagers at the Cape, some of the officers, accompanied by Mr. Anderson, made a short excursion into the neighbouring country. This gentleman, as usual, was very diligent in recording every thing which appeared to him worthy of observation. His remarks, however, in the present case, will be deemed of little con-

1 2

fequence,

CHAP. fequence, compared with the full, accurate, and curious account of the Cape of Good Hope, with which Dr. Sparrman hath lately favoured the lite-

rary world.

With respect to Captain Cook, besides the unavoidable care which lay upon him, in providing his ships with whatever was requisite for the commodious and successful prosecution of the voyage, his attention was eminently directed to scientistic objects. He was anxious to ascertain the currents, the variations of the compass, and the latitude and longitude of the places to which he came. The observations which he collected, and recorded in his journal, while he was at the Cape of Good Hope, will be esteemed of the greatest im-

portance by judicious navigators §.

After the difafter which had happened to the sheep, it may well be supposed that our Commander did not long trust on shore those which remained. Accordingly, he gave orders to have them, and the other cattle, conveyed on board as fast as possible. He made an addition, also, to the original stock, by the purchase of two young bulls, two heisers, two young stone-horses, two mares, two rams, several ewes and goats, and some rabbits and poultry. All these animals were intended for New Zealand, Otaheite, and the neighbouring islands; and, indeed, for any other places, in the course of the voyage, where the leaving of any of them might be of service to posterity.

In the fupplies which were provided at the Cape, Captain Cook paid a particular regard to the nature and extent of his undertaking. As it was impossible to tell when, or where, he might meet with a place which could so amply contribute to his necessities, he thought proper to

lay in fuch a store of provisions for both ships, as CHAP. would be sufficient to last them for two years and VI.

upwards.

Our Commander having given a copy of his instructions to Captain Clerke, and an order directing him how to proceed in case of a separation, weighed from Table Bay on the thirtieth of November, though it was not till the third of December that he got clear of the land. On the fixth, the ships passed through several spots of water, nearly of a red colour. When some of this was taken up, it was found to contain a large quantity of small animals, of a reddish hue, and which the microscope discovered to resemble a cray-fish. As our navigators pursued their course to the south-east, a very strong gale, which they had from the westward, was followed by a mountainous fea, in confequence of which the Resolution rolled and tumbled so much, that the cattle on board were preserved with the utmost difficulty. Soon after, feveral of the goats, especially the males, together with some sheep, died, notwithstanding all the care to prevent it that was exercifed by our people. This misfortune was chiefly owing to the coldness of the weather, which now began to be felt in the most fensible manner.

On the twelfth, land was feen, which, upon a nearer approach, was found to confift of two islands. That which lies most to the fouth, and is the largest, was judged by Captain Cook to be about fifteen leagues in circuit. The northerly one is about nine leagues in circuit; and the two islands are at the distance of five leagues from each other *. As the ships passed through the channel between

30 Nov.

1776.

6.

12.

^{*} The largest island lies in latitude 46° 43' south, and in longitude 37° 46' east; and the smaller one in latitude 46° 4' footh, and in 38° 8' east longitude.

CHAP. between them, our voyagers could not discover, with the affiftance of their best glasses, either tree or shrubon either of them. They seemed to have 1776. a rocky and bold shore, and their surface is for the most part composed of barren mountains, the fummits and fides of which were covered with These two islands, together with four others, which lie from nine to twelve degrees of longitude more to the east, and nearly in the fame latitude, had been discovered by Captains Marion du Fresne, and Crozet, French navigators, in January 1772, on their passage, in two ships, from the Cape of Good Hope to the Philippine Islands. As no names had been affigned to them in a chart of the Southern Ocean, which Captain Crozet communicated to Captain Cook in 1775, our Commander distinguished the two larger ones by calling them PRINCE EDWARD's ISLANDS, after his Majesty's fourth son. To the other four, with a view of commemorating the

Though it was now the middle of fummer in this hemisphere, the weather was not less severe than what is generally met with in England in the very depth of winter. Instead, however, of being discouraged by this circumstance, the Captain shaped his course in such a manner as to pass to the southward of Marion's and Crozet's Islands, that he might get into the latitude of land which had been discovered by Monsieur de Kerguelen, another French navigator. It was part of our Commander's instructions to examine whether a good harbour might not here be found.

discoveries, he gave the name of Marion's and

CROZET'S ISLANDS.

24 Dec.

As our voyagers, on the twenty-fourth, were fleering to the eastward, a fog clearing up a little, which had involved them for some time, and which had rendered their navigation both tedious

and

and dangerous, land was feen, bearing fouth-CHAP. fouth-east. Upon a nearer approach, it was found to be an island of considerable height, and about three leagues in circuit. Another island, of the fame magnitude, was foon after discovered, and in a fhort space a third, besides some smaller ones. At times, as the fog broke away, there was the appearance of land over the small islands, and Captain Cook entertained thoughts of fleering for it, by running in between them. But, on drawing nearer, he found that, fo long as the weather continued foggy, this would be a perilous attempt. For if there should be no passage, or if our people fhould meet with any fudden danger, there was fuch a prodigious fea, breaking on all the shores in a frightful furf, that it would have been impossible for the vessels to be gotten off. At the fame time, the Captain faw another island; and, as he did not know how many more might fucceed, he judged it prudent, in order to avoid getting entangled among unknown lands in a thick fog, to wait for clearer weather.

The island last mentioned is a high round rock, which was named BLIGH'S CAP*. Our Commander had received fome very flight information concerning it at Teneriffe, and his fagacity in tracing it was fuch as immediately led him to determine that it was the fame that Monsieur de Kerguelen had called the Isle of Rendezvous. His reason for giving it that name is not very apparent; for nothing can rendezvous upon it but fowls of the air, it being certainly inaccessible to every other animal. The weather beginning to clear up, Captain Cook steered in for the land, of which a faint view had been obtained in the

The latitude of Bligh's Cap is 48° 29' fouth, and its longitude 68° 40' eaft.

CHAP. morning. This was Kerguelen's Land. No fooner had our navigators gotten off Cape Franvi. cois, than they observed the coast, to the southward, to be much indented by projecting points and bays; from which circumstance they were fure of finding a good harbour. Accordingly, such a harbour was speedily discovered, in which

fuch a harbour was speedily discovered, in which the ships came to an anchor on the twenty-fifth, being Christmas Day. Upon landing, our Commander found the shore almost entirely covered with penguins and other birds, and with feals. The latter, which were not numerous, having been unaccustomed to visiters, were so insensible of fear, that as many as were wanted, for the purpose of making use of their fat or blubber. were killed without difficulty. Fresh water was fo plentiful, that every gully afforded a large ftream; but not a fingle tree or shrub, or the least fign of it, could be met with, and but very little herbage of any fort. Before Captain Cook returned to his ship, he ascended the first ridge of rocks, that rife in a kind of amphitheatre, above one another, in hopes of obtaining a view of the country; in which, however, he was difappointed; for, previously to his reaching the top, there came on fo thick a fog, that he could fcarcely find his way down again. In the evening, the seine was hauled at the head of the harbour, but only half a dozen small fish were As no better fuccess attended a trial caught. which was made the next day with hook and line, the only resource for fresh provision was in

The people having wrought hard for two days, and nearly completed their water, the Captain alllowed them the twenty-seventh, as a day of rest, to celebrate Christmas. Many of them, in consequence of this indulgence, went on shore, and made excursions, in different directions,

birds, the store of which was inexhaustible.

into

27.

VI.

1776.

into the country, which they found barren and CHAP. desolate in the highest degree. One of them, in , his ramble, discovered, and brought to our Commander, in the evening, a quart bottle, fastened with some wire to a projecting rock on the north This bottle contained a fide of the harbour. piece of parchment, on which was written the following inscription:

S e

h

,

. .

Ludovico XV. Galliarum reve et d. * de Bovnes regi a Secretis ad Res maritimas annis 1772 et 1773.

It was clear, from this infcription, that our English navigators were not the first who had been in the place. As a memorial of our people's having touched at the fame harbour, Captain Cook wrote, as follows, on the other fide of the parchment:

> Naves Resolution et Discovery de Rege Magnæ Britanniæ, Decembris 1776.

He then put it again into a bottle, together with a filver two-penny piece of 1772. Having covered the mouth of the bottle with a leaden cap, he placed it, the next morning, in a pile of stones erected for the purpose, upon a little eminence on the north shore of the harbour, and near to

^{*} The (d.) is doubtless a contraction for the word Domino. Monsieur de Boynes was then the secretary of the French marine.

on it cannot escape the notice of any European, whom accident or design may bring into the port. Here the Captain displayed the British flag, and named the place Christmas Harbour, from our voyagers having arrived in it on that festival.

After our Commander had finished the business of the inscription, he went in his boat round the harbour, to examine what the shore afforded. His more particular object was to look for driftwood; but he did not find a fingle piece throughout the whole extent of the place. On the fame day, accompanied by Mr. King, his fecond Lieutenant, he went upon Cape François, with the hope, that, from this elevation, he might obtain a view of the fea-coast, and of the adjoining iflands. But when he had gotten up, he found that every diftant object below him was obscured in a thick fog. The land on the same plain, or of a greater height, was fufficiently visible, and appeared naked and defolate in the highest degree; fome hills to the fouthward excepted, which were covered with fnow.

19 Dec.

On the twenty-ninth, Captain Cook departed from Christmas Harbour, and proceeded to range along the coast, with a view of discovering its position and extent. In pursuing his course, he met with several promontories and bays, together with a peninsula, all of which he has described and named, chiesly in honour of his various friends. Such was the danger of the navigation, that the ships had more than once a very narrow escape. On the same day, another harbour was discovered, in which the vessels came to an anchor for one night. Here the Captain, Mr. Gore, and Mr. Bayley went on shore, to examine the country,

1,

h .

t

country, which they found, if possible, more CHAP. barren and defolate than the land that lies about Christmas harbour: and yet, if the least fertility were any where to be expected, it ought to have existed in this place, which is completely sheltered from the bleak and predominating foutherly and westerly winds. Our Commander observed, with regret, that there was neither food nor covering for cattle of any fort; and that, if he left any, they must inevitably perish. Finding no encouragement to continue his refearches, he weighed anchor and put to fea on the thirtieth, 30 Dec. having given to the harbour the name of PORT PALLISER*. On the fame day he came to a point, which proved to be the very eastern extremity of Kerguelen's Land+. In a large bay, near this point, there was a prodigious quantity of feaweed, fome of which is of a most extraordinary length. It feemed to be the fame kind of vegetable production that Sir Joseph Banks had formerly distinguished by the appellation of Fucus Giganteus. Although the stem is not much thicker than a man's hand, Captain Cook thought himfelf well warranted to fay, that part of it grows to the length of fixty fathoms and upward.

The refult of the examination of Kerguelen's Land was, that the quantity of latitude which it occupies doth not much exceed one degree and a quarter. Its extent, from east to west, still remains undecided. At its first discovery, it was probably supposed to belong to a southern continent; but, in fact, it is an island, and that of

^{*} It is fituated in the latitude of 49° 3' fouth, and the longitude of 69° 37' east.

[†] This point, which Captain Cook called Cape Digby, is fituated in the latitude of 49° 23' fouth, and the longitude of 70° 34' east.

been unwilling to deprive Monsieur Kerguelen of the honour of its bearing his name, he would have been disposed, from its sterility, to call it the Island of Desolations

It should here be mentioned, that Monsieur de Kerguelen made two visits to the coast of this country; one in 1772, and another in 1773. With the first of these voyages Captain Cook had only a very flight acquaintance, and to the fecond he was totally a stranger; fo that he scarcely had any opportunity of comparing his own discoveries with those of the French navigator. Monsieur de Kerguelen was peculiarly unfortunate, in having done but little to complete what he had begun; for though he discovered a new land, he could not, in two expeditions to it, once bring his ships to an anchor upon any part of its coasts. Captain Cook had either fewer difficulties to struggle with, or was more fuccessful in furmounting them.

During the short time in which our voyagers lay in Christmas Harbour, Mr. Anderson lost no opportunity of searching the country in every direction. Perhaps no place, hitherto discovered, under the same parallel of latitude, assorbed so scanty a field for a natural historian. All that could be known in the space of time allotted him, and probably all that will ever be worthy to be known, was collected by this gentleman. A verdure, which had been seen at a little distance from the shore, gave our people the flattering expectation of meeting with a variety of herbage: but in this they were greatly deceived. On landing, it was perceived that the lively colour which had

imposed

^{*} Kerguelen, who was acquainted with nearly fourfcore leagues of its coaft, fays, that he has reason to believe that it is about two hundred leagues in circuit.

not

of

uld

it

de

his

73.

ad

nd

ad

re-

ur

V-

e-

ne

s.

1776.

imposed upon them, was occasioned only by one C H A P. fmall plant, not unlike fome forts of Saxifrage. It grows in large fpreading tufts, a confiderable way up the hills. The whole catalogue of plants does not exceed fixteen or eighteen, including feveral kinds of moss, and a beautiful species of lichen, which rifes higher up from the rocks than the rest of the vegetable productions. There is not the appearance of a shrub in the whole country. Nature has been fomewhat more bountiful in furnishing it with animals; though, strictly speaking, they are not inhabitants of the place, being all of the marine kind. In general, the land is only used by them for breeding, and as a refting-place. Of these animals the most considerable are seals; being of that fort which is called the Urfine Seal. The birds, which have already been mentioned as very numerous, chiefly confift of penguins, ducks, petrels, albatroffes, fhags, gulls and fea fwallows. Penguins, which are far superior in number to the rest, are of three kinds, one of which had never been feen by any of our voyagers before. The rocks, or foundations of the hills, are principally composed of that dark blue, and very hard stone, which seems to be one of the most universal productions of nature. Nothing was discovered that had the least appearance of ore or metal *.

From this defolate coast Captain Cook took his departure on the thirty-first, intending, agreeably to his instructions, to touch next at New Zealand; that he might obtain a recruit of water, take in wood, and make hay for the Their number was now confiderably diminished; for two young bulls, one of the heifeirs.

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 52-90.

CHAP heifers, two rams, and feveral of the goats, had died while our navigators were employed in exploring Kerguelen's Land. For fome time 1777. 3 January. they had fresh gales, and tolerably clear weather. But on the third of January, 1777, the wind veered to the north, where it continued eight days, and was attended with so thick a fog, that the fhip ran above three hundred leagues in the dark. Occasionally the weather would clear up, and give our people a fight of the fun; but this happened very feldom, and was always of fhort continuance. However, amidst all the darkness produced by the fog, the vessels, though they feldom faw each other, were fo for-

the twelfth, the northerly winds ended in a calm *. This was fucceeded, in a little time, by a wind from the fouthward, which brought on a rain, that continued for twenty-four hours. At the end of the rain, the wind freshened, and veering to the west and north-west, was followed

tunate, in consequence of frequently firing guns as fignals, that they did not lofe company. On

by fair and clear weather.

Nothing very remarkable occurred to our voyagers till the twenty-fourth, when they discovered the coast of Van Diemen's Land; and, on the twenty-fixth, the ships came to an anchor in Adventure Bay. Captain Cook, as foon as he had anchored, ordered the boats to be hoisted out; in one of which he went himself, to look for the most commodious place for obtaining the neceffary fupplies. Wood and water were found in abundance, and in places fufficiently convenient; but grafs, which was most wanted, was scarce, and, at the same time, very coarse. Necessity, however, obliged our people to take up with fuch as could be procured.

^{*} The ships were then in latitude 48° 40' fouth, and in longitude 110º 26' eaft.

e

r.

d

t

1

On the twenty-eighth, the English who were CHAP. employed in cutting wood were agreeably fur-1777 28 Jan.

prized with a vifit from the natives. They confifted of eight men and a boy, who approached our voyagers not only without fear, but with the most perfect confidence and freedom. There was only a fingle person among them who had any thing which bore the least appearance of a weapon, and that was no more than a flick about two feet long, and pointed at one end. These people were quite naked, and wore no kind of ornaments; unless fome large punctures or ridges raifed on different parts of their bodies, either in strait or curved lines, may be considered in that light. Most of them had their hair and beards fmeared with a red ointment; and the faces of fome of them were painted with the fame composition. Every present which Captain Cook made them they received without the least appearance of fatisfaction. Of bread and elephant fish, which were offered them, they refused to taste, but shewed that they were fond Two pigs, which of birds as an article of food. the Captain had brought on shore, having come within their reach, they feized them by the ears, as a dog would have done, and would have carried them off immediately, apparently with no other intention than to kill them. Our commander being defirous of knowing the use of the flick which one of the Indians had in his hands, he fignified, by figns, his wishes to that purpose. His intimations fo far fucceeded, that one of them fet up a piece of wood as a mark, and threw at it, at the distance of about twenty yards. There was but little reason to commend his dexterity; for, after repeated trials, he was still very wide from his object. Omai, to convince the natives how much our weapons were fuperior

by which they were fo greatly terrified, that notwithstanding all the endeavours of the English to quiet their minds, they ran instantly into the woods.

After the retreat of the Indians, Captain Cook, judging that their fears would prevent their remaining near enough to observe whatpassed, ordered the two pigs, being a boar and a fow, to be carried about a mile within the head of the bay, and faw them left there, by the fide of a fresh-water brook. It was, at first, his benevolent intention to make an additional prefent to Van Diemen's Land, of a young bull and cow, together with some sheep and goats. But, upon reflection, he laid afide this defign; being perfuaded that the natives would destroy them, from their incapacity of entering into his views with regard to the improvement of their country. As pigs are animals which foon become wild, and are fond of the thickest cover of the woods, there was the greater probability of their being preferved. For the accommodation of the other cattle an open place must have been chosen; in which situation they could not posfibly have been concealed many days. *

inhabitants, men and boys, joined Captain Cook and fuch of his people as had landed with him, without manifesting the least sign of fear or distrust. It was remarkable, that one of the Indians was conspicuously deformed; nor was he more distinguished by the hump upon his back, than by the drollery of his gestures, and the humour of his speeches, which had the appearance of being intended for the entertainment of

On the twenty-ninth, about twenty of the

ance of being intended for the entertainment of our voyagers. Unfortunately, the language in which he fpake to them was wholly unintelligible. To each of the present group the Captain

gave

29 Jan.

k.

at

n-

to

in

nt

II-

w,

of

of

ne-

nt

nd

ıt,

ng

m,

WS

n-

ne

he

eir

of

en

of-

he

in

th

or

he

as

k,

he

r-

of

in

gi-in

ve

1777.

gave a string of beads and a medal, which they CHAP. feemed to receive with some satisfaction. On iron, and on iron tools, they appeared to fet no value. There was reason to believe that they were even ignorant of fish-hooks; and yet it is difficult to suppose that a people who inhabit a fea-coaft, and who were not observed to derive any part of their fustenance from the productions of the ground, should be unacquainted with fome mode of catching fish. However, they were never feen to be thus employed; nor was any canoe or veffel discovered by which they could go upon the water. Though they had rejected the kind of fish which had been offered them, it was evident that shell-fish made a part of their food.

After Captain Cook had left the shore, several women and children made their appearance, and were introduced to Lieutenant King by fome of the men that attended them. These females (a Kangooroo skin excepted, which was tied over their shoulders, and seemed to be intended to support their infants) were as naked and as black as the men, and had their bodies marked with fcars in the fame manner. Many of the children had fine features, and were thought to be pretty; but a less favourable report was made of the women, and especially of those who were advanced in years. Some of the gentlemen, however, belonging to the Discovery, as our Commander was informed, paid their addresses, and made liberal offers of presents, which were rejected with great disdain. It is certain that this gallantry was not very agreeable to the men: for an elderly man, as foon as he observed it, ordered the women to retire. The order was obeyed; but, on the part of some of the females, with the appearance of a little reluctance.

CHAP. On the prefent occasion, Captain Cook made fome proper and pertinent reflections, which I fhall deliver in his own words. " This conduct," fays he, " of Europeans among Savages, to their " women, is highly blameable; as it creates a be jealoufy in their men, that may be attended with consequences fatal to the success of the " common enterprize, and to the whole body " of adventurers, without advancing the pri-" vate purpose of the individual, or enabling him to gain the object of his wifnes. I believe " it has generally been found, amongst uncivihized people, that where the women are eafy of access, the men are the first to offer them to ftrangers; and that, where this is not the " case, neither the allurement of presents, nor " the opportunity of privacy, will be likely to " have the defired effect. This observation, I " am fure, will hold good throughout all the parts " of the South Sea where I have been. Why then " should men act so absurd a part, as to risk " their own fafety, and that of all their com-" panions, in purfuit of a gratification which " they have no probability of obtaining?"

While our navigators were at Van Diemen's Land, they were successful in obtaining a plentiful crop of grass for their cattle, and such as was far more excellent than what they had met with at their first going on shore. The quantity collected was judged by the Captain to be fufficient to last till his arrival in New Zealand.

Van Diemen's Land had been visited twice before. That name had been given it by Talman, who discovered it in 1642; from which time it had escaped all notice of European navigators, till Captain Furneaux touched at it in 1773. It is well known, that it is the fouthern point of New Holland, which is by far the largest ifland mO

1777-

island in the world; indeed, so large an island CHAP. as almost to deserve the appellation of a continent.

While Captain Cook was at this country, he neglected nothing which could promote the knowledge of science and navigation. Here, as every where else, he settled the latitude and longitude of places *; marked the variations of the compass, and recorded the nature of the tides. He corrected, likewise, an error of Captain Furneaux, with respect to the situation of Maria's Islands; on which subject he hath candidly remarked, that his own idea is not the result of a more faithful, but merely of a second examination.

è

r

0

I

S

it

5,

it

d

Mr. Anderson, during the few days in which the ships remained in Adventure Bay, exerted his usual diligence in collecting as full an account as could be obtained, in To short a period of time, of the natural productions and the inhabitants of the country. Little can be faid concerning either the personal activity or genius of the natives. The first they do not feem to poffess in any remarkable degree; and, to all appearance, they have less of the last than even the half-animated inhabitants of Terra del Fuego. Their not expressing that surprize which might have been expected, from their feeing men fo much unlike themselves, and things to which they had hitherto been utter strangers; their indifference for the prefents of our people; and their general inattention; were fufficient testimonies that they were not endued with any acuteness of understanding. What the ancient poets tell us of Fauns and Satyrs living in hollow trees, is realized at Van Diemen's Land. Some wretched Aa2

^{*} Adventure Bay is in the latitude of 43° 21' 20" fouth, and in the longitude of 147° 29' caft.

CHAP wretched constructions of sticks covered with , bark, and which did not deserve the name of huts, were indeed found near the shore; but these seemed only to have been erected for temporary purpofes. The most comfortable habitations of the natives were afforded by the largest trees. These had their trunks hollowed out by fire, to the height of fix or feven feet; and there was room enough in them for three or four persons to sit round a hearth, made of clay. the fame time, these places of shelter are durable; for the people take care to leave one fide of the tree found, which is fufficient to keep it in luxuriant growth. The inhabitants of Van Diemen's Land are undoubtedly from the fame flock with those of the northern parts of New Holland. Their language, indeed, appeared to be different; but how far the difference extended, our voyagers could not have an opportunity of determining. With regard to the New Hollanders in general, there is reason to fuppose, that they originally came from the fame place with all the Indians of the South Sea*.

30 Jan.

On the thirtieth of January, 1777, Captain Cook failed from Adventure Bay, and on the 22 Feb. twelfth of February came to an anchor at his old station of Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Being unwilling to lofe any time, he commenced his operations that very afternoon. By his order, feveral of the empty water casks were immediately landed, and a place was begun to be cleared for fetting up the two observatories, and the erection of tents to accommodate a guard, and the rest of the company, whose bufiness might require them to remain on shore. Our navigators had not long been at anchor,

^{*} Cook, abi fupra, p. 91-116.

before a number of canoes, filled with natives. CHAP. came alongfide of the ships. However, very few of them would venture on board; which appeared the more extraordinary, as the Captain was well known to them all, and they could not be infensible how liberally he had behaved to them on former occasions. There was one man in particular, whom he had treated with remarkable kindness, during the whole of his last stay in this place; and yet, neither professions of friendship, nor presents, could prevail upon him to enter the Resolution.

There was a real cause for this shyness on the part of the New Zealanders. A dreadful event had happened to some of Captain Furneaux's crew, while he lay in Queen Charlotte's Sound, after he had finally separated from Captain Cook, in the former voyage. Ten men, who had been fent out in the large cutter to gather wild greens for the ship's company, were killed in a skirmish with the natives. What was the cause of the quarrel could not be afcertained, as not one of the company furvived to relate the story. Lieutenant Burney, who was ordered to go in fearch of them, found only fome fragments of their bodies, from which it appeared, that they had been converted into the food of the inhabitants. It was the remembrance of this event, and the fear of its being revenged, which now rendered the New Zealanders fo fearful of entering the English vessels. From the conversation of Omai, who was on board the Adventure when the melancholy affair happened, they knew that it could not be unknown to Captain Cook. The Captain, therefore, judged it necessary to use every endeavour to affure them of the continuance of his friendship, and that he should not disturb them on account of the catastrophe. It was most pro-

of effere

0

e

n

d

W

e

1.

S

n

s,

a

1-

e.

r,

re

CHAP. bably in confequence of this affurance, that they foon laid aside all manner of restraint and difof them would venture on board truft.

In the mean while, the operations for refitting the ships, and for obtaining provisions, were carried on with great vigour. For the protection of the party on shore, our Commander appointed a guard of ten marines, and ordered arms for all the workmen; with whom Mr. King, and two or three petty officers constantly remained. A boat was never fent to a confiderable diffance without being armed, or without being under the direction of fuch officers as might be depended upon, and who were well acquainted with the natives. In Captain Cook's former vifits to this country, he had never made use of fuch precautions; nor was he now convinced of their absolute necessity. But, after the tragical fate of the crew of the Adventure's boat in this found, and of Captain Marion du Fresne, and some of his people, in the Bay of Islands (in 1772), it was impossible to free our navigators from all apprehensions of experiencing a fimilar calamity.

Whatever suspicions the inhabitants might at first entertain, that their acts of barbarity would be revenged, they very speedily became fo perfectly eafy upon the fubject, as to take up their residence close to our voyagers; and the advantage of their coming to live with the English was not inconsiderable. Every day, when the weather would permit, fome of them went out to catch fish, and our people generally obtained, by exchanges, a good share of the produce of their labours, in addition to the fupply which was afforded by our own nets and lines. Nor was there a deficiency of vegetable refreshments; towhich was united fpruce-beerfordrink; fo that if the feeds of the fcurvy had been contracted

1777

by any of the crew, they would fpeedily have been CHAP. removed by fuch a regimen. The fact, however, was, that there were only two invalids upon the fick lifts in both thips.

Curiofities, fifh, and women were the articles of commerce fupplied by the New Zealanders. The two first always came to a good market; but the latter did not happen, at this time, to be an acceptable commodity. Our feamen had conceived a diflike to these people, and were either unwilling or afraid to affociate with them; the good effect of which was, that our Commander knew no instance of a man's quitting his station, to go to the habitations of the Indians. A connection with women it was out of Captain Cook's power to prevent; but he never encouraged it, and always was fearful of its consequences. Many, indeed, are of opinion, that fuch an intercourse is a great security among savages. But if this should ever be the case with those who remain and fettle among them, it is generally otherwife with respect to travellers and transient visiters. In fuch a fituation as was that of our navigators, a connection with the women of the natives betrays more men than it faves. "What " elfe," fays the Captain, "can reasonably be ex-" pected, fince all their views are felfish, without " the least mixture of regard or attachment? " My own experience, at least, which hath been " pretty extensive, hath not pointed out to me one instance to the contrary. How believe on

Amongst the persons who occasionally visited the English, was a Chief of the name of Kahoora, who, as Captain Cook was informed, had headed the party that cut off Captain Furneaux's people, and had himself killed Mr. Rowe, the Officer who commanded. This man our Commander was ftrongly folicited to put to death,

even

CHAP even by some of the natives; and Omai was particularly eager and violent upon the fubject. To these folicitations the Captain paid not the least degree of attention. He even admired Kahoora's courage, and was not a little pleased with the confidence with which he had put himself into his power. Kahoora had placed his whole fafety in the declarations that Captain Cook had uniformly made to the New Zealanders; which were, that he had always been a friend to them all, and would continue to be fo, unless they gave him cause to act otherwise; that as to their inhuman treatment of our people, he should think no more of it, the transaction having happened long ago, and when he was not present; but that, if ever they made a fecond attempt of the fame kind, they might rest assured of feeling the weight of his refentment.

16 Feb.

While our Commander, on the fixteenth, was making an excursion for the purpose of collecting food for his cattle, he embraced the opportunity to enquire, as accurately as possible, into the circumstances which had attended the melancholy fate of our countrymen. Omai was his interpreter on this occasion. The result of the enquiry was, that the quarrel first took its rise from fome thefts, in the commission of which the natives were detected; that there was no premeditated plan of bloodshed; and that if these thests had not, unfortunately, been too hastily resented, no mischief would have happened. Kahoora's greatest enemies, and even the very men that had most earnestly solicited his destruction, confessed, at the fame time, that he had no intention of quarrelling with Captain Furneaux's people, and much less of killing any of them, till the fray had actually commenced.

Captain

o

ft

S

ie

0

y i-

d

no

g

e

Captain Cook continued, in this his last visit CHAP. to New Zealand, the folicitude he had formerly fhewn to be of some effential future service to the 1777. country. To one Chief he gave two goats, a male and a female, with a kid; and to another two pigs, a boar and a fow. Although he obtained a promise from both these Chiefs, that they would not kill the animals which had been prefented to them, he could not venture to place any great reliance upon their affurances. It was his full intention, on his present arrival in Queen Charlotte's Sound, to have left not only goats and hogs, but sheep, together with a young bull and two heifers. The accomplishment, however, of this resolution depended either upon his finding a Chief who was powerful enough to protect and keep the cattle, or upon his meeting with a place where there might be a probability of their being concealed from those who would ignorantly attempt to destroy them. Neither of these circumftances happened to be conformable to his wishes. At different times he had left in New Zealand ten or a dozen hogs, besides those which had been put on shore by Captain Furneaux. It will, therefore, be a little extraordinary, if this race of animals should not increase and be preferved either in a wild or a domestic state, or in both. Our Commander was informed, that Tiratou, a popular Chief among the natives, had a number of cocks and hens, and one fow, in his separate possession. With regard to the gardens which had formerly been planted, though they had almost entirely been neglected, and some of them destroyed, they were not wholly unproductive. They were found to contain cabbages, onions, leeks, purslain, radishes, mustard, and a few potatoes. The potatoes, which had first been brought from the Cape of Good Hope, were

CHAP greatly meliorated by change of foil; and, with proper cultivation, would be fuperior to those 1777.

produced in most other countries.

A great addition of knowledge was obtained, during this voyage, with respect to the productions of New Zealand, and the manners and cuftoms of its inhabitants. The zeal of Captain Cook upon the fubject was admirably feconded by the fedulous diligence of Mr. Anderson, who omitted no opportunity of collecting every kind and degree of information. I shall only so far trespass on the patience of my readers, as to mention a few circumstances tending to delineate the character of the natives. They feem to be a people perfectly fatisfied with the little they already posses; nor are they remarkably curious either in their observations or their enquiries. New objects are fo far from striking them with such a degree of furprize as might naturally be expected, that they fearcely fix their attention even for a moment. In the arts with which they are acquainted, they fhew as much ingenuity, both in invention and execution, as any uncivilized nations under fimilar circumstances. Without the least use of those tools which are formed of metal, they make every thing that is necessary to procure their subsistence, clothing, and military weapons; and all this is done by them with a neatness, a strength, and a convenience that are well adapted to the accomplishment of the several purposes they have in view. No people can have a quicker fense of an injury done to them than the New Zealanders. or be more ready to refent it: and yet they want one characteristic of true bravery; for they will take an opportunity of being infolent when they think that there is no danger of their being punished. From the number of their weapons, and

th

fe

d,

C-

ıf-

k he

ed

efs

a

C-

r-

;

r

f

3777-

their dexterity in using them, it appears that CHAP. war is their principal profession. Indeed, their public contentions are so frequent, or rather so perpetual, that they must live under continual apprehensions of being destroyed by each other. From their horrid custom of eating the slesh of their enemies, not only without reluctance, but with peculiar fatisfaction, it would be natural to suppose that they must be destitute of every humane feeling, even with regard to their own party. This, however, is not he case: for they lament the loss of their friends with a violence of expression which argues the most tender remembrance of them. At a very early age, the children are initiated into all the practices, whether good or bad, of their fathers; fo that a boy or girl, when only nine or ten years old, can perform the motions, and imitate the frightful geftures, by which the more aged are accustomed to inspire their enemies with terror. They can keep, likewife, the strictest time in their fong : and it is with some degree of melody that they fing the tradition of their forefathers, their actions in war, and other fubjects. The military atchievements of their ancestors the New Zealanders celebrate with the highest pleasure, and fpend much of their time in diversions of this fort, and in playing upon a mufical instrument, which partakes of the nature of a flute. With respect to their language, it is far from being harsh or disagreeable, though the pronunciation of it is frequently guttural; nor, if we may judge from the melody of fome kinds of their fongs, is it destitute of those qualities which sit it to be affociated with music. Of its identity with the languages of the other iflands throughout the South Sea fresh proofs were exhibited during the present voyage.

At

1777-

CHAP. At the request of Omai, Captain Cook confented to take with him two youths from New Zealand. That they might not quit their native country under any deluding ideas of visiting it again, the Captain took care to inform their parents, in the strongest terms, that they would never return. This declaration, feemed, however, to make no kind of impression. The father of the youngest lad resigned him with an indifference which he would scarcely have shewn at parting with his dog, and even stripped the boy of the little clothing he poffeffed, delivering him quite naked into the hands of our voyagers. This was not the case with the mother of the other youth. She took her leave of him with all the marks of tender affection that might be expected between a parent and child on fuch an occasion; but she soon resumed her chearfulness, and went away wholly unconcerned*.

25 Feb.

27.

On the twenty-fifth of the month, Captain Cook stood out of Queen Charlotte's Sound, and by the twenty-seventh got clear of New Zealand. No fooner had the ships lost fight of the land, than the two young adventurers from that country, one of whom was nearly eighteen years of age, and the other about ten, began deeply to repent of the step they had taken. It was the experience of the fea-fickness which gave this turn to their reflections; and all the foothing encouragement the English could think of, was but of little avail. They wept, both in public and in private, and made their lamentation in a kind of fong, that feemed to be expressive of the praises of their country and people, from which they were to be separated for ever. In this dispofition they continued for many days: but as their

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 118 .- 163.

fea-fickness wore off, and the tumult of their CHAP. minds fubfided, the fits of lamentation became less and less frequent, and at length entirely ceased. By degrees, their native country and their friends were forgotten, and they appeared to be as firmly attached to our navigators as if they had

been born in England.

n-

W

ve

it

a-

M

W-

er

r-

t-

of

m

S.

1e

1

X-

C-

s,

n

d

ı.

1,

it

S

O

.

1

1

In the profecution of the voyage, Captain Cook met with unfavourable winds; and it was not till the twenty-ninth of March that land was 29 March. discovered. It was found to be an inhabited ifland, the name of which, as was learned from two of the natives, who came off in a canoe, is Mangeea. Our Commander examined the coast with his boats, and had a short intercourse with fome of the inhabitants. Not being able to find a proper harbour for bringing the ships to an anchorage, he was obliged to leave the country unvisited, though it seemed capable of supplying all the wants of our voyagers. The island of Mangeea is full five leagues in circuit, and of a moderate and pretty equal height *. It has, upon the whole, a pleasing aspect, and might be made a beautiful fpot by cultivation. The inhabitants, who appeared to be both numerous and well fed, feemed to refemble those of Otaheite and the Marquefas in the beauty of their persons; and the resemblance, as far as could be judged in so short a compass of time, takes place with respect to their general disposition and character.

From the coast of Mangeea our Commander failed in the afternoon of the thirtieth, and on the next day land was again seen, within sour leagues of which the ships arrived on the first of April.

Our

30.

^{*} Mangeea lies in the latitude of 21° 57' fouth, and in the longitude of 201° 53' east.

CHAP. Our people could then pronounce it to be an ifland, nearly of the same appearance and extent with that which had so lately been left. Some of the natives speedily put off in their canoes, and three of them were perfuaded to come on board the Resolution; on which occasion, their whole behaviour marked that they were quite at their ease, and felt no kind of apprehension that they should be detained, or ill used. In a visit from feveral others of the inhabitants, they manifested a dread of approaching near the cows and horses; nor could they form the least conception of their nature. But the sheep and goats did not, in their opinion, furpals the limits of their ideas; for they gave our navigators to understand that they knew them to be birds. As there is not the most diftant refemblance between a sheep or goat, and any winged animal, this may be thought to be almost an incredible example of human ignorance. But it should be remembered, that, excepting hogs, dogs, and birds, these people were strangers to the existence of any other land-animals.

In a farther intercourse with the natives, who had brought a hog, together with fome plantains and cocoa-nuts; they demanded a dog from our voyagers, and refused every thing belides which was offered in exchange. One of the gentlemen on board happened to have a dog and a bitch, which were great nuisances in the ship; and these he might now have disposed of in a manner that would have been of real future utility to the ifland. But he had no fuch views in making them the companions of his voyage. Omai, however, with a good-nature that reflects honour upon him, parted with a favourite dog which he had brought

tude of society is int.

from England; and with this acquisition the peo-CHAP.

ple departed highly fatisfied.

t tflder 719; rr

On the third of April, Captain Cook dispatched Mr. Gore, with three boats, to endeavour to 3 April. get upon the island. Mr. Gore himself, Omai, Mr. Anderson, and Mr. Burney, were the only persons that landed. The transactions of the day, of which Mr. Anderson drew up an ingenious and entertaining account, added to the flock of knowledge gained by our navigators, but did not accomplish Captain Cook's principal object. Nothing was procured by the gentlemen, from the island, that supplied the wants of the ships. In this expedition, Omai displayed that turn for exaggeration, with which travellers have fo frequently been charged. Being asked by the natives concerning the English, their ships, their country, and the arms they made use of, his anfwers were not a little marvellous. He told thefe people that our country had ships as large as their island; on board which were instruments of war (describing our guns) of fuch dimensions, that several persons might sit within them. At the same time, he affored the inhabitants that one of these guns was sufficient to crush their whole island at a fingle fhot: Though he was obliged to acknowledge that the guns on board the veffels upon their coast were but small, he contrived, by an explofion of gunpowder, to inspire them with a formidable idea of their nature and effect. It is probable that this representation of things contributed to the preservation of the gentlemen, in their enterprize on shore; for a strong disposition to retain them had been flewn by the natives.

It feemed destined that this day should give Omai more occasions than one of bearing a principal part in its transactions. The island, though

never

CHAP. never visited by Europeans before, happened to have other strangers residing in it; and it was entirely owing to Omai's having attended on the expedition, that a circumstance so curious came to the knowledge of the English. Scarcely had he been landed upon the beach, when he found, among the crowd which had affembled there, three of his own countrymen, natives of the Society That at the distance of about two hundred leagues from those islands, an immense, unknown ocean intervened, with the wretched boats their inhabitants are known to make use of, and fit only for a paffage where fight of land is scarcely ever loft, fuch a meeting, at fuch a place, so accidentally visited, should occur, may well be regarded as one of those unexpected situations, with which the writers of feigned adventures love to furprize their readers. When events of this kind really happen in common life, they deserve to be recorded for their fingularity. It may eafily be supposed with what mutual surprize and satisfaction this interview of Omai with his countrymen was attended. Twelve years before, about twenty persons in number, of both sexes, had embarked on board a canoe at Otaheite, to cross over to a neighbouring island of Ulietea. A violent ftorm having arisen, which drove them out of their course, and their provisions being very scanty, they suffered incredible hardships, and the greatest part of them perished by famine and fatigue. Four men only furvived, when the boat overfet, and then the destruction of this small remnant appeared to be inevitable. However, they kept hanging by the fide of the veffel, which they continued to do for fome days, when they were providentially brought within fight of the people of this island, who immediately fent out canões,

canoes, and brought them on shore. The three CHAP. men who now furvived, expressed a strong fense of the kind treatment they had received; and fo well fatisfied were they with their prefent fituation, that they refused an offer which was made them of being conveyed to their native country. A very important instruction may be derived from the preceding narrative. It will ferve to explain, better than a thousand conjectures of fpeculative reasoners, how the detached parts of the earth, and, in particular, how the islands of the South Sea, though lying remote from any inhabited continent, or from each other, may Similar advenhave originally been peopled. tures have occurred in the history of navigation and shipwrecks.

The island on which Messieurs Gore, Anderfon, Burney and Omai, had landed, is called Wateeoo by the natives, and is a beautiful spot, having a furface composed of hills and plains, which are covered with a verdure rendered extremely pleasant by the diversity of its hues*. Its inhabitants are very numerous; and many of the young men were perfect models in shape; besides which, they had complexions as delicate as those of the women, and appeared to be equally amiable in their dispositions. In their manners, their general habits of life, and their religious ceremonies and opinions, these islanders have a near refemblance to the people of Otaheite and its neighbouring isles; and their language was well understood, both by Omai

and the two New Zealanders.

1

r

-

ı-

h

y

ie ut

S,

The next place visited by Captain Cook
Bb was

^{*} Wateeoo lies in the latitude of 20° 1' fouth, and in the longitude of 201° 45' east, and is about fix leagues in circumference.

Otakootaia*, to which Mr. Gore was fent, at the head of a party, who procured about a hundred cocoa nuts for each ship, and some grass, together with a quantity of the leaves and branches of young trees, for the cattle. Though, at this time no inhabitants were found in Wennooa-ette, yet, as there remained indubitable marks of its being, at least, occasionally frequented, Mr. Gore left a hatchet and several nails, to the full value of what had been taken away.

5 April.

On the fifth, our Commander directed his course for Harvey's Island, which was only at the distance of fifteen leagues, and where he hoped to procure some refreshments. This island had been discovered by him, in 1773, during his last voyage, when no traces were discerned of its having any inhabitants. It was now experienced to be well peopled, and by a race of men who appeared to differ much, both in person and disposition, from the natives of Wateeoo. Their behaviour was disorderly and clamorous; their colour was of a deeper cast; and feveral of them had a fierce and rugged aspect. It was remarkable, that not one of them had adopted the practice, fo generally prevalent among the people of the Southern Ocean, of puncturing or tatooing their bedies. But notwithstanding this fingularity, the most unequivocal proofs were exhibited of their having the fame common origin; and their language, in particular, approached still nearer to the dialect of Otaheite, than that of Wateeoo, or Mangeea. No anchorage for the ships being found in Harvey's Island, Captain Cook quitted it without delay.

^{*} It lies in the latitude of 19° 15' fouth, and in the longitude of 201° 37' east.

The Captain being thus disappointed at all the CHAP. islands he had met with, since his leaving New Zealand, and his progress having unavoidably 1777. been retarded by unfavourable winds, and other unforeseen circumstances, it became impossible to think of doing any thing this year in the high latitudes of the northern hemisphere, from which he was still at so great a distance, though the feafon for his operations there was already begun. In this fituation, it was absolutely necessary, in the first place, to pursue such measures as were most likely to preserve the cattle that were on board. A still more capital object was to fave the stores and provisions of the ships, that he might the better be enabled to profecute his difcoveries to the north, which could not now be commenced till a year later than was originally intended. If he had been fo fortunate as to have procured a fupply of water, and of grafs, at any of the islands he had lately visited, it was his purpose to have stood back to the fouth, till he had met with a westerly wind. But the certain confequence of doing this, without fuch a fupply, would have been the loss of all the cattle; while, at the fame time, not a fingle advantage would have been gained with regard to the grand ends of the voyage. He determined, therefore, to bear away for the Friendly Islands, where he was fure of being abundantly provided.

In pursuing his course, agreeably to this resolution, our Commander, on the sourceenth, 14 Aprilreached Palmerston island, where, and at a neighbouring islot, both of which were uninhabited,
some little relief was obtained. The boats
soon procured a load of scurvy-grass and young
cocoa-nut trees, which was a feast for the cattle;
and the same feast, with the addition of palm-cabbage and the tender branches of the Wharra tree,

Bb 2

at nole

ie

n-

s,

b-

al

e-

at he his

lifow ace

in Vacla-

nd ect.

nad ent

of ot-

juithe

in lect

eea. Iar-

dar-

de of

CHAP. was continued for feveral days. On the fixteenth, Omai, being on shore with the Captain, caught with a scoop-net, in a very short time, as much fish as served the whole party for dinner, besides sending a quantity to both the ships. Birds, too, and particularly, men-of-war and tropic birds, were plentifully obtained; fo that our navigators had fumptuous entertainment. acted as cook upon the occasion. The fish and the birds he dreffed with heated stones, after the manner of his country; and performed the operation with a dexterity and good humour which were greatly to his credit. From the islot before mentioned, twelve hundred cocoa-nuts were produced, which, being equally divided among the crew, were of great use to them, both on account of the juice and the kernel. There is no water in the islots which are comprehended under the name of Palmerston Island. If that article could be obtained, and good anchorage could be accomplished within the reef, Captain Cook would prefer this island to any of the uninhabited ones, for the mere purpose of refreshment. The quantity of fish that might be caught, would be fufficient; and a ship's company could roam about, unmolested by the petulance of the inhabitants.

Different opinions have been entertained concerning the formation of the low islands in the great ocean. From the observations which our Commander now made, he was convinced that fuch islands are formed from shoals, or coral banks, and, confequently, that they are always increasing. His reasons for embracing this hypothesis, are related by him, in his Voyage, with

his usual good sense and fagacity.

After leaving Palmerston's Island, Captain Cook fleered to the west, with a view of making the best

1,

e,

1-

S

ic

ır

ai

d

ne

he

ur

ot

ts

ed

n,

el.

n-

d.

n-

ef,

of

of

ht

o's

he

n-

he

ur

nat

ral

ys

00-

ith

ok eft

of

of his way to Annamooka. During his course, CHAP. the showers were so copious, that our navigators, faved a confiderable quantity of water. Finding that a greater supply could be obtained by the rain, in one hour, than could be gotten by diffillation in a month, the Captain laid afide the still, as a thing which was attended with more trouble than profit. At this time, the united heat and moisture of the weather, in addition to the impossibility of keeping the ships dry, threatened to be noxious to the health of our people. It was, however, remarkable, that neither the constant use of falt food, nor the vicislitudes of climate, were productive of any evil effects. Though the only material refreshment our voyagers had received, fince their leaving the Cape of Good Hope, was that which they had procured at New Zealand, there was not, as yet, a fingle fick perfon on board. This happy fituation of things was undoubtedly owing to the unremitting attention of our Commander, in feeing that no circumstance was neglected which could contribute to the preservation of the health of his company*.

On the twenty-eighth of April, Captain Cook 28 April. touched at the Island of Komango; and, on the first of May, he arrived at Annamooka. station he took was the very same which he had occupied when he visited the country three years before; and it was probably, almost in the same place where Tasman, the first discoverer of this and some of the neighbouring islands, anchored in 1643. A friendly intercourse was immediately opened with the natives, and every thing was lettled to the Captain's fatisfaction. He received the greatest civilities from Toobou, the chief of

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 167-224.

6 May.

CHAP. Annamooka; and Taipa, a chief from the Island of Komango, attached himself to the English in fo extraordinary a manner, that, in order to be near them in the night, as well as in the day, he had a house brought on men's shoulders, a full quarter of a mile, and placed close to the shed which was occupied by our party on shore. On the fixth, our Commander was vifited by a great chief from Tongataboo, whose name was Feenou, and who was falfely represented, by Taipa, to be the king of all the Friendly Isles. The only interruption to the harmony which fubfifted between our people and the natives of Annamooka, arose from the thievish disposition of many of the inhabitants. They afforded frequent opportunities of remarking how expert they were in the business of stealing. Even some of the chiefs did not think the profession unbecoming their dignity. One of them was detected in carrying a bolt out of the ship, concealed under his clothes; for which Captain Cook sentenced him to receive a dozen lashes, and kept him confined till he had paid a hog for his liberty. After this act of justice, our navigators were no longer troubled with thieves of rank: but their fervants, or flaves, were still employed in the dirty work; and upon them a flogging feemed to make no greater impression than it would have done upon the main-mast. When any of them happened to be caught in the act, fo far were their masters from interceding in their favour, that they often advised our gentlemen to kill them. This, however, being a punishment too fevere to be inflicted, they generally escaped without being punished at all; for of the shame, as well as of the pain of corporal chastisement, they appeared to be equally infenfible. At length, Captain Clerke invented a mode of treatment, which was thought

thought to be productive of some good effect. CHAP. He put the thieves into the hands of the barber, and completely shaved their heads. In consequence of this operation, they became objects of ridicule to their own countrymen; and our people, by keeping them at a distance, were enabled to deprive them of future opportunities for a re-

petition of their rogueries.

1

r

0

n

0

S

n

1-

g

d

n

is it

The island of Annamooka being exhausted of its articles of food, Captain Cook proposed, on the eleventh, to proceed directly for Tongataboo. 11 May, From this resolution, however, he was diverted, at the instance of Feenou, who warmly recommended, in preference to it, an island, or rather a group of islands, called Hapaee, lying to the north-east. There, he affured our voyagers, they could be plentifully supplied with every refreshment, in the easiest manner; and he enforced his advice by engaging to attend them thither in person. Accardingly, Hapaee was made choice of for the next station; and the examination of it became an object with the Captain, as it had never been vifited by any European ships.

On the feventeenth, our Commander arrived at Hippaee, where he met with a most friendly reception from the inhabitants, and from Earoupa, the chief of the island. During the whole stay of our navigators, the time was fpent in a reciprocation of prefents, civilities, and folemnities. On the part of the natives were displayed fingle combats with clubs, wreftling and boxing matches, female combatants, dances performed by men, and night entertainments of finging and dancing. The English, on the other hand, gave pleafure to the Indians by exercifing the marines, and excited their aftonishment by the exhibition of fire works. After curiofity had, on both fides,

been

17.

VI. 1777, 31 May.

CHAP. been fufficiently gratified, Captain Cook applied himself to the examination of Hapaee, Lefooga, and other neighbouring islands. As the ships were returning, on the thirty-first, from these islands to Annamooka, the Resolution was very near running full upon a low fandy ifle, called Pootoo Pootooa, furrounded with breakers. It fortunately happened, that the men had just been ordered upon deck to put the veffel about, and were most of them at their stations; so that the necessary movements were executed not only with judgment, but also with alertness. This alone faved the ship and her company from destruction. " Such hazardous fituations," fays the Captain, " are the unavoidable companions of the man

" who goes upon a voyage of discovery."

During our Commander's expedition to Hapaee, he was introduced to Poulaho, the real king of the Friendly Isles; in whose presence it instantly appeared how groundless had been Feenou's pretensions to that character. Feenou, however, was a chief of great note and influence. By Poulaho Captain Cook was invited to pass over to Tongataboo, which request he complied with, after he had touched, for two or three days at Annamooka. In the paffage, the Refolution was infenfibly drawn upon a large flat, on which lay innumerable coral rocks, of different depths, below the furface of the water, Notwithstanding all the care and attention of our people to keep her clear of them, they could not prevent her from striking on one of these rocks. The same event happened to the Discovery; but fortunately, neither of the ships stuck fast, or received any damage.

to June.

On the tenth of June, Captain Cook arrived at Tongataboo, where the king was waiting for him

d

a,

DS

fe.

d It

n d

e: h

e

1.

1,

n

f,

y ...

,

.

0

.

T 1

1777-

upon the beach, and immediately conducted him CHAP. to a fmall, but neat house, which, he was told, was at his fervice, during his ftay in the island. The house was situated a little within the skirts of the woods, and had a fine large area before it; fo that a more agreeable fpot could not have been provided. Our Commander's arrival at Tongataboo was followed by a fuccession of entertainments, fimilar to those which had occurred at Hapaee, though fomewhat diversified in circumflances, and exhibited with additional fplendour. The pleafure, however, of the vifit was occasionally interrupted by the thieveries of many of the inhabitants. Nothing could prevent their plundering our voyagers, in every quarter; and they did it in the most daring and insolent manner. There was fcarcely any thing which they did not attempt to fteal; and yet, as the crowd was always great, the Captain would not permit the centinels to fire, left the innocent should suffer with the guilty.

Captain Cook, on the nineteenth, made a dif- 19 June. tribution of the animals which he had felected as presents for the principal men of the island. To Poulaho, the king, he gave a young English bull and cow, together with three goats; to Mareewagee, a Chief of consequence, a Cape ram and two ewes *; and to Feenow a horse and a mare. Omai, at the fame time, was instructed to reprefent the importance of these animals, and to explain, as far as he was capable of doing it, the manner in which they should be preserved and treated. Even the generosity of the Captain

^{*} As none of the natives took the least notice or care of the three sheep allotted to Mareewagee, Captain Cook afterwards ordered them to be carried back to the ships. Besides the animals above-mentioned, he left in the island a young boar, and three young fows, of the English breed; and two rabbits, a buck and a doe.

CHAP. was not without its inconveniencies. It foon appeared that some were diffatisfied with the allotment of the animals; for, next morning, two kids and two turkey-cocks were missing. As our commander could not suppose that this was an accidental loss, he determined to have them again. The first step he took was to seize on three canoes that happened to be alongfide the ships; after which, he went on shore, and having found the King, his brother, Feenou, and fome other Chiefs, he immediately put a guard over them, and gave them to understand, that they must remain under restraint till not only the kid and the turkeys, but the rest of the things which, at different times, had been stolen from our voyagers, should be reftored. This bold step of Captain Cook was attended with a very good effect. Some of the articles which had been loft were inftantly brought back, and fuch good affurances were given with regard to the remainder, that, in the afternoon, the Chiefs were released. It was a happy circumstance, with respect to this transaction, that it did not abate the future confidence of Poulaho and his friends in the Captain's kind and generous treatment.

5 July.

10.

On the fifth of July was an eclipse of the fun, which, however, in confequence of unfavourable weather, was very imperfectly observed. Happily, the disappointment was of little consequence, as the longitude was more than fufficiently determined by lunar observations +.

Captain Cook failed from Tongataboo on the tenth, and, two days after, came to an anchor at the island of Middleburgh, or Eooa, as it is called by the inhabitants. Here he was immediately vifited by Taoofa, the Chief with whom he

had

had formerly been acquainted. The intercourse CHAP. now renewed was friendly in the highest degree, both with Taoofa and the rest of the natives; and our Commander endeavoured to meliorate their condition by planting a pine-apple, and fowing the feeds of melons, and other vegetables, in the Chief's plantation. To this he was encouraged by a proof that his past endeavours had not been wholly unfuccessful. He had, one day, served up to him at his dinner a dish of turnips, being the produce of the feeds which he had left at Eooa in

his last voyage.

pot-

VO

ur

IC-

n.

es

er

he

fs,

ve

n-

s,

S,

f-

t-

r-

ıt

h

1,

1-

d

d

IS

1,

,

e

The stay which Captain Cook made at the Friendly Islands was between two and three months; during which time, fome accidental differences excepted; there subsisted the utmost cordiality between the English and the natives. These differences were never attended with any fatal confequences; which happy circumstance was principally owing to the unremitting attention of the Captain, who directed all his measures with a view to the prevention of fuch quarrels as would be injurious either to the inhabitants or to his own people. So long as our navigators stayed at the islands, they expended very little of their sea provisions, sublisting, in general, upon the produce of the country, and carrying away with them a quantity of refreshments sufficient to last till their arrival at another station, where they could depend upon a fresh supply. It was a singular pleafure to our Commander, that he possessed an opportunity of adding to the happiness of these good Indians, by the useful animals which he left among them. Upon the whole, the advantages of having touched at the Friendly Islands were very great; and Captain Cook reflected upon it with peculiar fatisfaction, that these advantages were retained without obtarding, for a fingle moment,

VI. his voyage; the feason for proceeding to the

north having been previously loft.

Besides the immediate benefits which both the natives and the English derived from their mutual intercourse on the present occasion, such a large addition was now made to the geographical knowledge of this part of the Pacific Ocean, as may render no small service to future navigators. Under the denomination of the Friendly Islands, must be included not only the group at Hapaee, but all those islands that have been discovered nearly under the fame meridian, to the north, as well as fome others, which, though they have never hitherto been feen by any European voyagers, are under the dominion of Tongataboo. From the information which our commander received, it appears that this Archipelago is very extensive. Above one hundred and fifty islands were reckoned up by the natives, who made use of bits of leaves to afcertain their number; and Mr. Anderfon, with his usual diligence, procured all their names. Fifteen of them are faid to be high or hilly, and thirty-five of them large. Concerning the fize of the thirty-two which were unexplored, it can only be mentioned, that they must be larger than Annamooka, which was ranked amongst the smaller isles. Several, indeed, of those which belong to this latter denomination, are mere spots, without inhabitants. Sixty-one of these isles have their proper places and names marked upon the chart of the Friendly islands, and the sketch of the harbour of Tongabatoo, which are given in the Voyage. Captain Cook had not the least doubt but that Prince William's Islands, discovered and to named by Tasman, were comprehended in the lift furnished by the natives. He had alfo

also good authority for believing, that Keppel's CH AP. and Boscawen's Islands, two of Captain Wallis's discoveries in 1765, were included in the same lift; and that they were under the fovereignty of Tongataboo, which is the grand feat of government. It must be left to future navigators to extend the geography of this part of the South Pacific Ocean, by ascertaining the exact situation and fize of nearly a hundred iflands, in the neighbourhood, which our Commander had no oppor-

tunity of exploring.

he

he

u-

ge

W-

ay

rs.

ls,

e,

ed

as

e-

S,

m

ı,

e.

1-

of

-

r

r

g

y

S

During the present visit to the Friendly Islands, large additions were made to the knowledge which was obtained, in the last voyage, of the natural history and productions of the country, and the manners and customs of its inhabitants. Though it does not fall within the plan of this narrative to enter into a detail of the particulars recorded, I cannot help taking notice of the explanation which Captain Cook has given of the thievish disposition of the natives. It is an explanation which reflects honour upon his fagacity, humanity, and candour; and therefore I shall relate it in his own words: "The only defect," fays he, " fullying their character, that we know of, is a " propenfity to thieving; to which we found " those of all ages, and both sexes, addicted; " and to an uncommon degree. It should, " however, be confidered, that this exceptiona-" ble part of their conduct feemed to exist merely " with respect to us; for, in their general inter-" course with one another, I had reason to be of " opinion, that thefts do not happen more fre-" quently (perhaps less so) than in other coun-" tries, the dishonest practices of whose worth-" less individuals are not supposed to authorize " any indifcriminate censure on the whole body " of the people. Great allowances should be

d'ar you 'abrad

CHAP. "made for the foibles of these poor natives of the Pacissic Ocean, whose minds we overpower. "ed with the glare of objects, equally new to them as they were captivating. Stealing, among the civilized nations of the world, may well be considered as denoting a character deeply stained with mortal turpitude, with avarice unrestrained by the known rules of right, and with profligacy producing extreme indigence, and neglecting the means of relieving it. But at the Friendly and other Islands which we visited, the thests, so fre-

" quently committed by the natives, of what we had brought along with us, may be fairly traced to less culpable motives. They feemed to arise folely from an intense curiosity or defire to possess something which they had not been accustomed to before, and belonging to a

"fort of people so different from themselves.

"And, perhaps, if it were possible, that a set of beings, seemingly as superior in our judgment,

" as we are in theirs, should appear amongst us,
" it might be doubted, whether our natural re" gard to justice would be able to restrain many
" from falling into the same error. That I have

" affigned the true motive for their propentity to " this practice, appears from their stealing every

"thing indifcriminately at first fight, before they
could have the least conception of converting
their prize to any one useful purpose. But, I

" believe, with us, no person would forfeit his reputation, or expose himself to punishment;

"without knowing, before hand, how to em-

" pilfering disposition of these islanders, though certainly disagreeable and troblesome to stran-

" gers, was the means of affording us fone infor-

" mation as to the quickness of their intellects*."
With

**

^{*} Cook's Voyage, vol. i. p. 385.

of

er-

to

ng,

ay

ter

ith

of

me

re-

er

re-

we

rly

ed

le-

ot

).a

es.

of

at,

18,

re-

ny

ve

tô

ry

ey

ng I

nis

ıt;

nhe

gh nr.

." th 1777-

With respect to the religion of these Indians, CHAP. Mr. Anderson maintains, that they have very proper fentiments concerning the immateriality and immortality of the foul; and thinks himfelf fufficiently authorized to affert, that they do not worship any thing which is the work of their own hands, or any visible part of the creation. .The language of the Friendly Islands has the greatest imaginable conformity with that of New Zealand, of Wateeoo, and Mangeea. Several hundreds of the words of it were collected by Mr. Anderson; and, among these, are terms that express numbers reaching to a hundred thousand. Beyond this limit they never went, and probably were not able to go farther; for it was observed, that when they had gotten thus far, they commonly used a word which expresses an indefinite number.

It is scarcely necessary to add, that Captain Cook, during his whole stay at the Friendly Islands, neglected nothing which could be the fubject of astronomical and nautical observation. Hence the latitude and longitude of the different places he touched at, the variations of the needle, and the state of the tides, are recorded for the improvement of science, and the benefit of future navigators *.

On the feventeenth of July, our Commander took 17 July. his final leave of the Friendly Islands, and refumed his voyage. An eclipse was observed in the night between the twentieth and the twenty-first; and on the eighth of August, land was discovered 8 August. Some of the inhabitants, who came off in canoes, feemed earnestly to invite our people to go on shore; but Captain Cook did not think proper to

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 355. 367-370. 404. 405. 414

CHAP run the risk of losing the advantage of a fair wind, for the fake of examining an illand which appeared to be of little consequence. Its name, 1777. as we learned from the natives, who spake the

Otaheite language, is Toobouai*.

Purfuing his course, the Captain reached Otaheite on the twelfth, and steered for Oheitepeha Bay, with an intention to anchor there, in order to draw what refreshments he could from the fouth-east part of the island, before he went down to Matavai. Omai's first reception amongst his countrymen was not entirely of a flattering nature. Though feveral persons came on board who knew him, and one of them was his brotherin-law, there was nothing remarkably tender or ftriking in their meeting. An interview which 3 August. Omai had, on the thirteenth, with his fifter, was agreeable to the feelings of nature; for their meeting was marked with expressions of tender affection, more easy to be conceived than described. In a visit likewise, which he received from an aunt, the old lady threw herself at his feet, and

plentifully bedewed them with tears of joy. Captain Cook was informed by the natives. that, fince he was last at the island, in 1774, two ships had been twice in Oheitepeha Bay, and had left animals in the country. These, on farther enquiry, were found to be hogs, dogs, goats, one bull, and a ram. That the veffels which had visited Otaheite were Spanish, was plain from an infcription that was cut upon a wooden crofs, flanding at some distance from the front of a house which had been occupied by the strangers.

On

^{*} Toobouai is fituated in the latitude of 23° 25' fouth, and in the longitude of 210° 37' east. Its greatest extent is not above five or fix miles.

On the transverse part of the cross was inscrib. CHAP. ed, i mar from which may extend another in the ed,

Christus vincit.

And on the perpendicular part,

Carolus III. imperat. 1774.

Our Commander took this occasion to preserve the memory of the prior visits of the English, by inscribing, on the other side of the post,

on to or Georgius tertius Rex, on open from the 1769, 1773, 1774, & 1777,

Whatever might be the intentions of the Spaniards in their visits to the island, it ought to be remembered to their honour, that they had behaved fo well to the inhabitants, as always to be spoken of in the strongest expressions of esteem and veneration. He entres en independent and vilne

Captain Cook had at this time an important affair to fettle. As he knew that he could now be furnished with a plentiful supply of cocoanuts, the liquor of which is an excellent and wholefome beverage, he was defirous of prevailing upon his people to confent to their being abridged, during their stay at Otaheite and the neighbouring islands, of their stated allowance of spirits to mix with water. But as this stoppage of a favourite article, without affigning fome reason for it, might occasion a general murmur, he thought it most prudent to assemble the ship's company, and to make known to them the defign of the voyage, and the extent of the future operations. To animate them in undertaking with chearfulness and perseverance what lay before them, he took notice of the rewards offered by Parliament, to fuch of his Majesty's subjects as should first discover a commu-C c cation

CHAP. cation between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, in any direction whatever, in the northern hemifphere; and also to such as should first penetrate beyond the eighty-ninth degree of northern la-The Captain made no doubt, he told them, that he should find them willing to cooperate with him in attempting, as far as might be possible, to become entitled to one or both of these rewards; but that to give the best chance of fuccess, it would be necessary to observe the utmost economy in the expenditure of the stores and provisions, particularly the latter, as there was no probability of getting a fupply any where, after leaving these islands. He strengthened his argument by reminding them, that, in confequence of the opportunity's having been lost of getting to the north this summer, the voyage must last at least a year longer than had originally been supposed. He entreated them to confider the various obstructions and difficulties they might still meet with, and the aggravated hardships they would endure, if it should be found necessary to put them to short allowance, of any fpecies of provisions, in a cold climate. For these very fubfiantial reasons, he submitted to them, whether it would not be better to be prudent in time, and, rather than to incur the hazard of having no spirits left, when such a cordial would most be wanted, to confent to give up their grog now, when so excellent a liquor as that of cocoanuts could be substituted in its place. In conclufion, our Commander left the determination of the matter entirely to their own choice.

This speech, which certainly partook much of the nature of true eloquence, if a discourse admirably calculated for perfuasion be entitled to that character, produced its full effect on the generous minds of English seamen. Captain Cook had the fatisfaction of finding, that his propofal did

1777,

did not remain a fingle moment under considera- CHAP. tion; being unanimously and immediately approved of, without the least objection. By our Commander's order, Captain Clerke made the fame propofal to his people; to which they, likewife, agreed. Accordingly, grog was no longer ferved, excepting on Saturday nights; when the companies of both ships had a full allowance of it, that they might drink the healths of their friends in England.

e

-

y L-

d

1,

n

of

ld

g

a-

u-

of

of

id-

to

ge-

ok

fal

did

On the twenty-fourth, Captain Cook quitted 24 Aug. the fouth-east part of Otaheite, and refumed his old station in Matavai Bay. Immediately upon his arrival, he was vifited by Otoo, the king of the whole island, and their former friendship was renewed; a friendship which was continued without interruption, and cemented by a perpetual fuccession of civilities, good offices, and entertainments. One of our Commander's furt objects was to dispose of all the European animals which were in the ships. Accordingly, he conveyed to Oparre, Otoo's place of refidence, a peacock and hen; a turkey cock and hen; one gander, and three geefe; a drake, and four ducks. The geefe and ducks began to breed before our navigators left their present station. There were already at Otoo's, feveral goats, and the Spanish bull; which was one of the finest animals of the kind that was ever feen. To the bull Captain Cook fent the three cows he had on board, together with a bull of his own; to all which were added the horse and mare, and the sheep that had ftill remained in the veffels.

The Captain found himself lightened of a very heavy burthen, in having disposed of these passengers. It is not easy to conceive the trouble and vexation which had attended the conveyance of this living cargo, through fuch various hazards, and to so immense a distance.

Cc 2

fatisfaction

CHAP. fatisfaction which our Commander felt, in having been fo fortunate as to fulfil his Majesty's humane defigns, in fending fuch valuable animals, to fupply the wants of two worthy nations, afforded him an ample recompense for the many anxious hours he had paffed, before this fubordinate object of his voyage could be carried into execution.sh aginl nind

At this time a war was on the point of breaking out, between the inhabitants of Eimeo and those of Otaheite; and by the latter Captain Cook was requested to take a part in their favour. With this request, however, though enforced by frequent and urgent folicitations, the Captain, according to his usual wisdom, refused to comply. He alledged, that, as he was not thoroughly acquainted with the dispute, and the people of Eimeo had never offended him, he could not think himfelf at liberty to engage in hoffilities against them. With these reasons Otoo and most of the Chiefs appeared to be fatisfied; but one of them; Towha, was fo highly difpleafed, that our Commander never vafterward recovered his friendship. oxlarb a "; bissy sould ?

Upon the present occasion Captain Cook had full and undeniable proof that the offering of human facrifices forms a part of the religious inftitutions of Otaheite. Indeed, he was a witness to a folemnity of this kind; the process of which he has particularly described, and has related it with the just fentiments of indignation and abhorrencee: The unhappy victim, who was now offered to the object of worship, seemed to be a middle-aged man, and was faid to be one of the lowest class of the people. But the Captain could not learn, after all his enquiries, whether the wretch had been fixed upon, on account of his having committed any crime which was supposed to idzard end to le immente a ciliance.

deserving of death. It is certain that a choice is CHAP. generally made either of fuch guilty persons for the facrifices, or of common, low fellows, who stroll about, from place to place, without any visible methods of obtaining an honest subsistence. Those who are devoted to suffer, are never apprized of their fate till the blow is given that puts an end to their being. Whenever, upon any particular emergency, one of the great Chiefs confiders a human facrifice to be necessary, he pitches upon the victim, and then orders him to be fuddenly fallen upon and killed, either with clubs or stones. Although it should be supposed, that no more than one person is ever devoted to destruction on any single occasion, at Otaheite, it will ftill be found that these occurrences are so frequent, as to cause a shocking waste of the human race; for our Commander counted no less than forty-nine skulls of former victims, lying before the Morai where he had feen another added to the number. It was apparent, from the freshness of these skulls, that no great length of time had elapsed, fince the wretches to whom they belonged had been offered upon the altar of blood.

-

1,

1-

1+

le

ot

es

ft

of

11

is

ıd

u-

ti-

efs

ch

it

nd

ras

to

be

ap-

rer

his

lto be

There is reason to fear, that this custom is as extensive as it is horrid. It is highly probable that it prevails throughout the widely-diffused iflands of the Pacific Ocean; and Captain Cook had particular evidence of its subsisting at the Friendly Islands. To what an extent the practice of human facrifices was carried in the ancient world, is not unknown to the learned. Scarcely any nation was free from it in a certain state of fociety; and, as religious reformation is one of the last efforts of the human mind, the practice may be continued, even when the manners are otherwise far removed from savage life. It may

CHAP. have been a long time before civilization has made fuch a progress as to deprive superstition of its cruelty, and to divert it from barbarous rites to ceremonies, which, though foolish enough, are comparatively mild, gentle, and innocent.

5 Sept.

On the fifth of September, an accident happened, which, though flight in itself, was of some consequence from the situation of things. young ram of the Cape breed, which had been lambed and brought up with great care on board the ship, was killed by a dog. Desirous as Captain Cook was of propagating fo useful a race, among the Society Islands, the loss of a ram was a ferious misfortune. It was the only one he had of that breed; and of the English breed a single ram was all that remained.

Captain Cook and Captain Clerke, on the fourteenth, mounted on horseback, and took a ride round the plain of Matavai, to the great furprize of a large number of the natives, who attended upon the occasion, and gazed upon the gentlemen with as much aftonishment as if they had been Centaurs. What the two Captains had begun, was afterwards repeated every day, by one and another of our people; notwithstanding which, the curiosity of the Otaheitans still continued unabated. They were exceedingly delighted with these animals, after they had seen the use which was made of them. Not all the novelties, put together, which European visiters had carried amongst the inhabitants, inspired them with fo high an idea of the greatness of distant nations.

Though Captain Cook would not take a part in the quarrels between the islands, he was ready to protect his particular friends, when in danger of being injured. Towha, who commanded the expedition against Eimeo, had been obliged to submit

to a difgraceful accommodation. Being full of CHAP. refentment on account of his not having been properly supported, he was faid to have threatened, that, as foon as the Captain should leave the island, he would join his forces to those of Tiaraboo, and attack Otoo at Matavai or Oparre. This induced our Commander to declare, in the most public manner, that he was determined to espouse the interest of his friend, against any such combination; and that whoever prefumed to affault him, should feel the weight of his heavy displeafure, when he returned again to Otaheite. Captain Cook's declaration had probably the defired effect; for, if Towha had formed hoftile intentions, no more was heard of the matter.

S

e A

n d

)-

e,

d le

r-

è d

2d

2-

e

g

1-

n

e

3

n it

n

0 f

it

0

The manner in which our Commander was freed from a rheumatic complaint, that confifted of a pain extending from the hip to the foot, deferves to be recorded. Otoo's mother, his three fifters, and eight other women, went on board for the express purpose of undertaking the cure of his disorder. He accepted of their friendly offer, had a bed fpread for them on the cabbin floor, and submitted himself to their directions. Being defired to lay himself down amongst them, then, as many of them as could get round him began to squeeze him with both hands, from head to foot, but more particularly in the part where the pain was lodged, till they made his bones crack, and his flesh became a perfect mummy. After under, going this discipline about a quarter of an hour, he was glad to be released from the women. operation, however, gave him immediate relief; so that he was encouraged to submit to another rubbing-down before he went to bed; the confe, quence of which was, that he was totally eafy all the fucceeding night. His female physicians repeated their prescription the next morning, and again in the evening; after which his pains were

CHAP entirely removed, and the cure was perfected. This operation, which is called Romee, is univerfally practifed among these islanders; being some-1777times performed by the men, but more generally

by the women.

27 Sept.

Captain Cook, who now had come to the refolution of departing foon from Otaheite, accompanied, on the twenty-feventh, Otoo to Oparre, and examined the cattle and poultry, which he had configned to his friend's care at that place. Every thing was in a promifing way, and properly at-The Captain procured from Otoo four tended. goats; two of which he defigned to leave at Ulietea, where none had as yet been introduced; and the other two he proposed to referve for the use of any islands he might chance to meet with in his passage to the north. On the next day, Otoo came on board, and informed our Commander, that he had gotten a canoe, which he defired him to carry home, as a present to the Earee rabie no Pretane. This, he faid, was the only thing he could fend which was worthy of his Majesty's acceptance. Captain Cook was not a little pleafed with Otoo, for this mark of his gratitude; and the more, as the thought was entirely his own. Not one of our people had given him the least hint concerning it; and it shewed that he was fully senfible to whom he ftood indebted for the most valuable prefents that he had received. As the canoe was too large to be taken on board, the Captain could only thank him for his good intentions; but it would have given him a much greater fatisfaction if his present could have been accepted:

During this visit of our voyagers to Otaheite, fuch a cordial friendship and confidence sublisted between them and the natives, as never once to be interrupted by any untoward accident. Commander had made the Chiefs fully fenfible,

that

1777-

that it was their interest to treat with him on CHAP. fair and equitable terms, and to keep their people from plundering or ftealing. So great was Otoo's attachment to the English, that he seemed pleased with the idea of their having a permanent fettlement at Matavai; not confidering that from that time he would be deprived of his kingdom, and the inhabitants of their liberties. Captain Cook had too much gratitude and regard for these islanders, to wish that such an event should ever take place. Though our occasional visits may, in some respects, have been of advantage to the natives, he was afraid that a durable effablishment among them, conducted as most European establishments amongst Indian nations have unfortunately been, would give them just cause to lament that they had been discovered by our navigators. It is not, indeed, likely that a meafure of this kind should at any time seriously be adopted, because it cannot serve either the purposes of public ambition, or private avarice; and, without fuch inducements, the Captain has ventured to pronounce that it will never be undertaken.

From Otaheite our voyagers failed, on the thirtieth, to Eimeo, where they came to an anchor, on the fame day. At this island, the transactions which happened were, for the most part, very unpleasant. A goat, which was stolen, was recovered without any extraordinary difficulty, and one of the thieves was, at the same time, furrendered; being the first instance of the kind that our Commander had met with in his connections with the Society Islands. The stealing of another goat was attended with an uncommon degree of perplexity and trouble. As the recovery of it was a matter of no small importance, Captain Cook was determined to effect this at any rate;

CHAP. and accordingly he made an expedition cross the island, in the course of which he set fire to fix or eight houses, and burnt a number of war canoes. At last, in consequence of a peremptory message to Maheine, the Chief of Eimeo, that not a fingle canoe should be left in the country, or an end be put to the contest, unless the animal in his posfession should be restored, the goat was brought back. This quarrel was as much regretted on the part of the Captain, as it could be on that of the natives. It grieved him to reflect, that, after refusing the preffing folicitations of his friends at Otaheite to favour their invalion of this island. he should find himself so speedily reduced to the necessity of engaging in hostilities against its inhabitants; and in fuch hostilities as, perhaps, had been more injurious to them than Towha's expedition.

On the eleventh of October, the flips departed from Eimeo, and the next day arrived at Owharre harbour, on the west side of Huaheine. The grand business of our Commander at this island was the fettlement of Omai. In order to obtain the confent of the Chiefs of the island, the affair was conducted with great folemnity. Omai dreffed himself very properly on the occasion; brought with him a fuitable affortment of prefents; went through a variety of religious ceremonies; and made a speech, the topics of which had been dictated to him by our Commander. The refult of the negociation was, that a fpot of ground was affigned him, the extent of which, along the shore of the harbour, was about two hundred yards; and its depth, to the foot of the hill, fomewhat more. A proportional part of the hill was included in the grant. This business having been adjusted in a fatisfactory manner, the carpenters of both ships were employed in buildthe

or

oes.

age

gle be

oof-

ght

on of

ter

at

nd,

he

in-

ps,

a's

ed

re

he

nd

in

ir

ai

1;

ee-

h

r. of

1,

0

e e

s

1777-

ing a fmall house for Omai, in which he might CHAP. fecure his European commodities. At the fame time, fome of the English made a garden for his use, in which they planted shaddocks, vines, pine-apples, melons, and the feeds of feveral other vegetable articles. All of these Captain Cook had the fatisfaction of feeing in a flourishing state before he left the island.

At Huaheine Omai found a brother, a fifter, and a brother-in-law, by whom he was received with great regard and tenderness. But though these people were faithful and affectionate in their attachment to him, the Captain discovered, with concern, that they were of too little consequence in the island to be capable of rendering him any positive service. They had not either authority or influence to protect his person or property; and, in fuch a fituation, there was reason to apprehend, that he might be in danger of being stripped of all his possessions, at soon as he should cease to be supported by the power of the English. To prevent this evil, if possible, our Commander advised him to conciliate the favour and engage the patronage and protection of two or three of the principal Chiefs, by a proper distribution of fome of his moveables; with which advice he prudently complied. Captain Cook, however, did not entirely trust to the operations of gratitude, but had recourse to the more forcible motive of intimidation. With this view he took every opportunity of fignifying to the inhabitants, that it was his intention to return to the island again, after being absent the usual time; and that, if he did not find Omai in the same state of fecurity in which he left him, all those whom he should then discover to have been his enemies should feel the weight of his resentment. As the

CHAP natives had now formed an opinion that their country would be vifited by the ships of England at stated periods, there was ground to hope that 1777. this threatening declaration would produce no

inconfiderable effect.

When Omai's house was nearly finished, and many of his moveables were carried ashore, a box of toys excited the admiration of the multitude in a much higher degree than articles of a more useful nature. With regard to his pots, kettles, dishes, plates, drinking-mugs, glasses, and the whole train of domestic accommodations, which in our estimation are so necessary and important, fcarcely any one of his countrymen would condefcend to look upon them. Omai himself, being fenfible that these pieces of English furniture would be of no great confequence in his prefent fituation, wifely fold a number of them, among the people of the ships, for hatchets, and other iron tools, which had a more intrinfic value in this part of the world, and would give him a more distinguished superiority over those with whom he was to pass the remainder of his days.

Omai's family, when he fettled at Huaheine, confifted of eight or ten persons, if that can be called a family, to which a fingle female did not as yet belong, nor was likely to belong, unless its mafter should become less volatile. There was nothing in his prefent temper which feemed likely to dispose him to look out for a wife; and, perhaps, it is to be apprehended, that his residence in England had not contributed to improve his taste for the sober felicity of a domestic union

with fome woman of his own country.

The European weapons of Omai confifted of a musquet, bayonet, and cartouch-box; a fowlingpiece; two pair of pistols; and two or three fwords or cutlaffes. With the possession of these warlike

warlike implements, he was highly delighted; CHAP. and it was only to gratify his eager defire for them, that Captain Cook was induced to make him fuch presents. The captain would otherwife have thought it happier for him to be without fire-arms, or any European weapons, lest an imprudent use of them (and prudence was not his most distinguished talent) should rather encrease his dangers than establish his fuperiority. Though it was no small satisfaction to our Commander to reflect, that he had brought Omai fafe back to the very fpot from which he had been taken, this fatisfaction was, nevertheless, somewhat diminished by the consideration, that his fituation might now be less defirable than it was before his connection with the English. It was to be feared, that the advantages which he had derived from his visit to England would place him in a more hazardous state with respect to his personal fafety. . halist rmal

Whatever faults belonged to Omai's character, they were overbalanced by his good-nature and his gratitude. He had a tolerable share of understanding, but it was not accompanied with application and perfeverance; fo that his knowledge of things was very general, and in most instances imperfect; nor was he a man of much observation. He would not, therefore, be able to introduce many of the arts and customs of England among his countrymen, or greatly to improve those to which they have long been habituated. Captain Cook, however, was confident that he would endeavour to bring to perfection the fruits and vegetables which had been planted in his garden. This of itself would be no small acquisition to the natives. But the greatest benefit which these islands are likely to receive from Omai's travels, will be in the animals that are left upon them: obtained. When these multiply, of which Captain Cook thought there was little reason to doubt, Otaheite, and the Society Islands, will equal, if not exceed, any country in the known world, for plenty of provisions.

Before our commander failed from Huaheine, he had the following inscription cut on the outside

of Omai's house:

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 2 Novembris, 1777.

Naves { Refolution, Jac. Cook, Pr. Discovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

2 Nov.

On the same day, Omai took his final leave of our navigators, in doing which he bade farewell to all the officers in a very affectionate manner. He fustained himself with a manly resolution till he came to Captain Cook, when his utmost efforts to conceal his tears failed; and he continued to weep all the time that the boat was conveying him to shore. Not again to resume the subject, I shall here mention, that when the Captain was at Ulietea, a fortnight after this event, Omai fent two men with the fatisfactory intelligence, that he remained undisturbed by the people of Huaheine, and that every thing succeeded well with him, excepting in the loss of his goat, which had died in kidding. This intelligence was accompanied with a request that another goat might be given him, together with two axes. Our Commander efteeming himself happy in having an additional opportunity of ferving him, dispatched the messengers back with the axes, and a couple of kids, male and female, which were spared for him out of the Discovery of the ere ent tull devited and of ediffic islands are likely to re-

travels; will be an the unional state are letters

The fate of the two youths who had been CHAP. brought from New Zealand must not be forgot. ten. As they were extremely desirous of continuing with our people, Captain Cook would have carried them to England with him, if there had appeared the most distant probability of their ever being restored to their own country. Tiarooa, the eldeft of them, was a very well-disposed young man, with strong natural sense, and a capacity of receiving any instruction. He seemed to be fully convinced of the inferiority of New Zealand to these islands, and resigned himself, though not without some degree of reluctance, to end his days, in ease and plenty, in Huaheine. The other had formed fo ftrong an attatchment to our navigators, that it was necessary to take him out of the ship, and carry him ashore by force. This necessity was the more painful, as he was a witty, fmart boy; and, on that account, a great favourite on board. Both these youths became a part of Omai's family.

Whilst our voyagers were at Huaheine, the atrocious conduct of one particular thief occasioned fo much trouble, that the Captain punished him more feverely than he had ever done any culprit before. Besides having his head and beard shaved, he ordered both his ears to be cut off, and then dismissed him. It can scarcely be reflected upon without regret, that our Commander should have been compelled to fuch an act of feverity.

On the third of November, the ships came 3 Nov. to an anchor in the harbour of Ohamaneno, in the island of Ulietea. The observatories being fet up on the fixth, and the necessary instruments having been carried on shore, the two following days were employed in making aftronomical obfervations. In the night between the twelfth and thirteenth.

6.

13.

CHAP. thirteenth, John Harrison, a marine, who was fentinel at the observatory, deserted, taking with him his arms and accourrements. Captain Cook exerted himself, on this occasion, with his usual vigour. He went himself in pursuit of the deserter, who, after some evasion on the part of the inhabitants, was surrendered. He was found sitting between two women, with the musquet lying before him; and all the desence he was able to make was, that he had been enticed away by the natives. As this account was probably the truth, and as it appeared besides, that he had remained upon his post till within ten minutes of the time when he was to have been relieved, the punishment which the Captain inslicted upon him was

not very fevere.

Some days after, a still more troublesome affair happened, of the fame nature. On the morning of the twenty-fourth, the captain was informed that a midshipman, and a seaman, both belonging to the Discovery, were missing; and it soon appeared that they had gone away in a canoe, in the preceding evening, and had now reached the other end of the island. As the midshipman was known to have expressed a defire of remaining at these islands, it was evident that he and his companion had gone off with that intention. Though Captain Clerke immediately fet out in quest of them, with two armed boats, and a party of marines, his expedition proved fruitless, the natives having amused him the whole day with false intelligence. The next morning account was brought that the deferters were at Otaha. As they were not the only persons in the ships who wished to spend their days at these favourite iflands, it became necessary, for the purpose of preventing any farther defertion, to recover them at all events. Captain Cook, therefore, in order to convince

25.

24 Nov.

convince the inhabitants that he was in earnest, CHAP. refolved to go after the fugitives himself; to which measure he was determined, from having observed, in repeated instances, that the natives had feldom offered to deceive him with falle information.

Agreeably to this resolution, the Captain set out, the next morning, with two armed boats, being accompanied by Oreo, the Chief of Ulietea, and proceeded immediately to Otaha. But when he had gotten to the place where the deferters were expected to be found, he was acquainted that they were gone over to Bolabola. Thither our Commander did not think proper to follow them, having determined to purfue another meafure, which he judged would more effectually answer his purpose. This measure was, to put the Chief's fon, daughter, and fon-in-law, into confinement, and to detain them till the fugitives should be restored. As to Oreo, he was informed, that he was at liberty to leave the fhip whenever he pleased, and to take such methods as he efteemed best calculated to get our two men back; that, if he fucceeded, his friends fhould be released; if not, that Captain Cook was refolved to carry them away with him. The Captain added, that the Chief's own conduct, as well as that of many of his people, in affifting the runaways to escape, and in enticing others to follow them, would justify any step that could be taken to put a stop to such proceedings. In consequence of this explanation of our Commander's views and intentions, Oreo zealoufly exerted himself to recover the deserters; for which purpose he dispatched a canoe to Bolabola, with a message to Opoony, the sovereign of that island, acquainting him with what had happened, and requesting him to seize the two fugitives, and fend them back. The meffenger, who was no Dd

CHAP. less a person than the father of Pootoe, Oreo's fon-in-law, came, before he fet out, to Captain Cook, to receive his commands; which were, 1777not to return without the runaways, and to inform Opoony, that, if they had left Bolabola, he must dispatch canoes in pursuit of them, till they should finally be restored. These vigorous measures were, at length, successful. On the twenty-eighth, the deferters were brought back; and, as foon as they were on board, the three prisoners were released. Our Commander would not have acted fo resolutely on the present occafion, had he not been peculiarly folicitous to fave the fon of a brother officer from being loft to his

having determised to purine anothering While this affair was in suspence, some of the natives, from their anxiety on account of the confinement of the Chief's relations, had formed a defign of a very ferious nature; which was no less than to seize upon the persons of Captain Clerke and Captain Cook. With regard to Captain Clerke, they made no fecret of speaking of their scheme, the day after it was discovered. But their first and grand plan of operations was to lay hold of Captain Cook. It was his custom to bathe, every evening, in fresh water; in doing which he frequently went alone, and always without arms. As the inhabitants expected him to go, as usual, on the evening of the twentyfixth, they had determined at that time to make him a prisoner. But he had thought it prudent, after confining Oreo's family, to avoid putting himself in their power; and had cautioned Captain Clerke, and the officers, not to venture themselves far from the ships. In the course of the afternoon, the Chief asked Captain Cook, three feveral times, if he would not go to the bathing-place; and when he found, at last, that the Captain could not be prevailed upon, he went

26.

went off, with all his people. He was apprehen. CHAP. five, without doubt, that the defign was difco- VI. vered; though no fuspicion of it was then entertained by our Commander, who imagined that the natives were feized with fome fudden fright, from which, as usual, they would quickly recover. On one occasion, Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore were in particular danger. A party of the inhabitants, armed with clubs, advanced against them; and their safety was principally owing to Captain Clerke's walking with a piftol in his hand, which he once fired. The discovery of the conspiracy, especially so far as respected Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore, was made by a girl, whom one of the officers had brought from Huaheine. On this account, those who were charged with the execution of the defign were fo greatly offended with her, that they threatened to take away her life, as foon as our navigators should leave the island: but proper methods were purfued for her fecurity. It was a happy circumstance that the affair was brought to light; fince fuch a scheme could not have been carried into effect, without being, in its confequences, productive of much diffress and calamity to the

Whilft Captain Cook was at Ulietea, he was visited by his old friend Oree, who, in the former voyages, was Chief, or rather Regent, of Huaheine. Notwithstanding his now being, in some degree, reduced to the rank of a private person, he still preserved his consequence; never appeared without a numerous body of attendants; and was always provided with such presents as indicated his wealth, and were highly acceptable.

o s s

t,

g

)-

e

of.

۲,

ne

at

ne

nt

The last of the Society Islands to which our Commander failed, was Bolabola, where he arrived on the eighth of December. His chief view

8 Dec.

or the A.P. in passing over to this island was to procure from its monarch, Opoony, an anchor which Monfieur de Bougainville had lost at Otaheite, and which had been conveyed to Bolaboia. It was not from a want of anchors that Captain Cook was desirous of making the purchase, but to convert the iron of which it consisted into a fresh assorting articles, these being now very much exhausted. The Captain succeeded in his negociation, and amply rewarded Opoony for

giving up the anchor.

Whilst our Commander was at Bolabola, he received an account of those military expeditions of the people of this country, which he had heard much of in each of his three voyages, and which had ended in the complete conquest of Ulietea and Otaha. The Bolabola men, in confequence of these enterprizes, were in the highest reputation for their valour; and, indeed, were deemed so invincible as to be objects of terror to all the neighbouring islands. It was an addition to their same that their country was of such small extent, being not more than eight leagues in compass, and not half so large as Ulietea.

Captain Cook continued to the last his zeal for furnishing the natives of the South Sea with useful animals. At Bolabola, where there was already a ram, which had originally been left by the Spaniards at Otaheite, he carried ashore an ewe, that had been brought from the Cape of Good Hope; and he rejoiced in the prospect of laying a foundation, by this present, for a breed of sheep in the island. He left also at Ulietea, under the care of Oreo, an English boar and sow, and two goats. It may, therefore, be regarded as certain, that not only Otaheite, but all the neighbouring islands, will, in a few years, have their race of hogs considerably improved; and it

m

n-

d

as

k

to

sh

W

in

or

he

ns

ad

nd

of

n-

eft

ere

or

di-

ch

ies

for

ith

vas

by

an

of

eed

tea,

ow,

ded

the

ave

d it is 3777-

is probable, that they will be stocked with all the CHAP. valuable animals, which have been transported thither by their European visiters. When this shall be accomplished, no part of the world will equal these islands, in the variety and abundance of the refreshments which they will be able to afford to navigators; nor did the Captain know any place that excelled them, even in their present state.

It is an observation of great importance, that the future felicity of the inhabitants of Otaheite, and the Society Islands, will not a little depend on their continuing to be vifited from Europe. Our Commander could not avoid expressing it as his real opinion, that it would have been far better for these poor people, never to have known our fuperiority in the accommodations and arts which render life comfortable, than, after once knowing it, to be again left and abandoned to their original incapacity of improvement. If the intercourse between them and us should wholly be discontinued, they cannot be restored to that happy mediocrity in which they lived before they were first discovered. It seemed to Captain Cook that it was become, in a manner, incumbent upon the Europeans to vilit these islands once in three or four years, in order to supply the natives with those conveniences which we have introduced among them, and for which we have given them a predilection. Perhaps they may heavily feel the want of fuch occasional supplies, when it may be too late to go back to their old and less perfect contrivances; contrivances which they now defpife, and which they have discontinued fince the introduction of ours. It is, indeed, to be apprehended, that by the time that the iron tools, of which they had become possessed, are worn out, they will have almost lost the knowledge of their

OWII,

CHAP. own. In this last voyage of our Commander, 2 ftone hatchet was as rare a thing among the inhabitants as an iron one was eight years before; and a chiffel of bone or stone was not to be seen. Spike-nails had fucceeded in their place; and of fpike-nails the natives were weak enough to imagine that they had gotten an inexhaustible store. Of all our commodities, axes and hatchets remained the most unrivalled; and they must ever be held in the highest estimation through the whole of the islands. Iron tools are fo strikingly useful, and are now become so necessary to the comfortable existence of the inhabitants, that, should they cease to receive supplies of them, their fituation, in confequence of their neither possessing the materials, nor being trained up to the art of fabricating them, would be rendered completely miserable. It is impossible to reflect upon this representation of things without strong feelings of fympathy and concern. Sincerely is it to be wished, that such may be the order of events, and fuch the intercourse carried on with the fouthern islanders, that, instead of finally suffering by their acquaintance with us, they may rife to a higher state of civilization, and permanently enjoy bleffings far fuperior to what they had heretofore known.

Amidst the various subordinate employments which engaged the attention of Captain Cook and his affociates, the great objects of their duty were never forgotten. No opportunity was loft of making aftronomical and nautical observations; the confequence of which was, that the latitude and longitude of the places where the ships anchored, the variations of the compass, the dips of the needle, and the ftate of the tides, were afcertained with an accuracy that forms a valuable

addition

addition to philosophical science, and will be of CHAP.

eminent fervice to future navigators.

Our Commander was now going to take his final departure from Otaheite and the Society Islands. Frequently as they had been visited, it might have been imagined that their religious, political, and domestic regulations, manners, and customs, must, by this time, be thoroughly understood. A great acceffion of knowledge was undoubtedly gained in the present voyage; and yet it was confessed, both by Captain Cook and Mr. Anderson, that their accounts of things were still imperfect in various respects; and that they continued strangers to many of the most important institutions which prevail among the natives. There was one part of the character of feveral of these people, on which the well-regulated mind of the Captain would not permit him to enlarge. "Too much." fays he, "feems to have been already known, " and published in our former relations, about " fome of the modes of life, that made Otaheite " fo agreeable an abode to many on board our " fhips; and if I could now add any finishing " ftrokes to a picture, the outlines of which have " been already drawn with fufficient accuracy, I " fhould still have hesitated to make this journal "the place for exhibiting a view of licentious " manners, which could only ferve to difguft " those for whose information I write"."

From Mr. Anderson's account of the Otaheitans, it appears, that their religious system is extensive, and, in various instances, singular. They do not seem to pay respect to one God as possessing pre-eminence, but believe in a plurality of divinities, all of whom are supposed to be very powerful.

^{*} Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, vol. ii, p. 1-140.

CHAP powerful. In different parts of the island, and in the neighbouring islands, the inhabitants choose those deities for the objects of their worship, who, they think, are most likely to protect them, and to fupply all their wants. If, however, they are disappointed in their expectations, they esteem it no impiety to change their divinity, by having recourse to another, whom they hope to find more propitious and fuccessful. In general, their notions concerning Deity are extravagantly abfurd. With regard to the foul, they believe it, according to Mr. Anderson, to be both immaterial and immortal; but he acknowledges, that they are far from entertaining those sublime expectations of future happiness which the Christian revelation affords, and which even reason alone, duly exercifed, might teach us to expect+.

Although seventeen months had elapsed since Captain Cook's departure from England, during which time he had not, upon the whole, been unprofitably employed, he was fensible that, with respect to the principal object of his instructions, it was now only the commencement of his voyage; and that, therefore, his attention was to be called anew, to every circumstance which might contribute towards the fafety of his people, and the ultimate fuccess of the expedition, cordingly, he had examined into the flate of the provisions, whilft he was at the Society Islands; and, as foon as he had left them, and had gotten beyond the extent of his former discoveries, he ordered a furvey to be taken of all the boatswain's and carpenter's stores which were in the ships, that he might be fully informed of

⁺ Cook's Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, vol. ii. p. 162-165.

23.

24.

28.

lying

their quantity and condition; and, by that means, CH AP. know how to use them to the greatest advantage.

It was on the eighth of December, the very day on which he had touched there, that our 8 Dec. Commander failed from Bolabola. In the night between the twenty-fecond and twenty-third, he croffed the line, in the longitude of 203° 15' east; and on the twenty-fourth, land was discovered, which was found to be one of those low uninhabited islands that are so frequent in this ocean. Here our voyagers were fuccessful in catching a large quantity of turtle, which supplied them with an agreeable refreshment; and here, on the twenty-eighth, an eclipse of the fun was observed by Mr. Bayly, Mr. King, and Captain Cook. On account of the feafon of the year, the Captain called the land where he now was, and which he judged to be about fifteen or twenty leagues in circumference, CHRISTMAS ISLAND*. By his order, feveral cocoa-nuts and yams were planted, and some melon-feeds sown, in proper places; and a bottle was left, containing this infcription:

> Georgius Tertius, Rex, 31 Decembris, 1777. S Resolution, Jac. Cook, Pr. Discovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.+

On the fecond of January, 1778, the ships re- 2 January. fumed their course to the northward, and though feveral evidences occurred of the vicinity of land, none was discovered till the eighteenth, when an island made its appearance, bearing northeast by east. Soon after, more land was feen,

* The west side of it, on which the eclipse was observed, lies in the latitude of 1° 59' north, and in the longitude of 202° 30' east.

† Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 179-189.

1778. 18 Jan.

CHAP. lying towards the north, and entirely detached from the former. The fucceeding day was diftinguished by the discovery of a third island, in the direction of west-north-west, and as far distant as the eye could reach. In steering towards the fecond island, our voyagers had fome doubt whether the land before them was inhabited; but this matter was speedily cleared up, by the putting off of some canoes from the shore, containing from three to fix men each. Upon their approach, the English were agreeably furprifed to find, that they fpoke the language of Otaheite, and of the other countries which had lately been visited. These people were at first fearful of going on board; but when, on the twentieth, some of them took courage, and ventured to do it, they expressed an astonishment, on entering the ship, which Captain Cook had never experienced in the natives of any place, during the whole course of his several voyages. Their eyes continually flew from object to object; and, by the wildness of their looks and gestures, they fully manifested their entire ignorance with relation to every thing they faw, and ftrongly marked to our navigators, that, till this time, they had never been visited by Europeans, or been acquainted with any of our commodities, excepting iron. Even with respect to iron, it was evident that they had only heard of it, or, at most, had known it in some small quantity, brought to them at a distant period; for all they understood concerning it was, that it was a fubstance much better adapted to the purposes of cutting, or the boring of holes, than any thing their own country produced. Their ceremonies on entering the ship, their gestures and motions, and their manner of finging, were fimilar to those which our voyagers had been accustomed to see in the places lately visited. There was, likewise, a farther circumstance

circumstance in which these people perfectly re-CHAP. fembled the other islanders; and that was, in their endeavouring to fleal whatever came within their reach; or rather to take it openly, as what would either not be refented, or not hindered. The English foon convinced them of their mistake, by keeping such a watchful eye over them, that they afterwards were obliged to be less active in appropriating to themselves every object that struck upon their fancy, and excited

the defire of possession.

One order given by Captain Cook at this island was, that none of the boats crews should be permitted to go on shore; the reason of which was, that he might do every thing in his power to prevent the importation of a fatal difease, which, unhappily, had already been communicated in other places. With the fame view, he directed that all female vifiters should be excluded from the ships. Another necessary precaution, taken by the Captain, was a strict injunction, that no person, known to be capable of propagating disorder, should be fent upon duty out of the veffels. Thus zealous was the humanity of our Commander, to prevent an irreparable injury from being done to the natives. There are men who glory in their shame, and who do not care how much evil they communicate. Of this there was an instance at Tongataboo, in the gunner of the Discovery, who had been stationed on shore to manage the trade for that ship; and who, though he was well acquainted with his own fituation, continued to have connections with different women. His companions expostulated with him without effect, till Captain Clerke, hearing of the dangerous irregularity of his conduct, ordered him on board. If I knew the rafcal's name, I would

CHAP. I would hand it up, as far as lies in my power, to

everlafting infamy.

Mr. Williamson being sent with the boats to search for water, and attempting to land, the inhabitants came down in such numbers, and were so violent in their endeavours to seize upon the oars, musquets, and, in short, every thing they could lay hold of, that he was obliged to sire, by which one man was killed. This unhappy circumstance was not known to Captain Cook till after he had left the island; so that all his measures were directed as if nothing of the kind had

happened.

When the ships were brought to an anchor, our Commander went on shore; and, at the very instant of his doing it, the collected body of the natives all fell slat upon their faces, and continued in that humble posture, till, by expressive signs, he prevailed upon them to rise. Other ceremonies followed; and the next day a trade was set on foot for hogs and potatoes, which the people of the island gave in exchange for nails and pieces of iron, formed into something like chissels. So far was any obstruction from being met with in watering, that, on the contrary, the inhabitants assisted our men in rolling the casks to and from the pool; and readily performed whatever was required.

Affairs thus going on to the Captain's fatisfaction, he made an excursion into the country, accompanied by Mr. Anderson and Mr. Webber, the former was as well qualified to describe with the pen, as the latter to represent with his pencil, whatever might occur worthy of observation. In this excursion, the gentlemen, among other objects that called for their attention, found a *Morai*, or burying-ground, a particular description of

which,

which, together with drawings of it, are given CHAP. in the Voyage. On the return of our Commander, he had the pleasure of finding that a brisk trade for pigs, fowls, and roots was carrying on with the greatest good order, and without an attempt to cheat, or steal, on the part of the natives. The rapacious disposition they at first displayed, was entirely corrected by their conviction that it could not be exercised with impunity. Among the articles which they brought to barter, the most remarkable was a particular fort of cloak and cap, that might be reckoned elegant even in countries where dress is eminently the object of attention. The cloak was richly adorned with red and yellow feathers, which in themfelves were highly beautiful, and the newness and freshness of which added not a little to their beauty.

On the twenty-fecond, a circumftance occur- 22 Jan. red, which gave the English room to suspect that the people of the island are eaters of human slesh. Not, however, to rest the belief of the existence of fo horrid a practice on the foundation of fufpicion only, Captain Cook was anxious to enquire into the truth of the fact, the refult of which was its being fully confirmed. An old man, in particular, who was asked upon the subject, answered in the affirmative, and feemed to laugh at the fimplicity of fuch a question. His answer was equally affirmative on a repetition of the enquiry; and he added that the flesh of men was excellent food, or, as he expressed it, "favoury eating." It is understood that enemies slain in battle are the fole objects of this abominable custom.

The island at which our voyagers had now touched, was called Atooi by the natives. Near it was another island, named Oneeheow, where

our

1778. 29 Jan.

CHAP. our Commander came to an anchor on the twenty-ninth of the month. The inhabitants were found to refemble those of Atooi in their dispositions, manners, and customs; and proofs, too convincing, appeared that the horrid banquet of human flesh is here as much relished, amidst plenty, as it is in New Zealand. From a defire of benefiting these people, by furnishing them with additional articles of food, the Captain left with them a ram-goat and two ewes, a boar and fow pig of the English breed, and the feeds of melons, pumpkins, and onions. These benevolent prefents would have been made to Atooi, the larger island, had not our navigators been unexpectedly driven from it by stress of weather. Though the foil of Oneeheow feemed, in general, poor, it was observable, that the ground was covered with shrubs and plants, some of which perfumed the air with a more delicious fragrancy than what Captain Cook had met with at any other of the countries that had been visited by him in this part of the world.

It is a curious circumstance, with regard to the islands in the Pacific Ocean which the late European voyages have added to the geography of the globe, that they have generally been found to lie in groups, or clusters. The fingle intermediate islands, which have as yet been discovered, are few in proportion to the others; though there are probably many more of them that are still unknown, and may ferve as fteps, by which the feveral clusters are, in some degree, connected together. Of the Archipelago now first visited, there were five only with which our Commander became at this time acquainted. The names of these, as given by the natives, werere Woahoo. Atooi, Oneeheow, Oreehoua, and Tahoora. To

the

the whole group Captain Cook gave the appella- CHAP. tion of SANDWICH ISLANDS, in honour of his great friend and patron, the Earl of Sandwich*.

1778.

Concerning the island of Atooi, which is the largest of the five, and which was the principal scene of the Captain's operations, he collected, in conjunction with Mr. Anderson, a considerable degree of information. The land, as to its general appearance, does not in the least resemble any of the islands that our voyagers had hitherto vifited within the tropic, on the fouth fide of the equator; excepting fo far as regards its hills near the centre, which flope gently towards the fea-Hogs, dogs, and fowls, were the only tame or domestic animals that were here found; and these were of the fame kind with those which exist in the country of the South Pacific Ocean. Among the inhabitants (who are of a middle stature, and firmly made,) there is a more remarkable equality in the fize, colour, and figure of both fexes, than our Commander had observed in most other places. They appeared to be bleft with a frank and chearful disposition; and, in Captain Cook's opinion, they are equally free from the fickle levity which diftinguishes the natives of Otaheite, and the fedate cast discernible amongst many of those of Tongataboo. It is a very pleasing circumstance in their character, that they pay a particular attention to their women, and readily lend affiftance to their wives, in the tender offices of maternal duty. On all occasions, they seemed to be deeply impressed with a consciousness of their own inferiority; being alike strangers to the preposterous

^{*} The islands that were seen by Captain Cook, are situated in the latitude of 21° 30' and 22° 15' north, and between the longitude of 199° 20' and 201° 30' east. It was in consequence of seventy-two fets of lunar observations that the longitude was determined.

CHAP posterous pride of the more polished Japonese, and of the ruder Greenlander. Contrary to the general practice of the countries that had hitherto been discovered in the Pacific Ocean, the people of the Sandwich Islands have not their ears perforated; nor have they the leaft idea of wearing ornaments in them, though, in other respects, they are fufficiently fond of adorning their perfons. In every thing manufactured by them there is an uncommon degree of neatness and ingenuity; and the elegant form and polish of some of their fishing-hooks could not be exceeded by any European artift, even if he should add all his knowledge in defign to the number and convenience of his tools. From what was feen of their agriculture, fufficient proofs were afforded that they are not novices in that art; and that the quantity and goodness of their vegetable productions may as much be attributed to their skilful culture, as to natural fertility of foil. Amidst all the resemblances between the natives of Atooi, and those of Otaheite, the coincidence of their languages was the most striking; being, almost word for word, the fame. Had the Sandwich Islands been discovered by the Spaniards, at an early period, they would undoubtedly have taken advantage of fo excellent a fituation, and have made use of them as refreshing places to their ships, which fail annually from Acapulco for Manilla. Happy, too, would it have been for Lord Anson, if he had known that there existed a group of islands, half way between America and Tinian, where all his wants could effectually have been supplied, and the different hardships to which he was exposed have been avoided*.

On

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 179-252.

1778. 2 Feb.

29.

On the fecond of February, our navigators CHAP. purfued their course to the northward, in doing which the incidents they met with were almost entirely of a nautical kind. The long-looked for coast of New Albion was feen on the feventh of 7 March. March, the ships being then in the latitude of 44° 33' north, and in the longitude of 235° 20' east. As the vesiels ranged along the west side of America, Captain Cook gave names to feveral capes and head-lands which appeared in fight. At length, on the twenty-ninth, the Captain came to an anchor at an inlet where the appearance of the country differed much from what had been feen before; being full of mountains, the fummits of which were covered with fnow; while the valleys between them, and the grounds on the feacoast, high as well as low, were covered, to a confiderable breadth, with high, ftraight trees, which formed a beautiful prospect, as of one vast forest*. It was immediately found that the coast was inhabited; and there foon came off to the Resolution three canoes, containing eighteen of the natives; who could not, however, be prevailed upon to venture themselves on board. Notwithstanding this, they displayed a peaceable disposition; shewed great readiness to part with any thing they had, in exchange for what was offered them; and expressed a stronger desire for iron than for any other of our commercial articles, appearing to be perfectly acquainted with the use of that metal. From these favourable circumstances. our voyagers had reason to hope that they should find this a comfortable station to supply all their wants, and to make them forget the hardships and Еe delays

^{*} When this land was feen, the ships were in the latitude of 499 29' north, and the longitude of 2322 29' eaft.

CHAP. delays which they had experienced during a confrant fuccession of adverse winds, and boisterous weather, almost ever fince their arrival upon the coast of America

> The ships having happily found an excellent inlet, the coast of which appeared to be inhabited by a race of people who were disposed to maintain a friendly intercourse with strangers, Captain Cook's first object was to search for a commodious harbour; and he had little trouble in discovering what he wanted. A trade having immediately commenced, the articles which the inhabitants offered to fale were the skins of various animals, such as bears, wolves, foxes, deer, racoons, polecats, martins; and, in particular, of the fea-otters. To thefe were added, besides the skins in their native shape, garments made of them; another fort of clothing, formed from the bark of a tree; and various different pieces of workmanship. But of all the articles brought to market, the most extraordinary were human skulls, and hands not yet quite stripped of their sless; some of which had evident marks of their having been upon the fire. The things which the natives took in exchange for their commodities, were knives, chissels, pieces of iron and tin, nails, looking-glaffes, buttons, or any kind of metal. Glass beads did not ftrike their imaginations; and cloth of every fort they rejected. Though commerce, in general, was carried on with mutual honesty, there were fome among these people who were as much inclined to thievery as the islanders in the Southern Ocean. They were, at the same time, far more dangerous thieves; for, possessing sharp iron instruments, they could cut a hook from a tackle, or any other piece of iron from a rope, the moment

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 253. 258. 264-267.

moment that the backs of the English were turn CHAP. ed. The dexterity with which they conducted their operations of this nature, frequently cluded the most cautious vigilance. Some slighter instances of deception, in the way of traffic, Captain Cook thought it better to bear with than to make them the foundation of a quarrel; and to this he was the rather determined, as the English articles were now reduced to objects of a trifling nature. In the progress of the commerce, the natives would deal for nothing but metal; and, at length brafs was fo eagerly fought for, in preference to iron, that, before our navigators quitted the place, scarcely a bit of it was left in the ships, excepting what belonged to the necessary instruments. Whole furts of clothes were stripped of every button; bureaus were deprived of their furni-ture; copper kettles, tin cannifers, candlefficks, and whatever of the like kind could be found, all went to wreck; fo that these Americans became possessor of a greater medley and variety of things from our people, than any other nation that had been visited in the course of the voyage.

Of all the uncivilized tribes which our Commander had met with in his feveral navigations, he never found any who had fuch strict notions of their flaving a right to the exclusive property of every thing which their country produces, as the inhabitants of the Sound where he was now stationed. At first, they wanted to be paid for the wood and water that were carried on board; and had the Captain been upon the spot, when these demands were made, he would certainly have complied with them: but the workmen, in his abfence, maintained a different opinion, and refused to submit to any such claims. When fome grafs, which appeared to be of no use to the

CHAP natives, was wanted to be cut, as food for the few goats and sheep which still remained on board, they infifted that it should be purchased, and were very unreasonable in their terms; notwithstanding which, Captain Cook consented to gratify them, as far as he was able. It was always a facred rule with him never to take any of the property of the people, whom he vifited, without

making them an ample compensation.

The grand operation of our navigators, in their present station, was to put the ships into a compleat repair for the profecution of the expedition. While this business was carrying on, our Commander took the opportunity of examining every part of the Sound; in the course of which he gained a farther knowledge of the inhabitants, who, in general, received him with great civility. In one instance he met with a furly Chief, who could not be foftened with prefents, though he condescended to accept of them. The females of the place over which he presided, shewed a more agreeable disposition; for some of the young women expeditiously dressed themselves in their best apparel, and, affembling in a body, welcomed the English to their village, by joining in a song, which was far from being harsh or disagreeable. On another occasion, the Captain was entertained with finging. Being visited by a number of strangers, on the twenty-second of April, as they advanced towards the thips, they all stood up in their canoes, and began to fing. Some of their fongs, in which the whole body joined, were in a flow, and others in a quicker time; and their notes were accompanied with the most regular motions of their hands; or with beating in concert, with their paddles, on the fides of the canoes; to which were added other very expressive At the end of each fong they continued filent for a few moments, and then began again,

22 April.

again, fometimes pronouncing the word Hoose! CHAP.

forcibly as a chorus.

Among the natives of the country, there was one Chief who attached himself to our Commander in a particular manner. Captain Cook having, at parting, bestowed upon him a small present, received, in return, a beaver skin, of much greater value. This called upon the Captain to make fome addition to his present, with which the Chief was fo much pleased, that he insisted on our Commander's acceptance of the beaver-skin cloak which he then wore; and of which he was particularly fond. Admiring this instance of generofity, and defirous that he should not suffer by his friendship, the Captain gave him a new broad-sword, with a brass hilt; the possession of which rendered him completely happy *.

On Captain Cook's first arrival in this inlet, he had honoured it with the name of KING GEORGE's Sound; but he afterwards found that it is called Nootka by the natives +. During his flay in the place, he displayed his usual fagacity and diligence, in conjunction with Mr. Anderson, in collecting every thing that could be learned concerning the neighbouring country and its inhabitants; and the account is interesting, as it exhibits a picture of productions, people, and manners very different from what had occurred in the Southern Ocean. I can only, as on former occasions, flightly advert to a few of the more leading circumstances. The climate, so far as our navigators had experience of it, was found to be in an eminent degree milder than that on the east

coaft

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 269-286. † The entrance of the Sound is situated in the east corner of Hope Bay, in the latitude of 49° 33' north, and in the longitude of 233° 12' eaft.

CHAP coast of America, in the same parallel of latitude; and it was remarkable that the thermometer, even in the night, never fell lower than 420; while in the day it frequently rose to 60°. With regard to trees, those of which the woods are chiefly composed, are the Canadian pine, the white cypress, and the wild pine, with two or three different forts of pine that are less common. In the other vegetable productions there appeared but little variety: but it is to be considered that, at fo early a feafon, feveral might not yet have forung up; and that many more might be concealed from our voyagers, in consequence of the narrow sphere of their researches. land animals, the most common were bears, deer, foxes, and wolves. The fea animals which were feen off the coast, were whales, porpoises, and feals. Birds, in general, are not only rare as to the different species, but very scarce as to numbers; and the few which are to be met with are fo fly, that, in all probability, they are continually harraffed by the natives; either to eat them as food, or to get possession of their feathers, which are used as ornaments. Fish are more plentiful in quantity than birds, but were not found in any great variety; and yet, from feveral circumstances, there was reason to believe, that the variety is confiderably increased at certain seasons. The only animals that were observed of the reptile kind were fnakes and water-lizards; but the infect tribe feemed to be more numerous.

With respect to the inhabitants of the country, their persons are generally under the common stature; but not flender in proportion, being usually pretty full or plump, though without being muf-From their bringing to fale human skulls and bones, it may justly be inferred that they

treat

treat their enemies with a degree of brutal cruel- CHAP. ty; notwithstanding which, it does not follow that they are to be reproached with any charge of peculiar inhumanity: for the circumstance now mentioned only marks a general agreement of character with that of almost every tribe of uncivilized men, in every age, and in every part of the globe. Our navigators had no reason to complain of the disposition of the natives, who appeared to be a docile, courteous, good-natured people; rather phlegmatic in the usual cast of their tempers, but quick in refenting what they apprehend to be an injury, and easily permitting their anger to fubfide. Their other paffions, and especially their curiosity, seemed to lie in some measure dormant; one cause of which may be found in the indolence that, for the most part, is prevalent amongst them. The chief employments of the men are those of fishing, and of killing land or fea animals, for the fustenance of their families; while the women are occupied in manufacturing their flaxen or woollen garments, or in other domestic offices. It must be mentioned to their honour, that they were always properly clothed, and behaved with the utmost decorum; justly deserving all commendation, for a bashfulness and modesty becoming their sex: and this was the more meritorious in them, as the male inhabitants discovered no sense of shame. In their manufactures and mechanic arts, thefe people have arrived to a greater degree of extent and ingenuity, both with regard to the defign and the execution, than could have been expected from their natural disposition, and the little progress to which they have arrived in general civilization. Their dexterity, in particular, with respect to works of wood, must principally be ascribed to the affiftance they receive from iron tools.

CHAP tools, which are in universal use amongst them, and in the application of which they are very dexterous. Whence they have derived their know-1778. ledge of iron, was a matter of speculation with Captain Cook. The most probable opinion is, that this and other metals may have been introduced by way of Hudson's Bay and Canada, and thus fucceffively have been conveyed across the continent, from tribe to tribe. Nor is it unreafonable to suppose that these metals may sometimes be brought, in the fame manner, from the north-western parts of Mexico *. The language of Nootka is by no means harsh or disagreeable; for it abounds, upon the whole, rather with what may be called labial and dental, than with guttural founds. A large vocabulary of it was collected

> Whilft Captain Cook was at Nootka Sound, great attention was paid by him, as usual, to aftronomical and nautical fubjects. The observations which he had an opportunity of making were, indeed, fo numerous, as to form a very confiderable addition to geographical and philoso-

phical science +.

by Mr. Anderson.

On the twenty-fixth, the repairs of the ships having been completed, every thing was ready for the Captain's departure. When, in the afternoon of that day, the veffels were upon the point of failing, the mercury in the barometer fell

unufually low; and there was every other prefage

+ Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 288. 291. 293, 294. 296 298. 300, 301, 309, 310, 318, 319, 325, 329, 330, 332, 334, 337-340.

26 April.

^{*} Two filver spoons, of a construction similar to what may sometimes be feen in Flemish pictures of still life, were procured here by Mr. Gore, who bought them from a native, who wore them, tied together with a leathern thong, as an ornament round his neck. Mr. Gore gave the spoons to Sir Joseph Banks.

fage of an approaching ftorm, which might rea- C H A P. fonably be expected to come from the fouthward. This circumftance induced our Commander in fome degree to hefitate, and especially as night was at hand, whether he should venture to fail, or wait till the next morning. But his anxious impatience to proceed upon the voyage, and the fear of losing the present opportunity of getting out of the Sound, made a greater impression upon his mind than any apprehension of immediate danger. He determined, therefore, to put to fea at all events; and accordingly carried his defign into execution that evening. He was not deceived in his expectations of a ftorm. Scarcely were the veffels out of the Sound before the wind increafed to a strong gale, with squalls and rain, accompanied by fo dark a sky, that the length of the thips could not be feen. Happily the wind took a direction that blew our navigators from the coast; and though, on the twenty-feventh, the tempest 27 April. rose to a perfect hurricane, and the Resolution fprang a leak, no material damage enfued.

In the profecution of the voyage to the north, and back again to the Sandwich Illands, the facts that occurred were chiefly of a nautical kind. Minutely to record these, is not the purpose of the present work, and indeed, would extend it to an unreasonable length. Recourse must be had to the Voyage at large, for a detail of every circumstance in which Captain Cook, as a navigator, was concerned. In that Voyage will be found a full and exact account of the coafts which he paffed, the capes and promontories to which he gave names, the bays which he entered, the islands he discovered, the traverses he made, the latitudes and longitudes that were fettled by him, and the variations that happened in the wind and the weaCHAP ther. From this long and important navigation, I can only felect some few incidents, that may be accommodated to the taste and expectations of the 1778.

generality of readers.

One thing it is not improper here to observe; which is, that the Captain, in his passage along the coast of America, kept at a distance from that coast, whenever the wind blew strongly upon it, and failed on till he could approach it again with fafety. Hence several great gaps were left unexplored, and particularly between the latitudes of 50° and 55°. The exact fituation, for instance, of the supposed Straits of Anian was not ascertain-Every one who is acquainted with the character of our Commander will be sensible, that if he had lived to return again to the north in 1779, he would have endeavoured to explore the parts which had been left unexamined.

The first place at which Captain Cook landed, after his departure from Nootka Sound, was at an island, of eleven or twelve leagues in length, the fouth-west point of which lies in the latitude of 59° 49' north, and the longitude of 216° 58' east. Here, on the eleventh of May, at the foot of a tree, on a little eminence not far from the shore, he left a bottle, with a paper in it, on which were inscribed the names of the ships, and the date of the discovery. Together with the bottle, he enclosed two filver two-penny pieces of his Majesty's coin, which had been struck in 1772. Thefe, with many others, had been given him by the Reverend Dr. Kaye, the present Dean of Lincoln; and our Commander, as a mark of his esteem and regard for that learned and respectable gentleman, named the island, after him, KAYE'S ISLAND.

At an inlet, where the ships came to an anchor, on the twelfth, and to which Captain Cook gave

II May.

the

the appellation of PRINCE WILLIAM'S SOUND, he CHAP. had an opportunity not only of stopping the leak which the Resolution had sprung in the late storm, and of profecuting his nautical and geographical discoveries, but of making confiderable additions to his knowledge of the inhabitants of the American coaft. From every observation which was made concerning the persons of the natives of this part of the coast, it appeared that they had a striking resemblance to those of the Esquimaux and Greenlanders. Their canoes, their weapons, and their instruments for fishing and hunting, are likewise exactly the same, in point of materials and construction, that are used in Greenland. The animals in the neighbourhood of Prince William's Sound are, in general, fimilar to those which are found at Nootka. One of the most beautiful skins here offered to fale, was, however, that of a small animal, which seemed to be peculiar to the place. Mr. Anderson was inclined to think that it is the animal which is described by Mr. Pennant, under the name of the Cafan Marmot. Among the birds feen in this country, were the white-headed eagle; the shag; and the Alcedo, or great king-fisher, the colours of which were very fine and bright. The humming-bird, also, came frequently and slew about the ship, while at anchor; but it can fcarcely be supposed that it can be able to fubfift here during the feverity of winter. Water-fowl, upon the whole, are in considerable plenty; and there is a species of diver, about the fize of a partridge, which feems peculiar to the place. Torsk and halibut were almost the only kinds of fish that were obtained by our voyagers. Vegetables, of any fort, were few in number; and the trees were chiefly the Canadian and spruce pine, some of which were of a confiderable height and thickness. The beads and iron that were found among the people

VI. ple of the coast, must undoubtedly have been derived from some civilized nation: and yet there was ample reason to believe, that our English navigators were the first Europeans with whom the natives had ever held a direct communication. From what quarter, then, had they gotten our manufactures? Most probably, through the inter-

From what quarter, then, had they gotten our manufactures? Most probably, through the intervention of the more inland tribes, from Hudson's Bay, or the settlements on the Canadian lakes. This, indeed, must certainly have been the case, if iron was known amongst the inhabitants of this part of the American coast, prior to the discovery of it by the Russians, and before there was any traffic with them carried on from Kamtschatka. From what was seen of Prince William's Sound, Captain Cook judged that it occupied, at least, a degree and a half of latitude, and two of longitude, exclusively of the arms or branches, the

extent of which is not known *.

Some days after leaving this Sound, our navigators came to an inlet, from which great things were expected. Hopes were ftrongly entertained, that it would be found to communicate either with the sea to the north, or with Bassin's or Hudson's Bay to the East; and accordingly, it became the object of very accurate and ferious The Captain was foon perfuadexamination. ed that the expectations formed from it were groundless; notwithstanding which, he persisted in the fearch of a paffage, more, indeed, to fatisfy other people, than to confirm his own opinion. In confequence of a complete investigation of the inlet, indubitable marks occurred of its being a river. This river, with-

out

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 286. 341. 349, 350. 354. 362. 366. 371. 376. 377, 378. 380.

out feeing the least appearance of its fource, was CHAP. traced by our voyagers, as high as the latitude of 61° 30', and the longitude of 210°, being seventy leagues from its entrance. During the course of I June. the navigation, on the first of June, Lieutenant King was ordered on shore, to display the royal flag, and to take possession of the country in his Majesty's name. The Lieutenant, at the same time, buried in the ground a bottle, containing fome pieces of English coin, of the year 1772, and a paper, on which the names of the thips were inscribed, and the date of the present discovery. The great river now discovered, promifes to vie with the most considerable ones already known; and, by itself and its branches, lies open to a very extensive inland communication. If, therefore, the knowledge of it should be of future service, the time which was sent in exploring it ought the less to be regretted. But to Captain Cook, who had a much greater object in view, the delay that was hence occasioned was a real lofs, because the season was advancing apace. It was, however, a fatisfaction to him to reflect, that if he had not examined this very confiderable inlet, it would have been assumed, by speculative fabricators of geography, as a fact, that there was a passage through it to the North Sea, or to Baffin's or Hudson's Bay. Perhaps, too, it would have been marked, on future maps of the world, with greater precision, and more certain figns of reality, than the invisible, because imaginary, Straits of de Fuca, and de Fonte. In describing the inlet, our Commander had left a blank which was not filled up with any particular name; and, therefore, the Earl of Sandwich directed, with the greatest propriety, that it should be called Cook's RIVER.

All

VI. 1778.

CHAP. All the natives who were met with, during the examination of this river, appeared, from every mark of refemblance, to be of the fame nation with the inhabitants of Prince William's Sound; but from the people of Nootka, of King George's Sound, they effentially differed, both in their persons and their language. The only things which were feen among them, that were not of their own manufacture, were a few glass beads, the iron points of their spears, and knives of the same metal. Whencesoever these articles might be derived, it was evident that they had never had any immediate intercourse with the Russians; since, if that had been the case, our voyagers would scarcely have found them clothed in fuch valuable skins as those of the fea-otter. A very beneficial fur trade might undoubtedly be carried on with the inhabitants of this vaft coaft. But, without a practicable northern paffage, the fituation is too remote to render it probable that Great Britain should betice ever derive any material advantage; though it is impossible to fay, with certainty, how far the spirit of commerce, for which the English nations are to eminently diffinguished, may extend *. The most valuable. or rather the only valuable skins, which Captain Cook faw on the west side of America, were those of the fea-otter; for as to the fkins of all the other animals of the country, and especially of the foxes and martins, they feemed to be of all inferior quality +.

Several thips have been fitted out from our fettlements in India. as well as in England, on the speculation of this fur-trade. Howproprietors of the first vellel; the cargo which it carried having lowered the price of furs extremely in the China market.

⁺ Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 384. 386. 396-401.

6 June.

It was on the fixth of June, that our navigators CHAP. got clear of Cook's River. Proceeding in the course of their discoveries, when they were failing, on the nineteenth, amidst the group of islands which were called by Beering Schumagin's Islands, Captain Clerke fired three guns, and brought to, expressing, by the proper signals, that he wished to speak with Captain Cook. At this our Commander was not a little alarmed; and, as no apparent danger had been remarked in the paffage through the channel where the veffels now were, it was apprehended that some accident, such as foringing a leak, must have happened. On Captain Clerke's coming on board the Resolution, he related that several of the natives had followed his thip; that one of them had made many figns, taking off his cap, and bowing after the manner of Europeans; and that, at length, he had fastened to a rope, which was handed down to him, a fmall thin wooden case of box. Having delivered his parcel fafe, and fooken fomething, accompanied with thore figns, the canoes dropped aftern, and left the Discovery. On opening the box, a piece of paper was found, folded up carefully, upon which fomething was written, that was reasonably supposed to be in the Russian language. To the paper was prefixed the date 1778, and in the body of the note there was a reference to the year 1776. Although no person on board was learned enough to decypher the alphabet of the writer, his numerals fufficiently marked that others had preceded our voyagers in visiting this dreary part of the globe; and the prospect of soon meeting with men who were united to them in ties somewhat closer than those of our common nature, and who were not strangers to the arts and commerce of civilized life, could not but afford a fensible satisfaction to people who, for fuch

CHAP fuch a length of time, had been conversant with the favages of the Pacific Ocean, and of the North American continent. Captain Clerke was, at first, of opinion that some Russians had been shipwrecked; but no fuch idea occurred to Captain Cook. He rather thought that the paper contained a note of information, left by some Russian traders, to be delivered to the next of their countrymon who should arrive; and that the natives, feeing the English pass, and supposing them to be Russians, had resolved to bring off the note. Accordingly, our Commander purfued his voyage, without enquiring farther into the matter.

21 June.

On the twenty-first, amongst some hills, on the main land, that towered above the clouds to a most amazing height, one was discovered to have a volcano, which continually threw up vast columns of black fmoke. It doth not stand far from the coast; and it lies in the latitude 54? 48', and the longitude of 195° 45'. This mountain was rendered remarkable by its figure, which is a complete cone; and the volcano is at the very fummit. While, in the afternoon of the same day, during a calm of three hours, the English were fishing with great success for halibuts, a fmall canoe, conducted by one man, came to them from an island in the neighbourhood. On approaching the ship, he took off his cap, and bowed, as the native had done, who had vifited the Discovery a day or two before. From the acquired politeness of these people, as well as from the note already mentioned, it was evident that the Russians must have a communication and traffic with them; and of this a fresh proof occurred in the prefent visiter; for he wore a pair of green cloth breeches, and a jacket of black

black cloth, or stuff, under the gut-shirt or frock C H A P. of his own country. Succeeded of the

In the profecution of the voyage, on the twenty-fixth, there was fo thick a fog, that our navi- 26 June, gators could not see a hundred yards before them : notwithstanding which, as the weather was moderate, the Captain did not intermit his course. At length, however, being alarmed at the found of breakers on one fide of the ship, he immediately brought her to, and came to an anchor; and the Discovery, by his order, did the same. A few hours after, the fog having in some degree cleared away, it appeared that both the veffels had escaped a very imminent danger. Providence, in the dark, had conducted them between rocks which our Commander would not have ventured to pass through in a clear day, and had conveyed them to an anchoring-place, as good as he could possibly have fixed upon, had the choice

been entirely at his option. On the twenty-feventh, our voyagers reached an island, that is known by the name of Oonalashka*; the inhabitants of which behaved with a degree of politeness uncommon to savage tribes. A young man, who had overfet his canoe, being obliged by this accident to come on board the ship, went down into Captain Cook's cabin, upon the first invitation, without expressing the least reluctance or uneasiness. His own clothes being wet, the Captain gave him others, in which he dreffed himself with as much ease as any Englishman could have done. From the behaviour of this youth, and that of some of the rest of F f

Cook's Vojage, ubilicate, p. 403 415

The harbour of Samganooda, on the north fide of Qonalashka, in which Captain Cook came to an anchor, is situated in the latitude of 53° 55' north, and in the longitude of 193° 30' east.

C H A P. the natives, it was evident that these people were no strangers to Europeans, and to several of their customs. There was fomething, however, in the English ships that greatly excited their attention; for fuch as could not come off in canoes, affembled on the neighbouring hills to look at them. In one instance it was apparent that the inhabitants were fo far from having made any progress in politeness, that they were still immersed in the most favage manners. For as our Commander was walking along the shore, on the twenty-29 June, ninth, he met with a group of them, of both fexes, who were feated on the grafs, at a repaft, confifting of raw fish, which they seemed to eat with as much relish as persons in civilized life would experience from a turbot, ferved up in the richest fauce. Soon after the vessels had come to an anchor at Oonalashka, a native of the island brought on board fuch another note as had been given to Captain Clerke. He presented it to Captain Cook; but, as it was written in the Russian language, and could be of no use to the English, though it might be of consequence to others, the Captain returned it to the bearer, and difinisfed him with a few presents; for which he expressed his thanks by making several low bows as he retired *.

2 July.

16.

On the fecond of July, our voyagers put to fea from Oonalashka; and, pursuing their course of navigation and discovery, came, on the fixteenth, within fight of a promontory, near which our Commander ordered lieutenant Williamson to land, that he might see what direction the coast took beyond it, and what the country produced. Accordingly, Mr. Williamson went on shore, and reported, on his return, that having landed on the

Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 403. 413-424.

point, and climbed the highest hill, he found that CHAP. the farthest part of the coast in fight bore nearly north. At the fame time, he took possession of the country in his Majesty's name, land left a bottle, in which was inclosed a piece of paper, containing an infcription of the names of the thips, together with the date of the discovery. To the promontory he gave the name of Cape Newen--HAM *. The land, as far as Mr. Williamson could fee, produces neither tree nor fhrub; but the lower grounds were not destitute of grass, and of fome other plants, very few of which were in -flower and I have been love or and the

When our navigators, on the third of August, 3 August. had advanced to the latitude of 62° 34', a great loss was fustained by them in the death of Mr. Anderson, the surgeon of the Resolution, who had been lingering under a confumption for more than twelve months. He was a young man of a cultivated understanding and agreeable manners, and was well skilled in his own profession; befides which, he had acquired a confiderable degree of knowledge in other branches of science. How useful an affiftant he was to Captain Cook, hath often appeared in the present narrative, and is fully displayed in the Voyage at large. Had his life been spared, the public would undoubtedly have received from him fuch communications, on various parts of the natural history of the feveral places that had been visited, as would justly have entitled him to very high commendation. The proofs of his abilities that now remain, will hand down the name of Anderson, in conjunction with that of Gook, to posterity +. Soon after he had breathed

^{*} It is a rocky point, of tolerable height, fituated in the latitude of 58° 42', and in the longitude of 197° 36'.

+ Mr. Anderson left his papers to Sir Joseph Banks: but the Ad-

miralty took poffession of the larger part of them, and there they are still

9 July.

10.

The AP breathed his last, land having been seen at a distance, which was supposed to be an island, our Commander honoured it with the appellation of Anderson's Island. The next day heremoved Mr. Law, the surgeon of the Discovery, into the Resolution, and appointed Mr. Samwell, the surgeon's first mate of the Resolution, to be surgeon

of the Discovery, man and away and vability of

On the ninth, Captain Cook came to an anchor under a point of land, to which he gave the name of Cape Prince of Wales, and which is remarkable by being the most western extremity of America hitherto explored*. This extremity is distant from the eastern Cape of Siberia only thirteen leagues; and thus our Commander had the glory of ascertaining the vicinity of the two continents, which had only been conjectured from the reports of the neighbouring Asiatic inhabitants, and the imperfect observations of the Russian navigators.

Refuming his course on the tenth, Captain Cook anchored in a bay, the land of which was at first supposed to be a part of the island of Alaschka, which is laid down in Mr. Stæhlin's map. But, from the figure of the coast; from the situation of the opposite shore of America; and from the longitude, the Captain soon began to think that it was more probably the country of the Tschutski, on the eastern extremity of Asia,

retained. Such parts as related folely to natural history were delivered by Captain King to Sir Joseph; who wishes to add his testimony to the excellence of Mr. Anderson's character, to the utility of his observations, and to the great probability that, if he had survived, he would have given to the world something which would have done him credit.

* Cook's voyage, ubi supra, p. 426, 433, 440, 441, 444. Cape Prince of Wales is situated in the latitude of 65° 46' and in the longitude of 191° 45'.

+ Coxe's Comparative View of the Russian Discoveries, with those made by Captains Cook and Clerke, p. 15, 16.

which had been explored by Beering in 1728. In CHAP. the refult it appeared that this was in fact the case. Our Commander became fully satisfied, in the farther progress of his voyage, that Mr. Stæhlin's map must be erroneous; and he had the honour of restoring the American continent to that fpace which the geographer now mentioned had occupied with his imaginary illand of Alasch-This disappointment would not like been occara

From the Bay of St. Lawrence, belonging to the country of the Tschutski, our navigators steer. ed, on the eleventh, to the east, in order to get in July. nearer to the coast of America. After that, proceeding to the north, they reached, on the fee venteenth, the latitude of 70933. Onothis day, a brightness was perceived in the northern horizon, like that which is reflected from ide, and is commonly called the blinking This was at first but little noticed, from a fupposition that there was no probability of meeting with ice to foom: and yet, the sharpness of the air, and the gloominess of the weather, had, for two or three days past, seemed to indicate a fudden change in about an hour's time, the fight of a large field of ice left Captain Cook no longer in doubt with res gard to the cause of the brightness of the horizon. The ships, in the same afternoon, being then in the latitude of 700 41, were close to the edge of the ice, and not able to fland on any farther. On the eighteenth, when the weffels were in the latitude of 709 44, the ice on the fide of them was as compact as a wall, and was judged to be at least ten or twelve feet in height. Farther to the north, it appeared to be much higher. Its furface was extremely rugged, and in different places there were feen upon it pools of water. A prodigious number of fea horfes lay upon the none fome improvements in geography and navi-

gation, and . it too kew shungrol at to in a condi-

17.

1778. 19 July.

29.

CHAP ice; and some of them, on the nineteenth, were procured for food, there being at this time a want of fresh provisions. When the animals were brought to the veffels, it was no fmall difappointment to many of the feamen, who had feasted their eyes for several days with the prospect of eating them, to find that they were not fea-cows, as they had supposed, but sea-horses. This disappointment would not have been occasioned, or the difference known, had there not happened to be one or two failors on board who had been in Greenland, and who declared what these animals were, and that it never was customary to eat of them. Such, however, was the anxiety for a change of diet, as to overcome this prejudice. Our voyagers lived upon the fear horses as long as they lasted; and there were few who did not prefer them to the falt meat.

Captain Cook continued, to the twenty-ninth, to traverse the Icy Sea beyond Beering's Strait, in various directions, and through numberless obftructions and difficulties. Every day the ice increased, so as to preclude all hopes of attaining, at least during the prefent year, the grand object of the voyage. Indeed, the feafon was now fo far advanced, and the time in which the frost was expected to fet in was fo near at hand, that it would have been totally inconsistent with prudence, to have made any farther attempts, vill the next fummer, at finding a paffage into the Atlantic.

The attention, therefore, of our Commander was now directed to other important and necessary concerns. It was of great consequence to meet with a place where our navigators might be supplied with wood and water. But the point which principally occupied the Captain's thoughts was, how he should spend the winter, so as to make some improvements in geography and navigation, and, at the same time, to be in a condi-

tion

tion to return to the north, in farther fearch of a C HAP.

paffage, in the enfuing fummer*.

Before Captain Cook proceeded far to the fouth, he employed a confiderable time in examining the fea and coasts in the neighbourhood of Beering's Strait, both on the fide of Asia and America. In this examination, he afcertained the accuracy of Beering, so far as he went; demonstrated the errors with which Stæhlin's map of the New Northern Archipelago abounds; and made large additions to the geographical knowledge of this part of the world. " It reflects," as Mr. Coxe justly obferves, " the highest honour even on the British " name, that our great navigator extended his "discoveries much farther in one expedition, " and at fo great a distance from the point of his "departure, than the Russians accomplished in a " long feries of years, and in parts belonging or

" contiguous to their own empiret " 15 word

On the fecond of October, our voyagers came 2 October. within fight of the island of Oonalashka, and anchored the next day in Samganoodha harbour. Here the first concern was to put the ships under the necessary repair; and, while the carpenters were employed in this business, one third of the people had permission, by turns, to go and collect the berries with which the illand abounds, and which, though now beginning to be in a state of decay, did not a little contribute, in conjunction with spruce-beer, effectually to eradicate every feed of the scurvy that might exist in either of the veffels. Such a fupply of fifh was likewife procured, as not only ferved for present consumption, but afforded a quantity to be carried out to fea; fo

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 452, 486, 455, 456, 457, 466.

† Coxe's Comparative View of the Russian Discoveries, p. 16.

GHAP that hence a confiderable faving was made of the provisions of the ships, which was at this time an object of no small importance. 1778. 8 Oct.

Captain Cook, on the eighth, received, by the hands of an Oonalashka man, named Derramouthk, a very fingular prefent, which was that of a rye loaf, or rather a pye in the form of a loaf, for it enclosed fome falmon, highly seasoned with pepper. This man had the like present for Captain Clerke, and a note for each of the two Captains, written in a character which none on board could understand. It was natural to suppose, that the presents came from some Russians in the neighbourhood; and therefore a few bottles of rum, wine, and porter, were fent to these unknown friends in return; it being rightly judged that fuch articles would be more acceptable than any thing besides which it was in the power of our navigators to bestow. Corporal Lediard of the marines *, an intelligent land of the Mand of the Mand of Oonal.

^{*} This Corporal Lediard is an extraordinary man, fomething of whose history cannot fail of being entertaining to my readers. In the winter of 1786, he set out on the singular undertaking of walking across the continent of America; for the accomplishment of which purpose, he determined to travel by the way of Siberia, and to procure a passage from that country to the opposite American coast. Being an American by birth, and having no means of raising the money necessary for his expences, a subsociption was raised for him by Sir Joseph Banks, and some other gentlemen, amounting, in the whole, to a little more than fifty pounds. With this sum he proceeded to Hamburgh, from which place he went to Copenhagen, and thence Hamburgh, from which place he went to Copenhagen, and thence to Petersburgh, where he arrived in the beginning of March 1787. In his journey from Copenhagen to Petersburgh, finding that the gulph of Bothnia was not frozen over, he was obliged to walk round the whole of it, by Tornæo: At Petersburgh he stayed till the twenty-first of May, when he obtained leave to accompany a convoy of military stores, which at that time was proceeding to Mr. Billings, who had been his ship-mate in Captain Cook's voyage, and who was then employed by the Empress of Russia, for the purpose of making discoveries in Siberia, and on the north-west coast of America. With this convoy Mr. Lediard set out, and in August reached the city of this convoy Mr. Lediard set out, and in August reached the city of Irkutik

man, was, at the same time, directed to accom- CHAP. pany Derramoushk, for the purpose of gaining, farther information; and with orders, if he met with any Ruffians, that he should endeavour to make them understand that our voyagers were Englishmen, and the friends and allies of their nation. On the tenth, the Corporal return-10 08. ed with three Ruffian feamen, or furriers, who, with feveral others, refided at Egoochshac, where they had a dwelling-house, some store-houses, and a floop of about thirty tons burthen. One of these men was either master or mate of this vessel; another of them wrote a very good hand, and mind our mid most beautifue of continued was

not then were manufactus, and hore every Irkutik in Siberia. After that, he proceeded to the town of Yak-utik, where he met with Captain Billings. From this place he went back to Irkutsk, to spend a part of the winter; proposing, in the fpring, to return to Yakutik, in order to proceed in the fummer to

two charts, and was remitted to cont them.

Hitherto Mr. Lediard had gone on prosperously, and flattered himself with the hopes of succeeding in his undertaking. But, in January last (1788) in consequence of an express from the Empress, he was arrested, and, in half an hour's time, carried away, under the guard of two soldiers and an officer, in a post sledge, for Moscow, without his cloaths, money, and papers. From Moscow he was conveyed to the city of Moialoff in White Russia, and thence to the town of Tolochin in Poland. There he was informed, that her Majesty's orders were, that he was never to enter her dominions again without her express permission. During all this time, he suffered the greatest hardships, from sickness, fatigue, and want of rest; so that he was almost reduced to a skeleton. From Tolochin he made his way to Konigsberg, having had, as he says, a miserable journey, in a miserable country, in a miserable season, in miserable health, and a miserable purse; and disappointed of his darling enterprize. Mr. Lediard informs Sir Joseph Banks, to whom he fent, from time to time, a full account of his transactions, that, though he had been retarded in his pursuits by malice, he had not travelled totally in vain; his observations in Asia being, perhaps, as complete as a longer visit would have rendered them. From his last letter it appears, that he proposed to return, as speedily as possible, from Konigsberg

For the preceding intelligence I am wholly indebted to the obliging information of Sir Joseph Banks.

Captain bad vified. It was expedied the

Commission of the rich

unclosed a chart of all the nor

CHAP. was acquainted with figures; and all of them were fensible and well-behaved persons, who were 1778. ready to give Captain Cook every possible degree of information. The great difficulty in the reception and communication of intelligence, arose from the want of an interpreter. On the four-14 Oct. teenth, a Russian landed at Oonalashka, whose name was Erasim Gregorioss Sin Ismyloss, and who was the principal person among his countrymen in this and the neighbouring islands. Besides the intelligence which our Commander derived from his conversations with Ismyloff, and which were carried on by figns, affifted by figures and other characters, he obtained from him the fight of two charts, and was permitted to copy them. Both of them were manuscripts, and bore every mark of authenticity. The first included the Pen-Ibinskian Sea; the coast of Tartary, down to the latitude of 41°; the Kuril islands; and the peninfula of Kamtschatka. But it was the second chart that was the most interesting to Captain Cook; for it comprehended all the discoveries made by the Russians to the eastward of Kamtschatka, towards America; which, however, exclufively of the voyages of Beering and Ticherikoff, amounted to little or nothing. Indeed, all the people with whom the Captain conversed at Oonalashka, agreed in affuring him, over and over again, that they knew of no other island, besides those which were laid down upon this chart; and that no Russian had ever seen any part of the continent of America to the northward, excepting that which lies opposite to the country of the Tichutikis.

When, on the twenty-first, Mr. Ismyloss took his final leave of the English navigators, our Commander entrusted to his care a letter to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, in which was enclosed a chart of all the northern coasts the Captain had visited. It was expected that there

would

would be an opportunity of fending this letter, CHAP. in the enfuing fpring, to Kamtschatka or Okotsk, and that it would reach Petersburgh during the following winter. Mr. Innyloff, who faithfully and fuccessfully discharged the trust our Commander had reposed in kim, seemed to possess abilities that might entitle him to a higher station in life than that which he occupied. He had a confiderable knowledge of aftronomy, and was acquainted with the most useful branches of the mathematics. Captain Cook made him a present of an Hadley's octant; and, though it was probably the first he had ever feen, he understood, in a very thort time, the various uses to which that inftrument can be applied; of normani

While the ships lay at Oonalashka, our voyagers did not neglect to make a diligent enquiry into the productions of the island, and the general manners of the inhabitants. On these, as being in a great measure similar to objects which have already been noticed, it is not necessary to enlarge. There is one circumstance, however, so honourable to the natives, that it must not be omitted. They are, to all appearance, the most peaceable and inoffensive people our Commander had ever met with; and, with respect to honesty, they might ferve as a pattern to countries that are in the highest state of civilization. A doubt is fuggested, whether this disposition may not have been the consequence of their present subjection to the Russians. From the affinity which was found to sublift between the dialects of the Greenlanders and Esquimaux, and these of the inhabitants of Norton's Sound * and Oonalashka, there is strong reason

^{*} Norton's Sound is a large inlet that extends to the northward as far as the latitude of 64° 55', upon the coast of which Lieutenant King had landed, by Captain Cook's order.

of the VI. fame extraction; and, if that be the case, the existence of a northern communication of some kind, by sea, between the west side of America and the east side, through Bassin's Bay, can scarcely be doubted; which communication, nevertheless, may effectually be shut up against ships, by ice and other impediments.

While the veffels lay in Samganoodha harbour, Captain Cook exerted his usual difference in making nautical and astronomical observations. All things, on the twenty-fixth, having been gotten ready for his departure, he put to sea on that day, and sailed for the Sandwich Islands; it being his intention to spend a few months there, and then to direct his course to Kamtschatka, so as to endeavour to reach that country by the middle of May, in the ensuing summer *.

On the twenty-fixth of November, when the ships had proceeded fouthward till they came to the datitude of 20° 55, land was discovered, which proved to be an island of the name of Mowee, that had not hitherto been visited. It is one of the group of the Sandwich islands: As it was of the last importance to procute a supply of provisions at these islands, and experience had taught our Commander, that he could have no chance of fucceeding in this object, if it were left to every man's diferetion to traffic for what he pleased, and in what manner he pleased; the Captain published an order, prohibiting all perfons from trading, excepting fuch as should be appointed by himself and Captain Clerke. Even these persons were enjoined to trade only for

≥6 O&.

26 Nov.

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 486, 493,—498, 501, 502, 506, 507, 509, 522—524, 525, 526.

16

e.

le.

ca

n

e-

s,

r,

Z-

11

n

at

d

0

of

II

16

0

d,

of

is

it

of

d

0

ft

ie

e

r-

d

e.

y

r

2,

for provisions and refreshments. While our na-CHAP. vigators lay off Mowee, which was for some days, a friendly intercourse was maintained with the 1778. inhabitants. A vessy a gold shi le adueb slar

Another island was discovered on the thirtieth, 30 Nov. which is called by the natives Owhyhee. As it appeared to be of greater extent and importance than any of the islands which had yet been visited in this part of the world, Captain Cook spent nearly feven weeks in failing round, and examining its coast. Whilst he was thus employed, the inhabitants came off, from time to time, in their canoes, and readily engaged in traffic with our voyagers. In the conduct of this business, the behaviour of the illanders was more entirely free from fuspicion and referve than our Commander had ever yet experienced. Not even the people of Otaheite itself, with whom he had been so intimately and repeatedly connected, had displayed fuch a full confidence in the integrity and good treatment of the English. we lowly who has design

Among the articles procured from the natives, was a quantity of fugar-cane. Upon a trial, Captain Cook found that a strong decoction of it produced a very palatable beer; on which account, he ordered fome more to be brewed, for general use. When, however, the barrel was broached, not one of the crew would tafte of the liquor. As the Captain had no motive in preparing this beverage, but that of sparing the rum and other fpirits for a colder climate, he did not exert either authority or perfuafion to prevail upon the men to change their resolution; for he knew that there was no danger of the scurvy, so long as a plentiful supply could be obtained of different vegetables. Nevertheless, that he might not be disappointed in his views, he gave orders that no grog should be served in the ships; and he himfelf, together with the officers, continued to make

CHAP. use of the sugar-cane beer, which was much improved by the addition of a few hops, that chairced to be still on board. There could be no reafonable doubt of its being a very wholesome liquor; and yet the inconfiderate crew alleged that it would be injurious to their health. No people are more averse to every kind of inhovation than feamen, and their prejudices are extremely difficult to be conquered. It was, however, by acting contrary to these prejudices, and by various deviations from established practice, that Captain Cook had been enabled to preferve his men from that dreadful differnper, the feurvy, which, perhaps, has destroyed more of our failors, in their peaceful voyages, than have fallen by the enemy in military expeditions. The bas noblett more

As the Captain was purfuing his examination of the coast of Owhyhee, it having fallen calm at one o'clock in the morning of the nineteenth of December, the Refolution was left to the mercy of a north-easterly swell, which impelled her fast towards the land; fo that, long before day-break, lights were feen from the land, which was not more than a league distant. The night, at the fame time, was dark, with thunder, lightning, and rain. As foon as it was light, a dreadful furf, within half a league of the vessel, appeared breaking from the shore; and it was evident that our navigators had been in the most perilous situation: nor was the danger yet over; for, in confequence of the veering of the wind, they were but just able to keep their distance from the coast. What rendered their fituation more alarming was, that a rope of the main-top fail having given way; this occasioned the fail to be rent in two. In the fame manner, the two top-gallant fails gave way, though they were not half worn out. However, emin's boar; round and allower of a favourable lek, together with the ball ors, continued a make

ufe

1-

1i-

it

e

n

S

a favourable opportunity was seized of getting CHAP. others to the yards; and the Resolution again proceeded in fafety.

On the fixteenth of January 1779, canoes ar- 16 Jan. rived in fuch numbers from all parts, that there were not fewer than a thousand about the two fhips, most of them crowded with people, and well laden with hogs, and other productions of the island. It was a fatisfactory proof of their friendly intentions, that there was not a fingle person amongst them who had with him a weapon of any kind; trade and curiofity alone appearing to be the motives which actuated their conduct. Among fuch multitudes, however, as, at times, were on board, it will not be deemed furprizing, that some should betray a thievish disposition. One of them took out of the Resolution a boat's rudder; and made off with it fo fpeedily, that it could not be recovered. Captain Cook judged this to be a favourable opportunity of shewing to these people the use of sire-arms; and accordingly he ordered two or three musquets, and as many four-pounders, to be fired over the canoe which carried off the rudder. It not being intended that any of the shot should take effect, the furrounding multitude of the natives feemed to be more furprized than terrified.

Mr. Bligh having been fent to examine a neighbouring bay, reported, on his return, that it had good anchorage and fresh water, and that it was in an accessible situation. Into this bay, therefore, the Captain refolved to carry the ships, in order to refit, and to obtain every refreshment which the place could afford. As night approached, the greater part of the Indians retired on shore; but numbers of them requested permission to fleep on board; in which request, curiofity (at least with regard to several of them) was not

CHAP. their fole motive; for it was found, the next morning, that various things were missing; on which account our Commander determined not to entertain fo many persons another night.

17 Jan.

On the feventeenth, the ships came to an anchor in the bay which had been examined by Mr. Bligh, and which is called Karakakooa by the inhabitants. At this time, the veffels continued to be much crowded with natives, and were furrounded with a multitude of canoes. Captain Cook, in the whole course of his voyages, had never seen so numerous a body of people affembled in one place. For, befides those who had come off to the English in their canoes, all the shore of the bay was covered with spectators, and many hundreds were fwimming round the ships like shoals of fish. Our navigators could not avoid being greatly impressed with the singularity of this scene; and perhaps there were few on board that now lamented the want of fuccess which had attended the endeavours of getting homeward, the last fummer, by a northern paffage. "To this dif-" appointment," fays the Captain, "we owed " our having it in our power to revisit the Sand-" wich Islands, and to enrich our voyage with a " discovery which, though the last, seemed, in " many respects, to be the most important that " had hitherto been made by Europeans, through-" out the extent of the Pacific Ocean*."

Such is the fentence that concludes our Commander's journal; and the fatisfaction with which this fentence appears to have been written, cannot fail of striking the mind of every reader. Little did Captain Cook then imagine, that a discovery which promised to add no small

honou

^{*} Cook's Voyage, ubi fupra, p. 532, 535, 536, 537, 538, 540

honour to his name, and to be productive of CHAP. very agreeable consequences, should be so fatal in the result. Little did he think, that the island of Owhyhee was destined to be the last scene of his exploits, and the cause of his destruction.

The reception which the Captain met with from the natives, on his proceeding to anchor in Karakakooa Bay, was flattering in the highest degree. They came off from the shore in astonishing numbers, and expressed their joy by singing and shouting, and by exhibiting a variety of wild and extravagant gestures. Pareea, a young man of great authority, and Kaneena, another Chief, had already attached themselves to our Commander, and were very useful in keeping their coun-

trymen from being troublesome.

During the long cruize of our navigators off the island of Owhyhee, the inhabitants had almost univerfally behaved with great fairness and honesty in their dealings, and had not shewn the flighest propensity to theft: and this was a fact the more extraordinary, as those with whom our people had hitherto maintained any intercourse, were of the lowest rank, being either servants or fishermen. But, after the arrival of the Resolution and Discovery in Karakakooa Bay, the case was greatly altered. The immense crowd of iflanders that blocked up every part of the ships, not only afforded frequent opportunities of pilfering without risk of detection; but held out, even if they should be detected, a prospect of escaping with impunity, from the superiority of their numbers to that of the English. Another circumstance, to which the alteration in the conduct of the natives might be ascribed, arose from the prefence and encouragement of their Chiefs, into Gg whofe

whom there was reason to suspect of being the infligators of the depredations that were committed.

Soon after the Refolution had gotten into her flation, Pareea and Kaneena brought on board a third Chief, named Koah, who was represented as being a priest, and as having, in his early youth, been a distinguished warrior. In the evening, Captain Cook, attended by Mr. Bayley and Mr. King, accompanied Koah on shore. Upon this occasion, the Captain was received with very peculiar and extraordinary ceremonies; with ceremonies that indicated the highest respect on the part of the natives, and which, indeed, seemed to fall little short of adoration.

One of the principal objects that engaged our Commander's attention at Owhyhee, was the falting of hogs for fea-store; in which his success was far more compleat than had been attained in any former attempt of the fame kind. It doth not appear that experiments relative to this fubject had been made by the navigators of any nation before Captain Cook. His first trials were in 1774, during his fecond voyage round the world; when his fuccefs, though very imperfect, was, nevertheless, sufficient to encourage his farther efforts, in a matter of fo much importance. the prefent voyage was likely to be protracted a year beyond the time for which the ships were victualled, he was under a necessity of providing, by fome fuch method, for the fublistence of the crews, or of relinquishing the profecution of his Accordingly, he loft no opportunidiscoveries. ty of renewing his attempts; and the event anfwered his most fanguine expectations. Captain King brought home with him fome of the pork which was pickled at Owhyhee in January 1779; and, upon its being tafted by feveral persons in England

England about Christmas 1780, it was found to CHAP. be perfectly found and wholesome *. It feemed to be destined, that in every instance Captain Cook should excel all who had gone before him,

in promoting the purposes of navigation.

e

t

r

t

n

n

r

S

a

e

5,

is

1-

n k

On the twenty-fixth, the Captain had his first 26 Jan. interview with Terreeoboo, the king of the if-The meeting was conducted with a variety of ceremonies, among which, the custom of making an exchange of names, which, amongst all the islanders of the Pacific Ocean is the strongest pledge of friendship, was observed. When the formalities of the interview were over, our Commander carried Terreeoboo, and as many Chiefs as the pinnace could hold, on board the Resoluti-They were received, on this occasion. with every mark of respect that could be shewn them; and, in return for a beautiful and splendid feathered cloak which the king had bestowed on Captain Cook, the Captain put a linen shirt on his majesty, and girt his own hanger round him.

In the progress of the intercourse which was maintained between our voyagers and the natives, the quiet and inossensive behaviour of the latter took away every apprehension of danger; so that the English trusted themselves among them at all times, and in all situations. The instances of kindness and civility which our people experienced from them were so numerous, that they could not easily be recounted. A society of priests, in particular, displayed a generosity and muniscence, of which no equal example had hitherto been given; for they surnished a constant supply of hogs and vegetables to our navigators, with-

*An account of the process may be seen in Captain King's Voyage, Vol. iii. p. 12, 13.

out

3779·

CHAP. out ever demanding a return, or even hinting at it in the most distant manner. All this was faid to be done at the expence of a great man whom them who was at the head of their body, whose name was Kaoo, and who on other occasions manifested his attachment to the English. was not always fo much reason to be satisfied with the conduct of the warrior Chiefs, or Earees, as with that of the priefts. Indeed, the fatisfaction that was derived from the usual gentleness and hospitality of the inhabitants, was frequently interrupted by the propenfity of many of them to stealing; and this circumstance was the more diftreffing, as it fometimes obliged our Commander and the other officers to have recourse to acts of feverity, which they would willingly have avoided, if the necessity of the case had not absolutely called for them.

Though the kind and liberal behaviour of the natives continued without remission, Terreeoboo, and his Chiefs, began, at length, to be very inquisitive about the time in which our voyagers were to take their departure. Nor will this be deemed furprizing, when it is considered that, during fixteen days in which the English had been in the bay of Karakakooa, they had made an enormous confumption of hogs and vegetables. It did not appear, however, that Terreeoboo had any other view in his enquiries, than a defire of making fufficient preparation for difmiffing our navigators with prefents, fuitable to the respect and kindness towards them which he had always displayed. For, on his being informed that they were to leave the island in a day or two, it was observed that a kind of proclamation was immediately made, through the villages, requiring the people to bring in their hogs and vegetables, for

for the king to present to the Orono*, on his quit-CHAP. ting the country.' Accordingly, on the third of VI. February, being the day preceding the time which had been fixed for the failing of the ships, Terree- 3 Feb. oboo invited Captain Cook and Mr. King to attend him to the place where Kahoo resided. On their arrival, they found the ground covered with parcels of cloth, at a small distance from which lay an immense quantity of vegetables; and near them was a large herd of hogs. At the close of the visit, the greater part of the cloth, and the whole of the hogs and vegetables, were given by Terreeoboo to the Captain and Mr. King; who were aftonished at the value and magnificence of the prefent; for it far exceeded every thing of the kind which they had feen either at the Friendly or Society Islands +. Mr. King had in fo high a degree conciliated the affections, and gained the esteem, of the inhabitants of Owhyhee, that, with offers of the most flattering nature, he was strongly folicited to remain in the country. Terreeoboo and Kaoo waited upon Captain Cook, whose fon they supposed Mr. King to be, with a formal request that he might be left behind. To avoid giving a positive refusal to an offer which was so kindly intended, the Captain told them, that he could not part with Mr. King at that time, but that, on his return to the island in the next year, he would endeavour to fettle the matter to their fatisfaction.

Early,

^{*} Orono was a title of high honour, which had been bestowed upon Captain Cook.

[†] When the Resolution had sailed from Karakakooa Bay, Terreeoboo gave a fresh proof of his friendship for Captain Cook, by sending after him a large present of hogs and vegetables.

CHAP. VI. 1779. 4 Feb.

6.

Early, on the fourth, the ships failed out of Karakakooa Bay, being followed by a large number of canoes. It was our Commander's defign. before he visited the other islands, to finish the furvey of Owhyhee, in hopes of meeting with a road better sheltered than the bay he had just left. In case of not succeeding in this respect, he purposed to take a view of the south-east part of Mowee, where he was informed that he should find an excellent harbour*.

The circumstances which brought Captain Cook back to Karakakooa Bay, and the unhappy consequences that followed, I shall give from Mr. Samwell's narrative of his death. This narrative was, in the most obliging manner, communicated to me in manuscript, by Mr. Samwell, with entire liberty to make fuch use of it as I should judge proper. Upon a perusal of it, its importance struck me in so strong a light, that I wished to have it separately laid before the world. cordingly, with Mr. Samwell's concurrence, I procured its publication, that, if any objections should be made to it, I might be able to notice them in my own work. As the narrative hath continued for more than two years unimpeached and uncontradicted, I efteem myfelf fully authorized to infert it in this place, as containing the most complete and authentic account of the melancholy catastrophe, which, at Owhyhee, befel our illustrious navigator and Commander.

"On the fixth, we were overtaken by a gale " of wind; and the next night, the Refolution " had the misfortune of springing the head of her " foremast, in such a dangerous manner, that · Captain Cook was obliged to return to Kerage-

" gooah,

^{*} Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, vol. iii. written by Mr. King, p. 1.-30.

gooah*, in order to have it repaired; for we CHAP. se could find no other convenient harbour on the island. The fame gale had occasioned much "diftress among some canoes, that had paid us a " visit from the shore. One of them, with two " men and a child on board, was picked up by "the Refolution, and rescued from destruction: "the men, having toiled hard all night, in at-" tempting to reach the land, were fo much ex-" hausted, that they could hardly mount the ship's "fide. When they got upon the quarter-deck, "they burst into tears, and seemed much affect-" ed with the dangerous fituation from which "they had escaped; but the little child appeared "lively and cheerful. One of the Refolution's " boats was also so fortunate as to save a man and "two women, whose canoe had been upset by the violence of the waves. They were brought " on board, and, with the others, partook of the " kindness and humanity of Captain Cook. " On the morning of Wednesday, the tenth, 10 Feb. "we were within a few miles of the harbour; "and were foon joined by feveral canoes, in

"which appeared many of our old acquaintances, " who feemed to have come to welcome us back. "Among whom was Coo, aha, a prieft; he had "brought a fmall pig, and fome cocoa-nuts in his " hand, which, after having chaunted a few fense tences, he presented to Captain Clerke. He then " left us, and hastened on board the Resolution, to perform

* It is proper to take notice, that Mr. Samwell spells the names of feveral persons and places differently from what is done in the history of the voyage. For instance,

Karakakooa he calls Terreeoboo Kowrowa Kaneecabareea Maiha maiha

Ke,rag,e,goo,ah, Kariopoo, Kavaroah, Kaneekapo, herei, Ka, mea, mea.

CHAP." perform the fame friendly ceremony before " Captain Cook. Having but light winds all that "day, we could not gain the harbour. In the 1779. " afternoon, a Chief of the first rank, and near-" ly related to Kariopoo, paid us a vifit on board "the Discovery. His name was Ka, mea, mea: "he was dreffed in a very rich feathered cloak, " which he feemed to have brought for fale, but " would part with it for nothing except iron dag-" gers. These, the Chiefs, some time before our " departure, had preferred to every other article; " for, having received a plentiful supply of hatch-" ets and other tools, they began to collect a flore " of warlike instruments. Kameamea procured " nine daggers for his cloak; and, being pleafed " with his reception, he and his attendants flept " on board that night.

II Feb.

" In the morning of the eleventh of February, " the ships anchored again in Keragegooah bay, "and preparation was immediately made for " landing the Resolution's foremast. We were " visited by few of the Indians, because there were " but few in the bay. On our departure, those " belonging to other parts, had repaired to their " feveral habitations, and were again to col-" lect from various quarters, before we could " expect to be furrounded by fuch multitudes as "we had once feen in that harbour. In the af-"ternoon, I walked about a mile into the coun-"try, to visit an Indian friend, who had, a " few days before, come near twenty miles, " in a fmall canoe, to fee me, while the ship " lay becalmed. As the canoe had not left us "long before a gale of wind came on, I was " alarmed for the consequence: however, I had " the pleasure to find that my friend had escaped " unhurt, though not without fome difficulties. "I take notice of this fhort excursion, merely

"because it afforded me an opportunity of ob-C HAP.

"ferving that there appeared no change in the
"disposition or behaviour of the inhabitants. I 1779.

"faw nothing that could induce me to think,
"that they were displeased with our return, or
"jealous of the intention of our second visit.

"On the contrary, that abundant good-nature
"which had always characterised them, seemed

" still to glow in every bosom, and to animate every countenance *.

" The next day, February the twelfth, the 12 Feb. " ships were put under a taboo, by the Chiefs, a " folemnity, it feems, that was requfiite to be before Kariopoo, the king, paid his " first visit to Captain Cook, after his return. " He waited upon him the fame day, on board " the Resolution, attended, by a large train, fome of which bore the presents designed for " Captain Cook; who received him in his usual " friendly manner, and gave him feveral articles in return. This amicable ceremony being fet-"tled, the taboo was diffolved; matters went " on in the usual train; and the next day, February the thirteenth, we were visited by the " natives in great numbers: the Refolution's mast was landed, and the aftronomical observatories " erected on their former situation. I landed, " with another gentleman, at the town of Ka-" varoah, where we found a great number of canges, just arrived from different parts of the

" ifland.

Mr. King relates, that our voyagers, upon coming to anchor, were furprized to find their reception very different from what it had been on their firm arrival. He acknowledges, however, that the unfufpicious conduct of Terreeoboo, who, the next morning, came immediately to wifit Captain Cook, and the confequent return of the natives to their former friendly intercourse with the English, are strong proofs that they neither meant nor apprehended any change of conduct. "Things," says Mr. King, "went on in their usual "quiet course, till the afternoon of the thirteenth." Voyage, ubi supra, p. 36, 37, 38.

CHAP." island, and the Indians bufy in constructing " temporary huts on the beach, for their resi-" dence during the stay of the ships. On our re-" turn on board the Discovery, we learned, that " an Indian had been detected in stealing the ar-" mourer's tongs from the forge, for which he " received a pretty fevere flogging, and was fent " out of the ship. Notwithstanding the example " made of this man, in the afternoon another " had the audacity to fnatch the tongs and a " chiffel from the fame place, with which he " jumped overboard, and fwam for the shore. "The master and a midshipman were instantly " dispatched after him in the small cutter. The " Indian feeing himself pursued, made for a canoe; " his countrymen took him on board, and pad-" dled as fwift as they could towards the shore; " we fired feveral muskets at them, but to no " effect, for they foon got out of the reach of " our shot. Pareah, one of the Chiefs, who was " at that time on board the Discovery, under-" flanding what had happened, immediately went " ashore, promising to bring back the stolen goods. " Our boat was so far distanced, in chasing the " canoe which had taken the thief on board, that " he had time to make his escape into the coun-" try. Captain Cook, who was then ashore, " endeavoured to intercept his landing; but, it " feems, that he was led out of the way by fome " of the natives, who had officiously intruded " themselves as guides. As the master was ap-" proaching near the landing-place, he was met " by fome of the Indians in a canoe: they had " brought back the tongs and chiffel, together " with another article, that we had not miffed, " which happened to be the lid of the water-cask. " Having recovered these things, he was return-" ing on board, when he was met by the Reform " lution's

" lution's pinnace with five men in her, who, CHAP. " without any orders, had come from the obser-" vatories to his affiftance. Being thus unexpect-" edly reinforced, he thought himself strong " enough to infift upon having the thief, or the " canoe which took him in, delivered up as re-" prizals. With that view he turned back; and " having found the canoe on the beach, he was " preparing to launch it into the water, when " Pareah made his appearance, and infifted upon " his not taking it away, as it was his property. "The officer not regarding him, the Chief feized " upon him, pinioned his arms behind, and held " him by the hair of his head; on which, one " of the failors struck him with an oar: Pareah "inftantly quitted the officer, fnatched the oar " out of the man's hand, and fnapped it in two " across his knee. At length the multitude began " to attack our people with stones. They made " fome refistance, but were foon overpowered, " and obliged to fwim for fafety to the small " cutter, which lay farther out than the pinnace. "The officers, not being expert fwimmers, re-" treated to a small rock in the water, where " they were closely purfued by the Indians. One " man darted a broken oar at the master; but " his foot flipping at the time, he missed him, " which fortunately faved that officer's life. At " last, Pareah interfered, and put an end to their " violence. The gentlemen, knowing that his " presence was their only defence against the fury " of the natives, entreated him to flay with them, " till they could get off in the boats; but that he " refused, and left them. The master went to " feek affiftance from the party at the observato-" ries; but the midshipman chose to remain in " the pinnace. He was very rudely treated by " the mob, who plundered the boat of every " thing that was loofe on board, and then began

CHAP." began to knock her to pieces, for the fake of " the iron-work; but Pareah fortunately returned " in time to prevent her destruction. He had " met the other gentleman on his way to the ob-" fervatories, and, fuspecting his errand, had " forced him to return. He dispersed the crowd " again, and defired the gentlemen to return on " board: they represented, that all the oars had " been taken out of the boat; on which he " brought some of them back, and the gentlemen " were glad to get off, without farther molesta-They had not proceeded far, before they " were overtaken by Pareah, in a canoe: he de-" livered the midshipman's cap, which had been " taken from him in the scuffle, joined noses with " them, in token of reconciliation, and was anxi-" ous to know, if Captain Cook would kill him " for what had happened. They affured him of " the contrary, and made figns of friendship to " him in return. He then left them, and paddled " over to the town of Kavaroah, and that was " the last time we ever faw him. Captain Cook " returned on board foon after, much displeased " with the whole of this difagreeable business; " and the fame night fent a lieutenant on board " the Discovery to learn the particulars of it, as " it had originated in that ship.

" It was remarkable, that in the midst of the " hurry and confusion attending this affair, Ka-" nynah (a Chief who had always been on terms " particularly friendly with us) came from the " fpot where it happened, with a hog to fell on " board the Discovery: it was of an extraordinary " large fize, and he demanded for it a pahowa, " or dagger, of an unufual length. He pointed " to us, that it must be as long as his arm. " Captain Clerke not having one of that length, " told him, he would get one made for him by " the

"the morning; with which being fatisfied, he CHAP. " left the hog, and went ashore without making "any stay with us. It will not be altogether " foreign to the subject, to mention a circum-"flance, that happened to-day on board the "Resolution. An Indian Chief asked Captain "Cook at his table, if he was a Tata Toa; which "means a fighting man, or a foldier. Being "answered in the affirmative, he defired to see "his wounds: Captain Cook held out his right-" hand, which had a fcar upon it, dividing the "thumb from the finger, the whole length of "the metacarpal bones. The Indian, being thus " convinced of his being a Toa, put the fame "question to another gentleman present, but " he happened to have none of those distinguish-"ing marks: the Chief then faid, that he him-"felf was a Toa, and shewed the scars of some " wounds he had received in battle. Those who "were on duty at the observatories, were disturb-"ed, during the night, with shrill and melan-"choly founds, iffuing from the adjacent villa-" ges, which they took to be the lamentations " of the women. Perhaps the quarrel between "us, might have filled their minds with appre-" hensions for the safety of their husbands: but, "be that as it may, their mournful cries struck "the fentinels with unufual awe and terror. "To widen the breach between, us, some of

" the Indians, in the night, took away the Disco-"very's large cutter, which lay fwamped at the "buoy of one of her anchors: they had carried " her off so quietly, that we did not miss her till " the morning, Sunday, February the fourteenth. 14 Feb. "Captain Clerke loft no time in waiting upon "Captain Cook, to acquaint him with the ac-"cident: he returned on board, with orders for "the launch and fmall cutter to go, under the "command of the fecond lieutenant, and lie off " the

VI.

1779.

CHAP. " the east point of the bay, in order to intercept " all canoes that might attempt to get out; and, "if he found it necessary, to fire upon them. " At the same time, the third lieutenant of the "Refolution, with the launch and small cutter, was sent on the same service, to the opposite " point of the bay; and the master was dispatched " in the large cutter, in pursuit of a double ca-" noe, already under fail, making the best of "her way out of the harbour. He foon came " up with her, and by firing a few muskets, drove " her on shore, and the Indians left her: this " happened to be the canoe of Omea, a man who "bore the title of Orono. He was on board "himfelf, and it would have been fortunate. "if our people had fecured him, for his person " was held as facred as that of the king. During "this time, Captain Cook was preparing to go "ashore himself, at the town of Kavaroah, in "order to secure the person of Kariopoo, before "he should have time to withdraw himself to " another part of the island, out of our reach. "This appeared the most effectual step that could "be taken on the present occasion, for the re-"covery of the boat.—It was the measure he had invariably pursued, in similar cases, at other "iflands in thefe feas, and it had always been "attended with the defired fuccess: in fact, "it would be difficult to point out any other " mode of proceeding on these emergencies, " likely to attain the object in view *. We "had reason to suppose, that the king and his " attendants had fled when the alarm was first "given: in that case, it was Captain Cook's " intention

^{*} Mr. King acknowledges, that he was always fearful, that the degree of confidence which Captain Cook had acquired from his long and uninterrupted course of success, in his transactions with the natives of these seas, might, at some unlucky moment, put him too much off his guard. Voyage, ubi supra, p. 55.

" intention to fecure the large canoes which were CHAP. " hauled up on the beach. He left the ship about " feven o'clock, attended by the lieutenant of " marines, a ferjeant, corporal, and feven private " men: the pinnace's crew were also armed, and " under the command of Mr. Roberts. As they "rowed towards the shore, Captain Cook or-" dered the launch to leave her station at the " west point of the bay, in order to assist his own " boat. This is a circumstance worthy of no-"tice; for it clearly shews, that he was not un-"apprehensive of meeting with resistance from "the natives, or unmindful of the necessary pre-" paration for the fafety of himfelf and his peo-"ple. I will venture to fay, that, from the ap-"pearance of things just at that time, there was " not one, befide himfelf, who judged that fuch " precaution was absolutely requisite: so little did " his conduct on the occasion, bear the marks of "rashness, or a precipitate self-considence! He " landed, with the marines, at the upper end of "the town of Kavaroah: the Indians immedi-" ately flocked round, as ufual, and fhewed him "the customary marks of respect, by prostrating "themselves before him. There were no signs " of hostilities, or much alarm among them. " Captain Cook, however, did not feem willing "to trust to appearances; but was particularly " attentive to the disposition of the marines, and " to have them kept clear of the crowd. He first " enquired for the king's fons, two youths who " were much attached to him, and generally his " companions on board. Messengers being sent " for them, they foon came to him, and inform-" ing him that their father was afleep, at a house " not far from them, he accompanied them thither, " and took the marines along with them. As he " paffed along, the natives every where proftrated " themselves

VI. 1779-

CHAP." themselves before him, and seemed to have lost " no part of that respect they had always shewn " to his person. He was joined by several Chiefs, " among whom was Kanynah, and his brother "Koohowrooah. They kept the crowd in order, " according to their usual custom; and, being "ignorant of his intention in coming on shore, " frequently asked him, if he wanted any hogs, " or other provisions: he told them that he did " not, and that his business was to see the king. "When he arrived at the house, he ordered some " of the Indians to go in, and inform Kariopoo, " that he waited without to speak with him. They " came out two or three times, and instead of " returning any answer from the king, presented " fome pieces of red cloth to him, which made " Captain Cook suspect that he was not in the "house; he therefore desired the lieutenant of " marines to go in. The lieutenant found the old "man just awaked from sleep, and seemingly " alarmed at the meffage; but he came out with-" out hesitation. Captain Cook took him by the " hand, and in a friendly manner asked him to "go on board, to which he very readily con-" fented. Thus far matters appeared in a favour-" able train, and the natives did not feem much " alarmed or apprehensive of hostility on our side; " at which Captain Cook expressed himself a little "furprized, faying, that as the inhabitants of "that town appeared innocent of flealing the "cutter, he should not molest them, but that he " must get the king on board. Kariopoo sat down " before his door, and was furrounded by a great " crowd: Kanynah and his brother were both very " active in keeping order among them. In a lit-"tle time, however, the Indians were observed " arming themselves with long spears, clubs, and "daggers, and putting on thick mats, which " they

they use as armour. This hostile appearance CHAP. " increased, and became more alarming, on the " arrival of two men in a canoe from the opposite " fide of the bay, with the news of a Chief, cal-" led Kareemoo, having been killed by one of the " Discovery's boats. In their passage across, they " had also delivered this account to each of the "fhips. Upon that information, the women, " who were fitting upon the beach at their break-" fasts, and conversing familiarly with our people " in the boats, retired, and a confused murmur " fpread through the crowd. An old priest came " to Captain Cook, with a cocoa-nut in his hand, "which he held out to him as a present, at the " fame time finging very loud. He was often de-" fired to be filent, but in vain: he continued im-" portunate and troublesome, and there was no " fuch thing as getting rid of him or his noise: " it feemed as if he meant to divert their attenti-" on from his countrymen, who were growing " more tumultuous, and arming themselves in " every quarter. Captain Cook, being at the " fame time furrounded by a great crowd, thought " his fituation rather hazardous: he therefore or-"dered the lieutenant of marines to march his " fmall party to the water-fide, where the boats " lay within a few yards of the shore: the Indi-" ans readily made a lane for them to pass, and " did not offer to interrupt them. The distance "they had to go might be about fifty or fixty " yards; Captain Cook followed, having hold of "Kariopoo's hand, who accompanie " willingly: he was attended by his " fons, and feveral Chiefs. The troublesome old " priest followed, making the same savage noise. "Keowa, the younger fon, went directly into the " pinnace, expecting his father to follow; but "just as he arrived at the water-side, his wife Hh

CHAP. " threw her arms about his neck, and, with the " affiftance of two Chiefs, forced him to fit down "by the fide of a double canoe. Captain Cook " expostulated with them, but to no purpose: "they would not fuffer the king to proceed, tel-"ling him, that he would be put to death if he "went on board the ship. Kariopoo, whose " conduct feemed entirely refigned to the will of "others, hung down his head, and appeared

" much diftreffed.

"While the king was in this fituation, a Chief, "well known to us, of the name of Coho, "was observed lurking near, with an iron dag-" ger, partly concealed under his cloak, feeming-" ly, with the intention of stabbing Captain Cook, " or the lieutenant of marines. The latter propof-" ed to fire at him, but Captain Cook would not " permit it. Coho closing upon them, obliged "the officer to strike him with his piece, which " made him retire. Another Indian laid hold of "the ferjeant's musquet, and endeavoured to " wrench it from him, but was prevented by the " lieutenant's making a blow at him. Captain " Cook, feeing the tumult increase, and the Indi-" ans growing more daring and refolute, observ-" ed, that if he were to take the king off by force, " he could not do it without facrificing the lives " of many of his people. He then paused a little, " and was on the point of giving his orders to re-"imbark, when a man threw a stone at him; "which he returned with a discharge of small which one barrel of his double piece " was le). The man, having a thick mat be-" fore him, received little or no hurt: he bran-" dished his spear, and threatened to dart it at " Captain Cook, who being still unwilling to take " away his life, instead of firing with ball, " knocked him down with his mufquet. He expof-" tulated strongly with the most forward of the " crowd.

" crowd, upon their turbulent behaviour. He CHAP. " had given up all thoughts of getting the king " on board, as it appeared impracticable; and " his care was then only to act on the defensive, " and to fecure a fafe embarkation for his fmall " party, which was closely pressed by a body of " feveral thousand people. Keowa, the king's " fon, who was in the pinnace, being alarmed on " hearing the first firing, was, at his own entrea-"ty, put on shore again; for even at that time, "Mr. Roberts, who commanded her, did not "apprehend that Captain Cook's person was in " any danger: otherwise he would have detained "the prince, which, no doubt, would have been "a great check on the Indians. One man was " observed, behind a double canoe, in the action " of darting his spear at Captain Cook, who was " forced to fire at him in his own defence, but hap-" pened to kill another close to him, equally for-" ward in the tumult: the ferjeant observing " that he had miffed the man he aimed at, receiv-" ed orders to fire at him, which he did, and kil-" led him. By this time, the impetuofity of the "Indians was somewhat repressed; they fell back "in a body, and feemed staggered: but being " pushed on by those behind, they returned to " the charge, and poured a volley of stones among "the marines, who, without waiting for orders, " returned it with a general discharge of musque-"try, which was instantly followed by a fire from " the boats. At this Captain Cook was heard to " express his astonishment: he waved his hand to " the boats, called to them to cease firing, and to " come nearer in to receive the marines. Mr. Ro-" berts immediately brought the pinnace as close "to the shore as he could, without grounding, " notwithstanding the showers of stones that fell "among the people: but -, the lieutenant, " who commanded in the launch, instead of pul-Hh 2

CHAP. " ling in to the affiftance of Captain Cook, with-" drew his boat farther off, at the moment that " every thing feems to have depended upon the 1779. "timely exertions of those in the boats. By his "own account, he mistook the fignal: but be "that as it may, this circumstance appears to " me, to have decided the fatal turn of the af-" fair, and to have removed every chance which " remained with Captain Cook, of escaping " with his life. The business of faving the ma-"rines out of the water, in consequence of "that, fell altogether upon the pinnace; which "thereby became fo much crowded, that the " crew were, in a great measure, prevented from " using their fire-arms, or giving what assistance "they otherwise might have done, to Captain "Cook; fo that he feems, at the most critical " point of time, to have wanted the affiftance of " both boats, owing to the removal of the launch. " For, notwithstanding they kept up a fire on the " crowd, from the situation to which they removed " in that boat, the fatal confusion which ensued " on her being withdrawn, to fay the least of it, " must have prevented the full effect, that the " prompt co-operation of the two boats, accord-"ing to Captain Cook's orders, must have had, "towards the preservation of himself and his " people*. At that time, it was to the boats alone, "that Captain Cook had to look for his fafety;

" for, when the marines had fired, the Indians rushed among them, and forced them into the

^{*} I have been informed, on the best authority, that, in the opinion of Captain Philips, who commanded the marines, and whose judgment must be of the greatest weight, it is extremely doubtful whether any thing could successfully have been done to preserve the life of Captain Cook, even if no mistake had been committed on the part of the launch.

"water, where four of them were killed: their CHAP. " lieutenant was wounded, but fortunately "escaped, and was taken up by the pinnace. "Captain Cook was then the only one remaining " on the rock: he was observed making for the " pinnace, holding his left hand against the back " of his head, to guard it from the stones, and " carrying his musquet under the other arm. "An Indian was feen following him, but with " caution and timidity; for he stopped once or "twice, as if undetermined to proceed. At last "he advanced upon him unawares, and with a " large club *, or common stake, gave him a blow " on the back of the head, and then precipitately " retreated. The stroke seemed to have stunned "Captain Cook: he staggered a few paces, then " fell on his hand and one knee, and dropped his "musquet. As he was rising, and before he " could recover his feet, another Indian stabbed "him in the back of the neck with an iron dag-" ger. He then fell into a bite of water about "knee deep, where others crowded upon him, "and endeavoured to keep him under: but " struggling very strongly with them, he got his " head up, and casting his look towards the pin-" nace, feemed to folicit affiftance. Though the " boat was not above five or fix yards diftant " from him, yet from the crowded and confused " ftate of the crew, it feems, it was not in their

^{* &}quot;I have heard one of the gentlemen who were present say, that " the first injury he received was from a dagger, as it is represented in the Voyage; but from the account of many others, who were " also eye-witnesses, I am confident, in saying, that he was first "fruck with a club. I was afterwards confirmed in this, by Kaireekea, the priest, who particularly mentioned the name of " the man who gave him the blow, as well as that of the Chief who " afterwards struck him with the dagger. This is a point not worth " disputing about : I mention it, as being solicitous to be accurate in this account, even in circumstances, of themselves, not very " material."

CHAP. VI.

" power to fave him. The Indians got him under again, but in deeper water: he was, however, able to get his head up once more, and being almost spent in the struggle, he naturally turned to the rock, and was endeavouring to support himself by it, when a savage gave him a blow with a club, and he was seen alive no more. They hauled him up lifeless on the rocks, where they seemed to take a savage pleasure in using every barbarity to his dead body, snatching the daggers out of each other's hands, to have the horrid satisfaction of piercing the fallen victim of their barbarous rage.

"I need make no reflection on the great loss we suffered on this occasion, or attempt to desection what we felt. It is enough to say, that no man was ever more beloved or admired:
and it is truly painful to reflect, that he seems to have fallen a facrifice merely for want of being properly supported; a fate, singularly to be lamented, as having fallen to his lot, who had ever been conspicuous for his care of those under his command, and who seemed, to the last, to pay as much attention to their preservation, as to that of his own life.

"If any thing could have added to the shame and indignation universally felt on this occasion, it was to find, that his remains had been deserted, and left exposed on the beach, although they might have been brought off. It appears from the information of four or sive midshipmen, who arrived on the spot at the conclusion of the fatal business, that the beach was then almost entirely deserted by the Indians, who at length had given way to the sire of the boats, and dispersed through the town: so that there feemed no great obstacle to prevent the recovery of Captain Cook's body; but the lieutenant re-

" turned on board without making the attempt, CHAP. "It is unnecessary to dwell longer on this painful " fubject, and to relate the complaints and cen-" fures that fell on the conduct of the lieutenant. "It will be fufficient to observe, that they were " fo loud as to oblige Captain Clerke publicly to " notice them, and to take the depositions of his " accusers down in writing. The Captain's bad " ftate of health and approaching diffolution, it is " fupposed, induced him to destroy these papers " a fhort time before his death.

"It is a painful talk, to be obliged to notice " circumstances, which seem to reflect upon the " character of any man. A strict regard to truth, " however, compelled me to the infertion of thefe "facts, which I have offered merely as facts, " without prefuming to connect with them any " comment of my own; esteeming it the part of "a faithful historian, "to extenuate nothing,

" nor fet down aught in malice." "The fatal accident happened at eight o'clock " in the morning, about an hour after Captain "Cook landed. It did not feem, that the king, " or his fons, were witnesses to it; but it is sup-" posed that they withdrew in the midst of the "tumult. The principal actors were the other " Chiefs, many of them the king's relations and " attendants: the man who stabbed him with the "dagger was called Nooah. I happened to be "the only one who recollected his person, from " having on a former occasion mentioned his " name in the journal I kept. I was induced to " take particular notice of him, more from his " personal appearance than any other considera-"tion, though he was of high rank, and a near " relation of the king: he was frout and tall, with "a fierce look and demeanour, and one who " united in his figure the two qualities of ftrength

VI. ¥779·

CHAP. " and agility, in a greater degree, than ever I " remembered to have feen before in any other " man. His age might be about thirty, and by "the white fcurf on his skin, and his fore eyes, " he appeared to be a hard drinker of Kava- He " was a conftant companion of the king, with " whom I first faw him, when he paid a visit to " Captain Clerke. The Chief who first struck 66 Captain Cook with the club, was called Karima-" no, craha, but I did not know him by his name. "These circumstances I learnt of honest Kaireekea, "the prieft; who added, that they were both " held in great esteem on account of that action: " neither of them came near us afterwards. When the boats left the shore, the Indians car-" ried away the dead body of Captain Cook and " those of the marines, to the rising ground, at " the back of the town, where we could plainly " fee them with our glaffes from the ships.

"This most melancholy accident appears to " have been altogether unexpected and unfore-" feen, as well on the part of the natives as our-" felves. I never faw fufficient reason to induce " me to believe, that there was any thing of de-" fign, or a pre-concerted plan on their fide, or " that they purposely sought to quarrel with us: " thieving, which gave rife to the whole, they " were equally guilty of, in our first and second " visits. It was the cause of every misunderstand-"ing that happened between us: their petty " thefts were generally overlooked, but sometimes " flightly punished: the boat, which they at last " ventured to take away, was an object of no small " magnitude to people in our fituation, who could " not poffibly replace her, and therefore not flight-" ly to be given up. We had no other chance of " recovering her, but by getting the person of " the king into our possession: on our attempting

"to do that, the natives became alarmed for his CHAP.

"fafety, and naturally opposed those whom they
"deemed his enemies. In the sudden conflict
"that ensued, we had the unspeakable missor-

"tune of losing our excellent Commander, in the manner already related. It is in this hight the affair has always appeared to me, as entirely accidental, and not in the least owing

"to any previous offence received, or jealoufy of our fecond visit entertained by the natives.

"Pareah feems to have been the principal in"ftrument in bringing about this fatal difafter.
"We learnt afterwards, that it was he who had
"employed fome people to fteal the boat: the
"king did not feem to be privy to it, or even
"apprized of what had happened, till Captain
"Cook landed.

"It was generally remarked, that at first, the "Indians shewed great resolution in facing our " fire-arms; but it was entirely owing to igno-" rance of their effect. They thought that their "thick mats would defend them from a ball, as " well as from a ftone; but being foon convinced " of their error, yet still at a loss to account how "fuch execution was done among them, they " had recourse to a stratagem, which, though it "answered no other purpose, served to shew "their ingenuity and quickness of invention. " Observing the flashes of the musquets, they na-" turally concluded, that water would counteract "their effect, and therefore, very fagaciously, "dipped their maps, or armour, in the fea, just " as they came on to face our people: but find-"ing this last resource to fail them, they soon "dispersed, and left the beach entirely clear. It " was an object they never neglected, even at the " greatest hazard, to carry off their slain; a cuf-"tom, probably owing to the barbarity with CHAP. "which they treat the dead body of an enemy,
VI. "and the trophies they make of his bones"."

1779.

In confequence of this barbarity of disposition, the whole remains of Captain Cook could not be recovered. For, though every exertion was made for that purpose; though negociations and threatenings were alternately employed, little more than the principal part of his bones (and that with great difficulty) could be procured. By the possession of them, our navigators were enabled to perform the last offices to their eminent and unfortunate Commander. The bones, having been put into a coffin, and the fervice being read over them, were committed to the deep, on the twenty-first, with the usual military honours. What were the feelings of the companies of both the ships, on this occasion, must be left to the world to conceive; for those who were present know, that it is not in the power of any pen to express them.

A promotion of officers followed the decease of Captain Cook. Captain Clerke having succeeded of course to the command of the expedition, removed on board the Resolution. By him Mr. Gore was appointed Captain of the Discovery, and the rest of the lieutenants obtained an addition of rank, in their proper order. Mr. Harvey, a midshipman, who had been in the last as well as the present voyage, was promoted to the vacant

lieutenancy+.

Not long after Captain Cook's death, an event occurred in Europe, which had a particular relation to the voyage of our navigator, and which was so honourable to himself, and to the great nation from whom it proceeded, that it is no

Samwell's Narrative of the Death of Captain James Cook, p. 2-20.

[†] King's Voyage, ubi supra, p. 59-64, 68, 76, 77, 80, 81.

fmall pleasure to me to be able to lay the transac. CHAP. tion fomewhat at large before my readers. What I refer to is, the letter which was iffued, on the nineteenth of March 1779, by Monsieur Sartine, 19 March. fecretary of the marine department at Paris, and fent to all the commanders of French ships. The rescript was as follows: "Captain Cook, who " failed from Plymouth in July 1776, on board "the Refolution, in company with the Discove-"ry, Captain Clerke, in order to make fome "discoveries on the coasts, islands, and seas of " Japan and California, being on the point of re-" turning to Europe; and fuch discoveries being " of general utility to all nations, it is the King's " pleasure, that Captain Cook shall be treated as a " commander of a neutral and allied power, and "that all Captains of armed veffels, &c. who may " meet that famous navigator, shall make him " acquainted with the King's orders on this be-" half, but, at the fame time, let him know, "that on his part he must refrain from all hosti-" lities "." By the Marquis of Condorcet we are informed, that this measure originated in the liberal and enlightened mind of that excellent citizen and statesman, Monsieur Turgot. "When " war," fays the Marquis, " was declared between 56 France and England, M. Turgot faw how ho-" nourable it would be to the French nation, " that the veffel of Captain Cook should be treat-" ed with respect at sea. He composed a memo-" rial, in which he proved, that honour, reason, " and even interest, dictated this act of respect " for humanity; and it was in confequence of "this memorial, the author of which was un-" known during his life, that an order was given

^{*} Gentleman's Magazine, vol. xlix. p. 209.

CHAP." not to treat as an enemy, the common bene-VI.

"factor of every European nation *."

Whilst great praise is due to Monsieur Turgot, for having fuggested the adoption of a measure which hath contributed fo much to the reputation of the French government, it must not be forgotten, that the first thought of such a plan of conduct was probably owing to Dr. Benjamin Franklin. Thus much, at least, is certain, that this eminent philosopher, when embaffador at Paris from the United States of America, preceded the Court of France in issuing a similar requisition; a copy of which cannot fail of being acceptable to the reader.

"To all Captains and Commanders of armed " Ships, acting by Commission from the Con-" gress of the United States of America, now " in war with Great Britain.

" Gentlemen,

" A ship having been sitted out from England " before the commencement of this war, to make " discoveries of new countries in unknown seas, " under the conduct of that most celebrated navi-" gator and discoverer, Captain Cook; an under-" taking truly laudable in itself, as the increase of " geographical knowledge facilitates the commu-" nication between distant nations, in the ex-" change of useful products and manufactures, and " the extension of arts, whereby the common en-"joyments of human life are multiplied and aug-"mented, and science of other kinds encreased, " to the benefit of mankind in general-This " is

^{*} Condorcet's Life of M. Turgot, p. 263, English translation.

1779

" is therefore most earnestly to recommend to CHAP. " every one of you, that in case the said ship, "which is now expected to be foon in the Euro-" pean feas on her return, should happen to fall " into your hands, you would not confider her "as an enemy, nor fuffer any plunder to be " made of the effects contained in her, nor ob-"ftruct her immediate return to England, by " detaining her, or fending her into any other " part of Europe, or to America; but that you "would treat the faid Captain Cook and his "people with all civility and kindness, affording "them, as common friends to mankind, all the " affiftance in your power, which they may hap-" pen to ftand in need of. In fo doing, you "will not only gratify the generofity of your " own dispositions, but there is no doubt of your " obtaining the approbation of the Congress, " and your other American owners.

"I have the honour to be, "Gentlemen, "Your most obedient, " humble fervant,

" At Passy, near "Paris, this 10th " day of March

" B. FRANKLIN,

" Minister Plenipotentiary from " the Congress of the United "States, at the Court of "France."

It is observable, that as Dr. Franklin acted on his own authority, he could only earneftly recommend to the Commanders of American armed veffels not to confider Captain Cook as an enemy; and it is fomewhat remarkable, that he mentions no more than one ship; Captain Clerke not being noticed

CHAP noticed in the requisition. In the confidence which the Doctor expressed, with respect to the approbation of Congress, he happened to be mistaken. As the members of that affembly, at least with regard to the greater part of them, were not possessed of minds equally enlightened with that of their embaffador, he was not supported by his mafters in this noble act of humanity, of love to science, and of liberal policy. ders he had given were instantly reversed; and it was directed by Congress, that especial care should be taken to seize Captain Cook, if an opportunity of doing it occurred. All this proceeded from a false notion that it would be injurious to the United States for the English to obtain a knowledge of the opposite coast of America.

The conduct of the court of Spain was regulated by fimilar principles of jealoufy. It was apprehended by that court, that there was reason to be cautious of granting, too eafily, an indulgence to Captain Cook; fince it was not certain what mischiefs might ensue to the Spaniards from a northern passage to their American dominions. M. de Belluga, a Spanish gentleman and officer, of a liberal and a philosophical turn of mind, and who was a member of the Royal Society of London, endeavoured to prevail upon the Count of Florida Blanca, and M. d'Almodavar, to grant an order of protection to the Refolution and Discovery; and he flattered himfelf, that the ministers of the King of Spain would be prevailed upon to prefer the cause of science to the partial views of interest; but the Spanish Government was not capable of rising to fo enlarged and magnanimous a plan of policv. To the French nation alone, therefore, was referved

referved the honour of fetting an example of CHAP. wisdom and humanity, which, I trust, will not, hereafter, be so uncommon in the history of mankind *.

The progress of the voyage, after the decease of Captain Cook, doth not fall within the delign of the present narrative. It must be sufficient, therefore, barely to mention, that the Sandwich Islands were farther explored, and a large addition of whatever relates to the knowledge of their productions and inhabitants obtained; that Kamtschatka was visited, and a very friendly intercourse maintained with the Russian officers of that country; that our navigators experienced the most generous and hospitable treatment from Major Behm in particular, the Commander of the garrison at Bolcharetsk; that they proceeded to the north, in pursuit of the grand object of the expedition; that, having passed through Beering's Strait, and attained to something more than fixty-nine degrees and a half of northern latitude, they found it absolutely impossible to penetrate through the ice, either on the fide of America or on the fide of Asia; that every hope being excluded of accomplishing this way a paffage into the Atlantic ocean, Captain Clerke was obliged to come to the determination

For the materials from which the preceding account is drawn up, I am indebted to Sir Joseph Banks. Sir Joseph and Mr. Stephens have been at confiderable pains to obtain, by application to the Duke of Dorset, an authentic copy of the protection granted by the court of France to Captain Cook's ships. If it should arrive in time, it will be inserted at the end of the volume.

I shall here add, that as soon as Captain Gore was informed of the order of the French Government (an account of which he received at Canton) he thought himself bound, in return for the liberal exceptions made in favour of our navigators, to refrain from laying hold of any opportunities of capture that might chance to occur, and to preserve, throughout his voyage, the strictest neutrality. King's Voyage, p. 448.

CHAP, of failing back to the fouthward; that on the twenty-second of August, (1779) being less than a month after this determination, the Captain 22 August died of a consumption *; that Captain Gore fucceeded to the command of the Refolution, and Lieutenant King to that of the Discovery; that a fecond visit was paid to Kamtschatka, by which a farther acquaintance was gained with that part of the world; that no small accession of information was acquired with respect to geographical science in general; that our voyagers purfued their course by the coasts of Japan and China; that they made fome flay at Canton; that thence they proceeded to the Cape of Good Hope; that they came to an anchor at 3780. 22d May. Stromness, on the twenty-second of May, 1780; and the garrion at

[·] Captain Clerke departed this life in the thirty-eighth year of his age. He was brought up to the navy from his earliest youth, and had been in several actions during the war which began in 17.56. In the action between the Bellona and the Courageux, being stationed in the mizen-top, he was carried overboard with the maft, but was taken up without having received any hurt. He was a mid-shipman in the Dolphin, commanded by Captain Byron, in her voy. age round the world; after which he served on the American station. In 1768, he made his second voyage round the world, in the Endeavour, as master's mate; and, in consequence of the death of Mr. Hicks, which happened on the twenty-third of May, 1771, he returned home a lieutenant. His third circum-navigation of the globe was in the Resolution, of which he was appointed the second lieutenant; and he continued in that situation till his return in 1775; foon after which he was promoted to the rank of mafter and commander. In what capacity he failed with Captain Cook in this last expedition, need not be added. The consumption of which Captain Clerke died, had evidently commenced before he left England, and he lingered under it during the whole voyage. Though his very gradual decay had long made him a melancholy object to his friends, nevertheless, they derived some consolation from the equanimity with which he bore his disorder, from the constant-flow of good spirits maintained by him to his latest hour, and from his fubmitting to his fate with chearful refignation. It was, however, impossible, says Mr. King, "not to feel a more than common degree of compassion for a person, whose life had been a continued
feene of those difficulties and hardships, to which a seaman's occupation is subject, and under which he at last sunk." King's Voyage, p. 280, 281.

that both ships arrived fafe at the Nore, on the CHAP. fourth of October, after an absence of four years, two months, and twenty-two days; that, during the whole of the undertaking, the Refolution loft 4 Oct. only five men by fickness, three of whom were in a precarious state of health at their departure from England, while the Discovery did not lose a fingle man; and that the history of the voyage, from the time in which Captain Cook's journal ends, was written with great ability by Mr. King, With concern I add, that, by the decease of Captain King, who died at Nice, in Italy, in the year 1784, this country fustained another loss of an able and scientific commander and navigator, who hath left a memorial of his talents and fervices, which has honourably united his name with that of the immortal Cook *.

Incorporation to the production of the production becomes to the production of the productin of the production of the production of the production of the pr

The state of the s

- in the control of the property of the control of

on a few skylin discourse the medicine a second of the control of

^{*} A farther account of Captain King will be found in the Appendix, No. 1.

louis so the ber, site maddende on the reast

only five men, by fickedels three of whom were

distributed things arrived file at the indee, on the Caraba

CHAPTER THE SEVENTH.

Character of Captain Cook.—Effects of his Voyages.—
Testimonies of Applause.—Commemorations of his
Services.—Regard paid to his Family.—Conclusion.

CHAP. FROM the relation that has been given of Captain Cook's course of life, and of the important events in which he was engaged, my readers cannot be strangers to his general character. This, therefore, might be left to be collected from his actions, which are the best exhibitions of the great qualities of his mind. But, perhaps, were I not to endeavour to afford a summary view of him in these respects, I might be thought to fail in that duty which I owe to the public on the present occasion.

It cannot, I think, be denied, that genius belonged to Captain Cook in an eminent degree. By genius I do not here understand imagination merely, or that power of culling the flowers of fancy which poetry delights in; but an inventive mind; a mind full of resources; and which, by its own native vigour, can suggest noble objects of pursuit, and the most effectual methods of attaining them. This faculty was possessed by our navigator in its full energy, as is evident from the uncommon sagacity and penetration which he discovered in a vast variety of critical and difficult situations.

To genius Captain Cook added application, without which nothing very valuable or permanent can be accomplished, even by the brightest capacity.

capacity. For an unremitting attention to whatever related to his profession, he was distinguished in early life. In every affair that was undertaken by him, his affiduity was without interruption, and without abatement. Wherever he came, he suffered nothing which was fit for a seaman to know or to practise, to pass unnoticed, or to escape his diligence.

The genius and application of Captain Cook were followed by a large extent of knowledge; a knowledge which, besides a consummate acquaintance with navigation, comprehended a number of other sciences. In this respect, the ardour of his mind rose above the disadvantages of a very confined education. His progress in the different branches of the mathematics, and particularly in astronomy, became so eminent, that, at length, he was able to take the lead in making the neceffary observations of this kind, in the course of his voyages. He attained, likewise, to fuch a degree of proficiency in general learning, and the art of composition, as to be able to express himfelf with a manly clearness and propriety, and to become respectable as the narrator, as well as the performer, of great actions.

Another thing, strikingly conspicuous in Captain Cook, was the perseverance with which he pursued the noble objects to which his life was devoted. This, indeed, was a most distinguished feature in his character: in this he scarcely ever had an equal, and never a superior. Nothing could divert him from the points he aimed at; and he persisted in the prosecution of them, through difficulties and obstructions which would have deterred minds of very considerable strength

and firmness.

What enabled him to persevere in all his mighty undertakings, was the invincible fortitude of his spirit. Of this, instances without number oc-

Ii 2

Ocean .

CHAP, cur in the accounts of his expeditions; two of which I shall take the liberty of recalling to the attention of my readers. The first is, the undaunted magnanimity with which he profecuted his discoveries along the whole south-east coast of New Holland. Surrounded as he was with the greatest possible dangers, arising from the perpetual fuccession of rocks, shoals, and breakers, and having a ship that was almost shaken to pieces by repeated perils, his vigorous mind had a regard to nothing but what he thought was required of him by his duty to the public. It will not be easy to find, in the history of navigation, a parallel example of courageous exertion. The other circumstance I would refer to is the boldness with which, in his fecond voyage, after he left the Cape of Good Hope, he pushed forwards into unknown feas, and penetrated through innumerable mountains and islands of ice, in the search of a fouthern continent. It was like launching into chaos: all was obscurity, all was darkness before him; and no event can be compared with it, excepting the failing of Magelhaens, from the straits which bear his name, into the Pacific

The fortitude of Captain Cook, being founded upon reason, and not upon instinct, was not an impetuous valour, but accompanied with compleat self-possession. He was master of himself on every trying occasion, and seemed to be the more calm and collected, the greater was the exigence of the case. In the most perilous situations, when our Commander had given the proper directions concerning what was to be done while he went to rest, he could sleep, during the hours

[†] For the two remarks above mentioned, I am indebted to Mr. Hodges.

he had allotted to himself, with perfect compo-c h A P. fure and soundness *. Nothing could be a surer vII. indication of an elevated mind; of a mind that was entirely satisfied with itself, and with the measures it had taken.

To all these great qualities, Captain Cook added the most amiable virtues. That it was impossible for any one to excel him in humanity, is apparent from his treatment of his men through all his voyages, and from his behaviour to the natives of the countries which were difcovered by him. The health, the convenience, and, as far as it could be admitted, the enjoyment of the feamen, were the constant objects of his attention; and he was anxiously folicitous to meliorate the condition of the inhabitants of the feveral islands and places which he visited. With regard to their thieveries, he candidly apologized for, and overlooked, many offences which others would have sharply punished; and when he was laid under an indispensable necessity of proceeding to any acts of feverity, he never exerted them without feeling much reluctance and concern.

In the private relations of life, Captain Cook was entitled to high commendation. He was excellent as a husband and a father, and fincere and steady in his friendships: and to this may be added, that he possessed that general sobriety and virtue of character, which will always be found to constitute the best security and ornament of every other moral qualification.

With the greatest benevolence and humanity of disposition, Captain Cook was occasionally subject to a hastiness of temper. This, which has

been

^{*} From the information of Captain Dudeston.

deed few) who are unfavourable to his memory, is acknowledged by his friends. It is mentioned both by Captain King and Mr. Samwell, in their delineations of his character. Mr. Hayley, in one of his poems, calls him the mild Cook; but, perhaps, that is not the happiest epithet which could have been applied to him. Mere mildness can scarcely be considered as the most prominent and distinctive feature in the mind of a man, whose powers of understanding and of action were so strong and elevated, who had such immense difficulties to struggle with, and who must frequently have been called to the sirmest exertions of authority and command.

Lastly, Captain Cook was distinguished by a property which is almost universally the concomitant of truly great men, and that is, a simplicity of manners. In conversation he was unaffected and unassuming; rather backward in pushing discourse; but obliging and communicative in his answers to those who addressed him for the purposes of information. It was not possible that, in a mind constituted like his, such a paltry quality as vanity could find an exist-

ence.

In this imperfect delineation of Captain Cook's character, I have spoken of him in a manner which is fully justified by the whole course of his life and actions, and which is perfectly agreeable to the sentiments of those who were the most nearly connected with him in the habits of intimacy and friendship. The pictures which some of them have drawn of him, though they have already been presented to the public, cannot here with propriety be omitted.—Captain King has expressed himself concerning him in the following

ing terms: " The constitution of his body was CHAP. " robust, inured to labour, and capable of un-" dergoing the severest hardships. His stomach " bore, without difficulty, the coarsest and most " ungrateful food:—Great was the indifference " with which he fubmitted to every kind of " felf-denial. The qualities of his mind were of " the fame hardy, vigorous kind with those of " his body. His understanding was strong and " perspicacious. His judgment, in whatever re-" lated to the fervices he was engaged in, quick " and fure. His defigns were bold and manly; " and both in the conception, and in the mode " of execution, bore evident marks of a great " original genius. His courage was cool and " determined, and accompanied with an admi-" rable presence of mind in the moment of dan-" ger. His temper might perhaps have been " justly blamed, as subject to hastiness and pas-" fion, had not these been disarmed by a dispo-" fition the most benevolent and humane.

" Such were the outlines of Captain Cook's " character; but its most distinguishing fea-" ture was that unremitting perseverance in the 56 pursuit of his object, which was not only fu-" perior to the opposition of dangers, and the " pressure of hardships, but even exempt from " the want of ordinary relaxation. During the " long and tedious voyages in which he was en-" gaged, his eagerness and activity were never " in the least abated. No incidental temptation " could detain him for a moment: even those si intervals of recreation, which fometimes un-" avoidably occurred, and were looked for by " us with a longing, that perfons, who have " experienced the fatigues of fervice, will readi-" ly excuse, were submitted to by him with a ff certain impatience, whenever they could not

CHAP. " be employed in making a farther provision for vir. " the more effectual profecution of his defigns*".

"The character of Captain Cook," fays Mr.
Samwell. " will be best exemplified by the fer-

" The character of Captain Cook," fays Mr. Samwell, " will be best exemplified by the services he has performed, which are univerfally " known, and have ranked his name above that " of any navigator of ancient or of modern times. Nature had endowed him with a mind " vigorous and comprehensive, which in his " riper years he had cultivated with care and in-" duftry. His general knowledge was extensive " and various: in that of his own profession he " was unequalled. With a clear judgment, ftrong " masculine sense, and the most determined re-" folution; with a genius peculiarly turned for " enterprize, he purfued his object with un-" fhaken perseverance :- vigilant and active in " an eminent degree :- cool and intrepid among dangers; patient and firm under difficulties " and diffres; fertile in expedients; great and " original in all his defigns; active and refolved " in carrying them into execution. These qua-" lities rendered him the animating spirit of the " expedition: in every fituation, he flood un-" rivalled and alone; on him all eyes were turn-" ed; he was our leading-star, which at its fet-" ting, left us involved in darkness and despair. "His constitution was strong, his mode of " living temperate.—He was a modest " man, and rather bashful; of an agreeable " lively conversation, fensible and intelligent. " In his temper he was fomewhat hafty, but " of a disposition the most friendly, benevo-" lent, and humane. His person was above " fix feet high, and though a good looking " man, he was plain both in address and appear" ance. His head was small; his hair, which CHAP. " was a dark brown; he wore tied behind. His,

" face was full of expression; his nose exceeding-" ly well shaped; his eyes, which were small and " of a brown cast, were quick and piercing; his "eye-brows prominent, which gave his counte-

" nance altogether an air of austerity.

"He was beloved by his people, who looked "up to him as to a father, and obeyed his com-" mands with alacrity. The confidence we placed " in him was unremitting; our admiration of his "great talents unbounded; our esteem for his " good qualities affectionate and fincere.-

"He was remarkably distinguished for the acti-"vity of his mind: it was that which enabled "him to pay an unwearied attention to every " object of the fervice. The ftrict economy he " observed in the expenditure of the ship's stores, " and the unremitting care he employed for the " preservation of the health of his people, were "the causes that enabled him to prosecute disco-" veries in remote parts of the globe, for fuch a " length of time as had been deemed impracticable "by former navigators. The method he disco-" vered for preferving the health of feamen in long "voyages, will transmit his name to posterity as " the friend and benefactor of mankind: the fuc-" cefs which attended it, afforded this truly great " man more fatisfaction, than the diffinguished " fame that attended his discoveries.

"England has been unanimous in her tribute " of applause to his virtues, and all Europe has " borne testimony to his merit. There is hardly " a corner of the earth, however remote and " favage, that will not long remember his bene-" volence and humanity. The grateful Indian, " in time to come, pointing to the herds grazing

CHAP. " his fertile plains, will relate to his children how " the first stock of them was introduced into the " country; and the name of Cook will be remem-

" bered among those benign spirits, whom they "worship as the fource of every good, and the

" fountain of every bleffing *."

At the conclusion of the Introduction to the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, is an eulogium on Captain Cook, drawn up by one of his own profession, of whom it is said, that he is not more diftinguished by the elevation of rank, than by the dignity of private virtues +. Though this excellent eulogium must be known to many, and perhaps to most, of my readers, they will not be displeased at having the greater part of it brought to their recollection.

Captain James Cook "poffeffed," fays the writer, " in an eminent degree, all the qualifications re-" quifite for his profession and great undertakings; " together with the amiable and worthy qualities

" of the best men.

" Cool and deliberate in judging: fagacious in " determining: active in executing: fleady and " persevering in enterprizing from vigilance and "unremitting caution: unfubdued by labour, " difficulties, and disappointments: fertile in ex-" pedients: never wanting presence of mind, al-"ways possessing himself, and the full use of a " found understanding.

" Mild, just, but exact in discipline: he was a " father to his people, who were attached to him

" from affection, and obedient from confidence. "His knowledge, his experience, his fagacity, " rendered him so entirely master of his subject,

^{*} Some particulars concerning the life and character of Captain Cook, annexed to the narrative of his death, p. 25-27. + Introduction, p. lxxxv.

"that the greatest obstacles were surmounted, CHAP.
"and the most dangerous navigations became, VII.

" eafy, and almost safe, under his direction.

"By his benevolent and unabating attention to the welfare of his ship's company, he discovered and introduced a system for the preservation of the health of seamen in long voyages, which

" has proved wonderfully efficacious.

"The death of this eminent and valuable man " was a lofs to mankind in general; and particu-" larly to be deplored by every nation that " respects useful accomplishments, that honours " fcience, and loves the benevolent and amiable "affections of the heart. It is still more to be "deplored by this country, which may justly "boaft of having produced a man hitherto un-" equalled for nautical talents; and that forrow " is farther aggravated by the reflection, that his " country was deprived of the ornament by the "enmity of a people, from whom, indeed, it " might have been dreaded, but from whom it "was not deserved. For, actuated always by the " most attentive care and tender compassion for the " favages in general, this excellent man was ever " affiduously endeavouring, by kind treatment, " to diffipate their fears, and court their friend-" ship; overlooking their thefts and treacheries, " and frequently interposing, at the hazard of his "life, to protect them from the sudden resent-" ment of his own injured people. "Traveller! contemplate, admire, revere, and

"emulate this great mafter in his profession; whose skill and labours have enlarged natural philosophy; have extended nautical science; and have disclosed the long-concealed and admirable arrangements of the Almighty in the formation of this globe, and, at the same time, the arrogance of mortals, in presuming to ac-

" count,

CHAP. "count, by their speculations, for the laws by "which he was pleased to create it. It is now "discovered, beyond all doubt, that the same "great Being who created the universe by his stat, "by the same ordained our earth to keep a just "poise, without a corresponding southern contiment, and it does so. He stretches out the north "over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon

" nothing. Job xxvi. 7.

"If the arduous but exact researches of this ex"traordinary man have not discovered a new
"world, they have discovered seas unnavigated
"and unknown before. They have made us acquainted with islands, people, and productions
of which we had no conception. And if he has
not been so fortunate as Americus, to give his
name to a continent, his pretensions to such a
distinction remain unrivalled; and he will be
revered while there remains a page of his own
modest account of his voyages, and as long as
mariners and geographers shall be instructed,
by his new map of the southern hemisphere, to
trace the various courses and discoveries he has
made.

"If public fervices merit public acknowledgments; if the man who adorned and raifed the
fame of his country is deferving of honours,
then Captain Cook deferves to have a monument raifed to his memory, by a generous and
grateful nation.

"Virtutis uberrimum alimentum est honos.
"Val. Maximus, lib. ii. cap. 6 *."

The last character I shall here insert of Captain Cook, comes from a learned writer, who, in consequence of some disagreements which are understood to

* Introduction to the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, p. lxxxvi-lxxxix.

to have fublisted between him and our great na-CHAP. vigator, cannot be suspected of intending to celebrate him in the language of flattery. Reinhold Forster, having given a short account of the Captain's death, adds as follows: " Thus " fell this truly glorious and juftly admired na-"vigator.—If we confider his extreme abilities, "both natural and acquired, the firmness and " constancy of his mind, his truly paternal care " for the crew entrusted to him, the amiable man-" ner with which he knew how to gain the friend-" ship of all the favage and uncultivated nations, " and even his conduct towards his friends and " acquaintance, we must acknowledge him to " have been one of the greatest men of his age, " and that reason justifies the tear which friend-" fhip pays to his memory "." After fuch an encomium on Captain Cook, less regard may justly be paid to the deductions from it, which are added by Dr. Forster. What he hath said concerning the Captain's temper, feems to have received a tincture of exaggeration, from prejudice and perfonal animofity; and the Doctor's infinuation, that our navigator obstructed Lieutenant Pickersgill's promotion, is, I have good reason to believe, wholly groundless. There is another error which must not pass unnoticed. Dr. Forster puts in his caveat against giving the name of Cook's Straits to the Straits between Asia and America, discovered by Beering. But if the Doctor had read the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, published by authority, he would have feen, that there was no defign of robbing Beering of the honour to which he was entitled.

From a furvey of Captain Cook's character, it is natural to extend our reflections to the effects of

^{*} Forster's History of the Voyages and Discoveries made in the North, p. 404.

These, indeed, must have largely appeared in the general History of his Life; and they have finely been displayed by Dr. Douglas (now Bishop of Carlisle) in his admirable Introduction to the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean. Under the conduct of so able a guide, I shall subjoin a short view of the

fubject.

It must, however, be observed, that, with regard to the three principal confequences of our great navigator's transactions, I have nothing farther to offer. These are, his having dispelled the illusion of a Terra Australis Incognita; his demonstration of the impracticability of a northern paffage from the Pacific to the Atlantic Ocean; and his having established a fure method of preserving the health of feamen in the longest voyages, and through every variety of latitude and climate. Concerning each of these capital objects, I have already fo fully spoken, that it is not in my power to add to the impression of their importance, and of Captain Cook's merits in relation to them, which, I truft, is firmly fixed on the mind of every reader.

It is justly remarked, by the Bishop of Carlisle, that one great advantage accruing to the world from our late surveys of the globe, is, that they have consuted fanciful theories, too likely to give birth to impracticable undertakings. The ingenious reveries of speculative philosophers, which have so long amused the learned, and raised the most sanguine expectations, are now obliged to submit, perhaps with reluctance, to the sober dictates of truth and experience. Nor will it be only by discouraging future unprofitable searches, that the late voyages will be of service to mankind, but also by lessening the dangers and distresses formerly experienced in those seas which are

within

within the actual line of commerce and naviga-CHAP. tion. From the British discoveries, many commercial improvements may be expected to arise in our own times: but, in future ages, such improvements may be extended to a degree, of which, at present, we have no conception. In the long chain of causes and effects, no one can tell how widely and beneficially the mutual intercourse of the various inhabitants of the earth may hereafter be carried on, in consequence of the means of facilitating it, which have been explored and pointed out by Captain Cook.

The interests of science, as well as of commerce, stand highly indebted to this illustrious navigator. That a knowledge of the globe on which we live is a very desirable object, no one can call in question. This is an object which, while it is ardently pursued by the most enlightened philosophers, is sought for with avidity, even by those whose studies do not carry them beyond the lowest rudiments of learning. It need not be said what gratification Captain Cook hath provided for the world in this respect. Before the voyages of the

present reign took place, nearly half the surface of the earth was hidden in obscurity and confusion. From the discoveries of our navigator, geography has assumed a new face, and become, in a great measure, a new science; having attained to such a completion, as to leave only some

less important parts of the globe to be explored by future voyagers*.

Happily for the advancement of knowledge, acquisitions cannot be obtained in any one branch, without leading to acquisitions in other branches, of equal, and perhaps of superior consequence. New oceans cannot be traversed, or new countries

vifited

^{*} Lieutenant Roberts's admirable chart will set this matter in the ftrongest light.

CHAP. visited, without presenting fresh objects of speculation and enquiry, and carrying the practice, as well as the theory, of philosophy, to a higher degree of perfection. Nautical astronomy, in particular, was in its infancy, when the late voyages were first undertaken; but, during the prosecution of them, and especially in Captain Cook's last expedition, even many of the petty officers could observe the distance of the moon from the fun, or a ftar, the most delicate of all observations, with fufficient accuracy. As for the officers of fuperior rank, they would have felt themselves ashamed to have it thought that they did not know how to observe for, and compute the time at fea; though fuch a thing had, a little before, fcarcely been heard of among feamen. Nay, firstrate philosophers had doubted the possibility of doing it with the exactness that could be wished. It must, however, be remembered, that a large fhare of praise is due to the Board of Longitude, for the proficiency of the gentlemen of the navy in taking observations at sea. In consequence of the attention of that board to this important object, liberal rewards have been given to mathematicians for perfecting the lunar tables, and facilitating calculations; and artists have been amply encouraged in the construction of instruments and watches, much more accurately and compleatly adapted to the purposes of navigation than formerly existed.

It is needless to mention what a quantity of additional information has been gained with respect to the rise and times of the slowing of the tides; the direction and force of currents at sea; and the cause and nature of the polarity of the needle, and the theory of its variations. Natural knowledge has been increased by experiments on the effects of gravity in different and very distant

places:

places: and, from Captain Cook's having pe-CHAP. netrated fo far into the Southern Ocean, it is now afcertained, that the phænomenon, usually called the Aurora Borealis, is not peculiar to high northern latitudes, but belongs equally to all cold climates, whether they be north or fouth.

Amidst the different branches of science that have been promoted by the late expeditions, there is none, perhaps, that stands so highly indebted to them as the science of botany. At least twelve hundred new plants have been added to the known system; and large accessions of intelligence have accrued with regard to every other part of natural history. This point has already been evinced by the writings of Dr. Sparrman, of the two Forsters, Father and Son, and of Mr. Pennant; and this point will illustriously be manifested, when the great work of Sir Joseph Banks shall be accomplished, and given to the world.

It is not to the enlargement of natural knowledge only, that the effects arising from Captain Cook's voyages are to be confined. Another important object of study has been opened by them; and that is, the study of human nature, in fituations various, interesting, and uncommon. The iflands visited in the centre of the South Pacific Ocean, and the principal scenes of the operations of our discoverers, were untrodden ground. As the inhabitants, fo far as could be observed, had continued, from their original fettlement, unmixed with any different tribe; as they had been left entirely to their own powers for every art of life, and to their own remote traditions for every political or religious custom or institution; as they were uninformed by science, and unimproved by education, they could not but afford many subjects of speculation to an inquisitive and philosophical mind. Hence may

CHAP. may be collected a variety of important facts with respect to the state of man; with respect to his attainments and deficiencies, his virtues and vices, his employments and diversions, his feelings, manners and customs, in a certain period of fociety. Even the curiofities which have been brought from the discovered islands, and which enrich the British Museum, and the late Sir Ashton Lever's (now Mr. Parkinson's) repository, may be confidered as a valuable acquifition to this country; as fupplying no fmall

fund of information and entertainment.

Few enquiries are more interesting than those which relate to the migrations of the various families or tribes that have peopled the earth. It was known in general that the Afiatic nation, called Malayans, poffeffed, in former times, much the greatest trade in the Indies; and that they frequented, with their merchant ships, not only all the coasts of Asia, but ventured over even to the coasts of Africa, and particularly to the great island of Madagascar. But that, from Madagascar to the Marquesas and Easter Island, that is, nearly from the east side of Africa, till we approach towards the west side of America, a fpace including above half the circumference of the globe, the fame nation of the Oriental world should have made their settlements, and founded colonies throughout almost every intermediate stage of this immense tract, in islands at amazing distances from the mother continent, and the natives of which were ignorant of each other's existence; is an historical fact, that, before Captain Cook's voyages, could be but very imperfectly known. He it is who hath difcovered a vast number of new spots of land, lurking in the bosom of the South Pacific Ocean, all the inhabitants of which display striking evidences

evidences of their having derived their descent CHAP. from one common Afiatic original. Nor is this apparent folely from a fimilarity of customs and institutions, but is established by a proof which conveys irrefiftible conviction to the mind, and that is, the affinity of language. The collections that have been made of the words which are used in the widely-diffused islands and countries that have lately been visited, cannot fail, in the hands of fuch men as a Bryant and a Marsden, to throw much light on the origin of nations, and the peopling of the globe. From Mr. Marsden, in particular, who has devoted his attention, time, and fludy to this curious fubject, the literary world may hereafter expect to be highly instructed and entertained.

There is another family of the earth, concerning which new information has been derived from the voyages of our British navigators. That the Esquimaux, who had hitherto only been found feated on the coasts of Labradore and Hudfon's Bay, agreed with the Greenlanders in every circumstance of customs, manners, and language, which could demonstrate an original identity of nation, had already been ascertained. But that the fame tribe now actually inhabit the islands and coasts on the west side of North America, opposite Kamtschatka, was a discovery, the completion of which was referved for Captain Cook. In his narrative it will be feen that thefe people have extended their migrations to Norton Sound, Oonalashka, and Prince William's Sound; that is, to nearly the distance of fifteen hundred leagues from their stations in Greenland, and the coast of Labradore. Nor does this curious fact rest merely on the evidence arising from similitude of manners: for it stands confirmed by a table of words, exhibiting fuch an affinity of language as will remove every doubt from the mind of the most scrupulous enquirer.

Kk 2

Other

CHAP. Other questions there are, of a very important nature, the folution of which will now be rendered more easy than hath heretofore been apprehended. From the full confirmation of the vicinity of the two continents of Asia and America, it can no longer be represented as ridiculous to believe, that the former furnished inhabitants to the latter. By the facts recently discovered, a credibility is added to the Mosaic account of the peopling of the earth *. That account will, I doubt not, stand the test of the most learned and rigorous investigation. Indeed, I have long been convinced, after the closest meditation of which I am capable, that found philosophy and genuine revelation never militate against each other. The rational friends of religion are so far from dreading the spirit of enquiry, that they wish for nothing more than a candid, calm, and impartial examination of the fubject, according to all the lights which the improved reason and the enlarged science of man can afford.

One great effect of the voyages made under the conduct of Captain Cook, is their having excited a zeal for fimilar undertakings. Other princes and other nations are engaged in expeditions of navigation and discovery. By order of the French government, Mess. de la Peyrouse and de Langle failed from Breft, in August, 1785, in the frigates Bouffele and Astroloobe, on an enterprize, the express purpose of which was the improvement of geography, aftronomy, natural history and philosophy, and to collect accounts of customs and manners. the more effectual profecution of the defign, feveral gentlemen were appointed to go out upon the voyage, who were known to excel

in

^{*} Introduction to the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, p. lvi-lxxv.

in different departments of science and litera-CHAP. ture. M. Dagelet went as aftronomer; M. de la Martiniere, P. Recevour, and M. de la Frefne, as naturalists; and the Chevalier de Lamanon, and M. Monges, Junior, as natural philosophers. The officers of the Bouffole were men of the best information, and the firmest resolution; and the crew contained a number of artificers, in various kinds of mechanic employments. Marine watches, and other instruments, were provided; and M. Dagelet was particularly directed to make obfervations with M. Condamine's invariable pendulum, to determine the difference in gravity, and to ascertain the true proportion of the equatorial to the polar diameter of the earth. From some accounts which have already been received of these voyagers, it appears, that they have explored the coast of California; have adjusted the situation of more than fifty places, almost wholly unknown; and have visited Owhyhee, and the rest of the Sandwich islands*. When the expedition shall be completed, the whole result of it will doubtless be laid before the public.

Although Captain Cook has made fuch vast discoveries in the Northern Ocean, on and between the east of Asia and the west coast of America, Mr. Coxe has well shewn that there is still room for a farther investigation of that part of the world. Accordingly, the object has been taken up by the Empress of Russia, who has committed the conduct of the enterprize to Captain Billings, an Englishman in her Majesty's service. As Captain Billings was with Captain Cook in his last voyage, he may reasonably be supposed to be properly qualified for the business he has undertaken. The design, with the execution of which

he

^{*} Critical Review, for April, 1788, p. 299, 230.

CHAP he is entrusted, appears to be very extensive and important; and, if it should be crowned with success, cannot fail of making considerable additions to the knowledge of geography and navi-

gation*.

There is one event at home, which has evidently refulted from Captain Cook's discoveries, and which, therefore, must not be omitted. I refer to, is the fettlement at Botany Bay. the general policy of this measure the present narrative has not any concern. The plan, I doubt not, has been adopted with the best intentions, after the maturest deliberation, and perhaps with consummate wisdom. One evident advantage arising from it is, that it will effectually prevent a number of unhappy wretches from returning to their former fcenes of temptation and guilt, and may open to them the means of industrious If it be wifefublishence and moral reformation. ly and prudently begun and conducted, who can tell what beneficial confequences may fpring from it, in future ages? Immortal Rome is faid to have risen from the refuse of mankind.

While we are confidering the advantages the discoverers have derived from the late navigations, a question naturally occurs, which is, What benefits have hence accrued to the discovered? It would be a source of the highest pleasure to be able to answer this question to compleat satisfaction. But it must be acknowledged, that the subject is not wholly free from doubts and difficulties; and these doubts and difficulties might be enlarged upon, and exaggerated, by an imagination which is rather disposed to contemplate and represent the dark than the luminous aspect of human affairs. In one respect, Mr. Samwell has endea-

voured

^{*} Coxe's Comparative View of the Ruffian Discoveries, p. 27-30.

voured to shew, that the natives of the lately-ex. CHAP. plored parts of the world, and especially so far as relates to the Sandwich Islands, were not injured by our people; and it was the conftant folicitude and care of Captain Cook, that evil might not be communicated in any one place to which he came. If he was univerfally fuccessful, the good which, in various cases, he was instrumental in producing, will be reflected upon with the more

peculiar fatisfaction.

There is an effential difference between the voyages that have lately been undertaken, and many which have been carried on in former times. None of my readers can be ignorant of the horrid cruelties that were exercised by the conquerors of Mexico and Peru; cruelties which can never be remembered, without blushing for religion and human nature. But to undertake expeditions with a defign of civilizing the world, and meliorating its condition, is a noble object. The receffes of the globe were investigated by Captain Cook, not to enlarge private dominion, but to promote general knowledge; the new tribes of the earth were visited as friends; and an acquaintance with their existence was sought for, in order to bring them within the pale of the offices of humanity, and to relieve the wants of their imperfect state of society. Such were the benevolent views which our navigator was commissioned by his Majefty to carry into execution; and there is reason to hope that they will not be wholly unfuccessful. From the long-continued intercourse with the natives of the Friendly, Society, and Sandwich Iflands, fome rays of light must have darted on their infant minds. The uncommon objects which have been presented to their observation, and excited their furprize, will naturally tend to enlarge their stock of ideas, and to furnish new materials

CHAP. for the exercise of their reasonable faculties. no small addition to their comforts of life, and their immediate enjoyments, that will be derived from the introduction of our useful animals and vegetables; and if the only benefit they should ever receive from the visits of the English, should be the having obtained fresh means of subsistence, that must be considered as a great acquisition*.

But may not our hopes be extended to still nobler objects? The connection which has been opened with these remote inhabitants of the world, is the first step toward their improvement; and consequences may flow from it, which are far beyond our present conceptions. Perhaps, our late voyages may be the means appointed by Providence, of spreading, in due time, the bleffings of civilization among the numerous tribes of the South Pacific Ocean, and preparing them for holding an honourable rank among the nations of the earth. There cannot be a more laudable attempt, than that of endeavouring to refcue millions of our fellow-creatures from that state of humiliation in which they now exist +. Nothing can more effentially contribute to the attainment of this great end, than a wife and rational introduction of the Christian religion; an introduction of it in its genuine simplicity; as holding out the worship of one God, inculcating the purest morality, and promising eternal life as the reward of obedience. These are views of things which are adapted to general comprehension, and calculated to produce the noblest effects.

Confidering the eminent abilities displayed by Captain Cook, and the mighty actions performed

^{*} Introduction, ubi fupra, p. lxxv, lxxvi. + Ibid. p. lxxvii.

by him, it is not furprising that his memory CHAP. should be held in the highest estimation, both at home and abroad. Perhaps, indeed, greater honour is paid to his name abroad than at home. Foreigners, I am informed, look up to him with an admiration which is not equalled in this country. A remarkable proof of it occurs, in the eulogy of our navigator, by Michael Angelo Gianetti, which was read at the Royal Florentine Academy, on the ninth of June, 1785, and published at Florence, in the same year *. Not having feen it, I am deprived of the power of doing justice to its merit. If I am not mistaken in my recollection, one of the French literary academies has proposed a prize for the best elogium on Captain Cook; and there can be no doubt but that feveral candidates will appear upon the occafion, and exert the whole force of their eloquence on fo interesting a subject.

To the applauses of our Navigator, which have already been inserted, I cannot avoid adding some poetical testimonies concerning him. The first I shall produce is from a foreign poet, M. l'Abbé Lille. This gentleman has concluded his "Les Jardins" with an encomium on Captain Cook, of

which the following lines are a translation.

"Give, give me flowers: with garlands of "renown

"Those glorious exiles brows my hands shall "crown,

"Who nobly fought on distant coasts to find, "Or thither bore those arts that bless mankind:

"Thee chief, brave Cook, o'er whom, to na-"ture dear,

"With Britain Gallia drops the pitying tear.

"To foreign climes and rude, where nought be-

" Announc'd our veffels but their cannons' roar,

" Far

Monthly Review, vol. lxxiii. p. 458.

CHAP. "Far other gifts thy better mind decreed,

"The sheep, the heifer, and the stately steed;

"The plough, and all thy country's arts; the crimes

" Atoning thus of earlier favage times.

- "With peace each land thy bark was wont to hail,
- "And tears and bleffings fill'd thy parting fail.
- "Receive a stranger's praise; nor, Britain, thou "Forbid these wreaths to grace thy Hero's brow,
- " Nor fcorn the tribute of a foreign fong, " For Virtue's fons to every land belong:

" And shall the Gallic Muse disdain to pay

- "The meed of worth, when Lewis leads the way?
- "But what avail'd, that twice thou dar'dst to try
- "The frost-bound sea, and twice the burning "sky,

"That by winds, waves, and every realm rever'd,

" Safe, only fafe, thy facred veffel fteer'd;

"That war for thee forgot its dire commands?

"The world's great friend, ah! bleeds by favage "hands *."

There have not been wanting elegant writers of our own country, who have embraced with pleafure the opportunities that have offered of paying a tribute of praise to Captain Cook. The ingenious and amiable Miss Hannah More has lately seized an occasion of celebrating the humane intentions of the Captain's discoveries.

"Had those advent'rous spirits who explore

itain Gallia drops the pitying team

"Thro' ocean's trackless wastes, the far-fought

. Toob on " Whether

* Floribly Review, was lause or no

Gentleman's Magazine, Vol. lin. p. 1044, 1045 The above translation was made by Mr. William Jackson of Canterbury.—In the same Magazine, p. 1034, 1035, is the original French.

"Whether of wealth infatiate, or of power, CHAP.

"Conquerors who waste, or russians who de-

"Had these posses'd, O Cook! thy gentle mind,

"Thy love of arts, thy love of human-kind;

"Had these pursu'd thy mild and lib'ral plan, "Discoverers had not been a curse to man!

"Then, blefs'd Philanthropy! thy focial hands

"Had link'd diffever'd worlds in brothers bands;

" Careless, if colour, or if clime divide;

"Then lov'd, and loving, man had liv'd, and "died *."

Soon after the account arrived in England of Captain Cook's decease, two poems were published in celebration of his memory; one of which was an Ode, by a Mr. Fitzgerald, of Gray's-Inn. But the first, both in order of time and of merit, was an Elegy, by Miss Seward, whose poetical talents have been displayed in many beautiful instances to the public. This lady, in the beginning of her Poem, has admirably represented the principle of humanity by which the Captain was actuated in his undertakings.

"Ye, who ere while for Cook's illustrious brow

"Pluck'd the green laurel, and the oaken bough,

"Hung the gay garlands on the trophied oars, "And pour'd his fame along a thousand shores,

"Strike the flow-death-bell!—weave the facred "verse,"

"And strew the cypress o'er his honour'd hearse;

* SLAVERY, a Poem.

CHAP. " In fad procession wander round the shrine,

"And weep him mortal, whom ye fung di-

"Say first, what Pow'r inspir'd his dauntless breast

"With fcorn of danger, and inglorious rest,

"To quit imperial London's gorgeous plains,
"Where, rob'd in thousand tints, bright Plea"fure reigns?—

"What Pow'r inspir'd his dauntless breast to

"The fcorch'd Equator, and th' Antarctic wave?

"Climes, where fierce funs in cloudless ardors fhine,

" And pour the dazzling deluge round the Line;

"The realms of frost, where icy mountains rife,

" 'Mid the pale fummer of the polar skies?—
"IT WAS HUMANITY!—on coasts unknown,

"The shiv'ring natives of the frozen zone,

" And the fwart Indian, as he faintly strays

" 'Where Cancer reddens in the folar blaze,'

" She bade him feek; -on each inclement shore

" Plant the rich feeds of her exhaustless store;

"Unite the favage hearts, and hostile hands,

" In the firm compact of her gentle bands;

"Strew her foft comforts o'er the barren plain,

"Sing her fweet lays, and confecrate her fane.
"IT WAS HUMANITY!—O Nymph divine!

" I fee thy light step print the burning Line!

"There thy bright eye the dubious pilot guides,
"The faint oar struggling with the scalding
"tides.---

"On as thou lead'st the bold, the glorious prow, "Mild, and more mild, the sloping sun-beams "glow;

" Now weak and pale the leffen'd luftres play,

" As round th' horizon rolls the timid day;

" Barb'd

- "Barb'd with the fleeted fnow, the driving CHAP. "hail,
- " Rush the fierce arrows of the polar gale;
- " And thro' the dim, unvaried, ling'ring hours,
- "Wide o'er the waves incumbent horror "low'rs."

Captain Cook's endeavours to ferve the inhabitants of New Zealand, by the vegetables and animals he left among them, are thus described.

- " To these the Hero leads his living store,
- "And pours new wonders on th' uncultur'd fhore:
- " The filky fleece, fair fruit, and golden grain;
- " And future herds and harvests bless the plain.
- " O'er the green foil his Kids exulting play,
- " And founds his clarion loud the Bird of day;
- " The downy Goofe her ruffled bosom laves,
- "Trims her white wing, and wantons in the waves:
- "Stern moves the Bull along th' affrighted fhores.
- " And countless nations tremble as he roars."

I shall only add the pathetic and animated conclusion of this fine Poem.

- " But ah !-aloft on Albion's rocky steep,
- "That frowns incumbent o'er the boiling deep,
- " Solicitous, and fad, a fofter form
- "Eyes the lone flood, and deprecates the florm.—
- " Ill-fated matron !- for, alas! in vain
- "Thy eager glances wander o'er the main!-
- " 'Tis the vex'd billows, that infurgent rave,
- " Their white foam filvers yonder distant wave,

CHAP. "Tis not his fails !- thy husband comes no more!

" His bones now whiten an accurfed fhore!-

" Retire,-for hark! the fea-gull shricking foars,

"The lurid atmosphere portentous low'rs;

- " Night's fullen spirit groans in ev'ry gale, " And o'er the waters draws the darkling veil,
- " Sighs in thy hair, and chills thy throbbing " breaft-
- "Go, wretched mourner!—weep thy griefs to " reft!
 - "Yet, tho' through life is loft each fond " delight,

" Tho' fet thy earthly fun in dreary night,

- " Oh! raise thy thoughts to yonder starry plain,
- " And own thy forrow felfish, weak, and vain:

" Since, while Britannia, to his virtues just,

"Twines the bright wreath, and rears th' im-" mortal buft;

" While on each wind of heav'n his fame shall rife,

" In endless incense to the smiling skies;

"THE ATTENDANT Power, that bade his fails " expand,

" And waft her bleffings to each barren land,

" Now raptur'd bears him to th' immortal plains,

" Where Mercy hails him with congenial strains;

"Where foars, on Joy's white plume, his fpirit " free,

" And angels choir him, while he waits for " THEE."

Captain Cook's discoveries, among other effects, have opened new scenes for a poetical fancy to range in, and prefented new images to the felection of genius and taste. The Morais, in particular, of the inhabitants of the South Sea Islands, afford a fine fubject for the exercise of a plaintive muse. Such a muse hath seized upon the subject; and, at the fame time, has added another wreath to the memory of our navigator. I refer to a

lady,

a

p

tl

T

I

W

W

tl

lady, who hath already, in many passages of her CHAP. "Peru," in her "Ode on the Peace," and, above all, in her "Irregular Fragment," amply proved to the world, that she possesses not only the talent of elegant and harmonious verification, but the fpirit of true poetry. The poem, which I have now the pleasure of giving for the first time to the public, and which was written at my request, will be found in the Appendix *. It is fomewhat remarkable, that female poets have hitherto been the chief celebrators of Captain Cook in this country. Perhaps a fubject which would furnish materials for as rich a production as Camoen's Lufiad, and which would adorn the pen of a Hayley or a Cowper, may hereafter call forth the genius of some poet of the stronger sex.

The Royal Society of London could not lofe fuch a member of their body as Captain Cook, without being anxious to honour his name and memory by a particular mark of respect. Accordingly, it was refolved to do this by a medal; and a voluntary fubscription was opened for the purpose. To such of the fellows of the Society as fubscribed twenty guineas, a gold medal was appropriated: filver medals were affigned to those who contributed a fmaller fum; and to each of the other members one in bronze was given. The fubscribers of twenty guineas were Sir Joseph Banks, President; the Prince of Anspach, the Duke of Montagu, Lord Mulgrave, and Messieurs Cavendish, Peachey, Perrin, Poli, and Shuttleworth. Many defigns, as might be expected, were proposed upon the occasion. The medal which was actually ftruck, contains, on one fide, the head of Captain Cook in profile, and round

CHAP. it, JAC. COOK OCEANI INVESTIGATOR ACERRIMUS;

and on the exergue, REG. SOC. LOND. SOCIO SUO. On the reverse is a representation of Britannia, holding a globe. Round her is inscribed, NIL INTENTATUM NOSTRI LIQUERE; and on the ex-

ergue, AUSPICIIS GEORGII III.

Of the gold medals which were ftruck on this occasion, one was presented to his Majesty, another to the Queen, and a third to the Prince of Two were fent abroad: the first to the French King, on account of the protection he had granted to the ships under the command of Captain Cook; and a fecond to the Empress of Russia, in whose dominions the same ships had been received and treated with every degree of friendship and kindness. Both these were highly acceptable to the great personages to whom they were transmitted. The French King expressed his fatisfaction in a very handsome letter to the Royal Society, figned by himfelf, and underfigned by the Marquis de Vergennes; and the Empress of Russia commissioned Count Osterman to fignify to Mr. Fitzherbert the fense she entertained of the value of the prefent; and that she had caused it to be forthwith deposited in the Museum of the Imperial Academy of Sciences. As a farther testimony of the pleasure she derived from it, the Empress presented to the Royal Society a large and beautiful gold medal, containing on one fide the effigies of herfelf, and on the reverse a reprefentation of the statue of Peter the Great.

After the general affignment of medals, (which took place in the spring of the year 1784) there being a furplus of money still remaining, the Prefident and Council refolved that an additional number should be struck off in gold, to be disposed of as presents to Mrs. Cook, the Earl

of

ar

..

" e

cc vi

feffion

of Sandwich, Dr. Benjamin Franklin, Dr. CHAP. Cooke, Provoft of King's College, Cambridge, and Mr. Planta. About the same time, it was agreed, that Mr. Aubert should be allowed to have a gold medal of Captain Cook, on his paying for the gold, and the expence of striking it; in confideration of his intention to present it to

the King of Poland *.

During the two vifits of the Refolution and Difcovery at Kamtfchatka, it was from Colonel Behm, the Commandant of that province, that the ships, and the officers and men belonging to them, had received every kind of affiftance which it was in his power to bestow. His liberal and hospitable behaviour to the English navigators, is related at large in Captain King's Voyage. Such was the fense entertained of it by the Lords of the Admiralty, that they determined to make a prefent to the Colonel of a magnificent piece of plate, with an infeription expressive of his humane and generous disposition and conduct. The elegant pen of Dr. Cooke was employed in drawing up the inscription, which, after it had been subjected to the opinion and correction of some gentlemen of the first eminence in classical taste, was as follows:

"VIRO EGREGIO MAGNO DE BEHM; qui Im-" peratricis Augustissimæ Catherinæ auspiciis, " fummâque animi benignitate, fæva, quibus " præerat, Kamtschatkæ littora, navibus nautis-" que Britannicis, hospita præbuit : eosque, in " terminis, si qui essent Imperio Russico, frustrà, " explorandis, mala multa perpeffos, iterata "vice excepit, refecit, recreavit, et commeatû "omni

^{*} From the books of the Royal Society, and papers in the posfession of Sir Joseph Banks.

CHAP. "omni cumulatè auctos dimisit; REI NAVALIS VII. "BRITANNICÆ SEPTEMVIRI in aliquam benevo-

"lentiæ tam infignis memoriam, amicissimo, gra-"tissimoque animo, suo, patriæque nomine, D.

" D. D.

M.DCC.LXXXI*."

Sir Hugh Pallifer, who, through life, manifested an invariable regard and friendship for Captain Cook, has displayed a signal instance, fince the Captain's decease, of the affection and efteem in which he holds his memory. At his estate at Buckinghamshire, Sir Hugh hath conftructed a fmall building, on which he has erected a pillar, containing the fine character of our great Navigator that is given at the end of the Introduction to the last Voyage, and the principal part of which has been inferted in the prefent work. This character was drawn up by a most respectable gentleman, who has long been at the head of the naval profession; the honourable Admiral Forbes, Admiral of the Fleet, and General of Marines; to whom Captain Cook was only known by his eminent merit and his extraordinary actions +.

Amidst the numerous testimonies of regard that have been paid to Captain Cook's merits and memory, the important object of providing for his family hath not been forgotten. Soon after the intelligence arrived of his unfortunate decease, this matter was taken up by the Lords of the Admiralty, with a zeal and an effect, which the following authentic document will

fully display.

" At

^{*} From papers in the possession of Sir Joseph Banks. From the information of Sir Hugh Palliser.

"At the Court at St. James's, the (L. S.) "2d of February 1780;

Henry Decimal town to reliase a two

" Present,

"The KING's Most Excellent Majesty in Council.

"Whereas there was this day read, at the Board, a memorial from the Right Honour- able the Lords Commissioners of the Admi- ralty, dated the 27th of last month, in the words following; viz.

" Having received an authentic account of " the death of that great Navigator, Captain " James Cook, who has had the honour of " being employed by your Majesty in three " different voyages, for the discovery of un-" known countries, in the most distant parts " of the globe; we think it our duty hum-" bly to represent to Your Majesty, that this " meritorious officer, after having received " from Your Majesty's gracious benevolence, " as a reward for his public fervices in two " fuccessful circumnavigations, a comfortable " and honourable retreat, where he might " have lived many years to benefit his family, " he voluntarily relinquished that ease and " emolument to undertake another of these " voyages of discovery, in which the life of " a Commander, who does his duty, must " always be particularly exposed, and in which, " in the execution of that duty, he fell, leav-" ing his family, whom his public spirit had " led him to abandon, as a legacy to his coun-" try. We do therefore humbly propose, " that Your Majesty will be graciously pleased Ll 2

CHAP.

"to order a pension of two hundred pounds a year to be settled on the widow, and twenty-sive pounds a year upon each of the three sons of the said Captain James Cook, and that the same be placed on the ordinary estimate of the navy.

"His Majesty, taking the said memorial into
"His Royal consideration, was pleased, with
"the advice of His privy council, to order, as
"it is hereby ordered, that a pension of two
hundred pounds a year be settled on the widow,
and twenty-sive pounds a year upon each of
the three sons of the said Captain James Cook,
and that the same be placed on the ordinary
estimate of His Majesty's navy; and the Lords
Commissioners of the Admiralty are to give
the necessary directions herein accordingly.

"W. FAWKENER."

The preceding memorial to the King was figned by the Earl of Sandwich, Mr. Buller, the Earl of Lifburne, Mr. Penton, Lord Mulgrave, and Mr. Mann; and the feveral officers of the Board of Admiralty feconded the ardour of their fuperiors, by the fpeed and generofity with which his Majesty's royal grant to Captain Cook's widow and children passed through the usual forms*.

Another occasion was afterwards seized of conferring a substantial benefit on the Captain's family. The charts and plates, belonging to the Voyage to the Pacific Ocean, were provided at the expence of Government; the consequence of which was, that a large profit accrued from the sale of the publication. Of this profit, half was

From the information of Sir Joseph Banks.

was configned in trust, to Sir Hugh Pallifer and CHAP. Mr. Stephens, to be applied to the use of Mrs. Cook, during her natural life, and afterwards to be divided between her children*.

Honour, as well as emolument, hath gracioufly been conferred by his Majesty upon the descendants of Captain Cook. On the third of September 1785, a coat of arms was granted to the family, of which a description will be given below to

Our Navigator had fix children; James, Nathaniel, Elizabeth, Joseph, George, and Hugh. Of these, Joseph and George died soon after their birth, and Elizabeth in the fifth year of her age. James, the eldest son, who was born at St. Paul's, Shadwell, on the thirteenth of October 1763, is now a lieutenant in his Majesty's navy. In a letter, written by Admiral Sir Richard Hughes, in 1785, from Granada, to Mrs. Cook, he is spoken of in terms of high approbation. Nathaniel, who was born on the fourteenth of December 1764, at Mile-end Old Town, was brought up, likewise, in the naval service, and was unfortunately lost on board his Majesty's ship Thunderer, Commodore Walsingham, in the hurricane which happened

* A fourth was allotted to Captain King, and the remaining fourth to Mr. Blyth, and to the representatives of Captain Clerke. Mr. Anderson's representatives had previously been gratified.

[†] Azure, between the two polar stars Or, a sphere on the plane of the meridian, north pole elevated, circles of latitude for every ten degrees, and of longitude for every fifteen, shewing the Pacific Ocean between fixty and two hundred and forty west, bounded on one side by America, on the other by Asia and New Holland, in memory of the discoveries made by him in that ocean, so very far beyond all former navigators. His track thereon is marked with red lines. And for crest, on a wreath of the colours, is an arm imbowed, vested in the uniform of a captain of the royal navy. In the hand is the union jack, on a staff Proper. The arm is encircled by a wreath of palm and laurel.

CHAP happened at Jamaica on the third of October 1780. He is faid to have been a most promising youth. Hugh, the youngest, was born on the twenty-second of May 1776; and was so called after the name of his father's great friend, Sir Hugh Pallifer *. a vals is the Mit of demotion and vi

It hath often been mentioned, in terms of no fmall regret, that a monument hath not yet been erected to the memory of Captain Cook, in Westminster Abbey. The wish and the hope of such a monument are hinted at in the close of the Bishop of Carlisle's Introduction, so often referred to; and the same sentiment is expressed by the author of the Eulogium, at the end of that Introduction. Sir Hugh Pallifer has also spoken to the like purpose, in a communication I received from him. It would certainly redound to the honour of the nation, to order a magnificent memorial of the abilities and fervices of our illustrious Navigator; on which account, a tribute of that kind may be regarded as a defirable thing. But a monument in Weltminster Abbey would be of little confequence to the reputation of Captain Cook. His fame stands upon a wider base, and will furvive the comparatively perishing materials of brass, or stone, or marble. The name of Cook will be held in honour, and recited with applause, so long as the records of human events shall continue in the earth; nor is it possible to fay, what may be the influence and rewards, which, in other worlds, shall be found to attend upon eminent examples of wisdom and of virtue.



From the information of Mrs. Cook.

APPENDIX, Nº 1.

By THE HULLINGBLARIA WHILLIAMS

In page 481, it is mentioned, that a farther account of Captain King would be given in the Appendix. This was faid in a reliance upon my receiving answers to several questions, with which I had waited upon the Reverend Mr. King, Preacher to the Honourable Society of Gray's Inn. As this Gentleman has not favoured me with the communication I expected (perhaps from some unavoidable hindrances), I am precluded from paying that additional tribute to the memory of his brother which I wished to have done.

APPENDIX,

Its hill feen horror flows!

Widle Nature, with a look for vild, a sand on the vild, a sand on the cills in chaos off a; that here, the swid, breeze at mind corpores, to that o cryacity and mind

When her had french the forms unbind the selection.

Tool field a greadailer beage gloon

in footlye fruitset is 1996 filesen. The awom leaves of her a set

APPENDIX, N° 2.

THE MORAI, AN ODE,

By Mifs HELEN MARIA WILLIAMS.

AIR Otaheite, fondly bleft By him, who long was doom'd to brave The fury of the polar wave, has anivious That fiercely mounts the frozen rock Where the harsh sea-bird rears her nest. And learns the raging furge to mock -There, Night, that loves eternal storm, Deep, and lengthen'd darkness throws; And untried Danger's doubtful form Its half-feen horror flows! While Nature, with a look fo wild, Leans on the cliffs in chaos pil'd; That here, the aw'd, aftonish'd mind, Forgets, in that o'erwhelming hour When her rude hands the storms unbind, In all the madness of her power, That she who spreads the favage gloom, That she can dress in melting grace, In fportive Summer's lavish bloom, The aweful terrors of her face:

vain the lest hand we letel

And wear the fweet perennial finile
That charms in Otaheite's ifle

Yet, amid her fragrant bowers,
Where Spring, whose dewy singers strew
O'er other lands some sleeting slowers,
Lives, in blossoms ever new;
Whence arose that shriek of pain?
Whence the tear that slows in vain?—
Death! thy unrelenting hand
Tears some transient, human band—
Eternity! rich plant, that blows
Beneath a brighter, happier sky,
Time is a fading branch, that grows
On thy pure stem, and blooms to die.

What art thou, Death?-terrific shade, In unpierc'd gloom array'd!-Oft will daring Fancy stray Far in the central wastes, where Night Divides no chearing hour with Day, And unnam'd horrors meet her fight; There thy form the dimly fees, And round the shape unfinish'd throws All her frantic vision shews When numbing fears her spirit freeze-But can mortal voice declare If Fancy paints thee as thou art? Thy aspect may a terror wear Her pencil never shall impart; The eye that once on thee shall gaze No more its stiffen'd orb can raise;

The lips that could thy power reveal
Shall lafting filence inftant feal—
In vain the icy hand we fold,
In vain the breaft with tears we fleep,
The heart that fhar'd each pang, is cold,
The vacant eye no more can weep.

Yet from the shore where Ganges rolls
His wave beneath the torrid ray,
To Earth's chill verge, where o'er the poles
Fall the last beams of ling'ring day,
For ever facred are the dead!
Sweet Fancy comes in Sorrow's aid,
And bids the mourner lightly tread
Where th' insensate clay is laid;
Bids partial gloom the sod invest
By the mould'ring relics prest;
Then lavish strews, with sad delight,
Whate'er her consecrating power
Reveres, of herb, or fruit, or slower,
And fondly weaves the various rite.

See! o'er Otaheite's plain
Moves the long, funereal train;
Slow the pallid corfe they bear,
Oft they breathe the folemn prayer:
Where the ocean bathes the land
Thrice, and thrice, with pious hand,
The prieft, when high the billow fprings,
From the wave unfullied, flings
Waters pure, that fprinkled near,
Sanctify the hallow'd bier:

But never may one drop profane
The relics with forbidden stain!
Now around the fun'ral shrine
Led in mystic mazes, twine
Garlands, where the plantain weaves
With the palm's luxuriant leaves;
And o'er each facred knot is spread
The plant devoted to the dead.

Five pale moons with trembling light
Shall gaze upon the lengthen'd rite;
Shall fee diftracted Beauty tear
The dreffes of her flowing hair;
Those shining locks, no longer dear,
She wildly scatters o'er the bier;
And careless gives the frequent wound
That bathes in precious blood the ground.

When along the western sky
Day's reflected colours die,
And Twilight rules the doubtful hour
Fre slow-pac'd Night resumes her power;
Mark the cloud that lingers still
Darkly, on the hanging hill!
There the disembodied Mind
Hears, upon the hollow wind,
In unequal cadence thrown,
Sorrow's oft-repeated moan:
Still some human passions sway
The spirit late immers'd in clay;

Still the faithful figh is dear,
Still belov'd the fruitless tear!

Five waining moons, with wand'ring light, Have past the shadowy bound of night, And mingled their departing ray With the foft fires of early day; Let the last, sad rite be paid Grateful to the conscious Shade; Let the prieft, with pious care, Now the wafted relics bear Where the Morai's aweful gloom Shrouds the venerable tomb; Let the plantain lift its head, Cherish'd emblem of the dead ; Slow and folemn, o'er the grave, Let the twifted plumage wave, Symbol hallow'd, and divine, Of the God who guards the shrine. Hark !- that shriek of strange despair Never shall disturb the air, The shall have Never, never shall it rife But for Nature's broken ties! Bright crescent! that with lucid smile Gild'ft the Morai's lofty pile, Whose broad lines of shadow throw A gloomy horror far below; Witness, O recording moon! All the rites are duly done; Be the faithful tribute o'er, The hov'ring Spirit asks no more!

Mortals,

Mortals, cease the pile to tread, Leave to silence, leave the dead.

But where may she who loves to strav Mid shadows of funereal gloom, And courts the fadness of the tomb, Where may she feek that proud Morai Whose dear memorial points the place Where fell the Friend of human race?-Ye lonely Isles! on ocean's bound Ye bloom'd, thro' time's long flight unknown, Till Cook the untrack'd billow past, Till he along the furges caft Philanthropy's connecting zone, And fpread her lovelieft bleffings round .-Not like that murd'rous band he came, Who stain'd with blood the new-found West; Nor as, with unrelenting breaft, From Britain's free, enlighten'd land, Her fons now feek Angola's ftrand; Each tie most facred to unbind. To load with chains a brother's frame, And plunge a dagger in the mind; Mock the sharp anguish bleeding there Of nature in her last despair!

Great Cook! Ambition's lofty flame, So oft directed to destroy, Led *Thee* to circle with thy name, The smile of love, and hope, and joy!

Thofe

Those fires that lend the dang'rous blaze
The devious comet trails afar,
Might form the pure, benignant rays
That gild the morning's gentle star—
Sure, where the Hero's ashes rest,
The nations late emerg'd from night
Still haste—with love's unwearied care:
That spot in lavish flowers is drest,
And fancy's dear, inventive rite
Still paid with fond observance there!

Ah no!—around his fatal grave
No lavish flow'rs were ever strew'd,
No votive gifts were ever laid—
His blood a favage shore bedew'd!
His mangled limbs, one hasty prayer,
One pious tear by friendship paid,
Were cast upon the raging wave!
Deep in the wild abys he lies,
Far from the cherish'd scene of home;
Far, far from Her whose faithful sighs
A husband's trackless course pursue;
Whose tender fancy loves to roam
With Him o'er lands and oceans new;
And gilds with hope's deluding form
The gloomy path-way of the storm.

Yet, Cook! immortal wreaths are thine!— While Albion's grateful toil shall raise The marble tomb, the trophied bust, For ages faithful to its trust;

While,

While, eager to record thy praife,
She bids the Muse of History twine
The chaplet of undying fame,
And tell each polish'd land thy worth;
The ruder natives of the earth
Shall oft repeat thy honour'd name;
While infants catch the frequent sound,
And learn to lisp the oral tale;
Whose fond remembrance shall prevail
Till Time has reach'd his destin'd bound.

fins

FINIS.

A P P R N D I II, No as While, eager to record thy prhife, She bids the Made of Hilberty twine The chaplet of undying fone, in

And tell each year and thy worth;
The ruder a carch:
Shall on as 5 the said maine;

While infant work work frequent found, And learn to list the grad tale;

Whole fond remembrance thall prevail Till Time has reached his defined bound.

40

a I II I